SHERRATT & HUGHES
Publishers to the Victoria University of Manchester
Manchester: 34 Cross Street
London: 33 Soho Square W.

34261

AN

INTRODUCTION

TO

EARLY WELSH

BY

THE LATE JOHN STRACHAN, LL.D.,

Professor of Greek and Lecturer in Celtic
in the University of Manchester

A. 17496

UNIVERSITE
DE
POITIERS

MANCHESTER
AT THE UNIVERSITY PRESS
1909

BU POITIERS DROIT-LETTRES
DL 110508

PUBLICATIONS OF THE UNIVERSITY OF MANCHESTER

CELTIC SERIES

No. I.

An Introduction to Early Welsh

UNIVERSITY OF MANCHESTER PUBLICATIONS
No. XL.

PREFACE

THIS book is the outcome of the courses of lectures on Welsh grammar and literature given by the late Professor Strachan at the University of Manchester during the sessions 1905–6 and 1906–7. Indeed, the Grammar is in the main an expansion of notes made for these lectures. For the numerous quotations from early Welsh literature contained in the Grammar, as well as for the Reader, Strachan made use not only of published texts, notably those edited by Sir John Rhys and Dr. J. Gwenogvryn Evans, but also of photographs specially taken for the purpose, and of advance proofs of the edition of the *White Book* and of the photographic facsimile of the *Black Book of Chirk,* about to be published by Dr. Evans, both of which were lent by him to Strachan. The Reader includes Middle Welsh Texts selected as likely to be of most value for illustration or of special interest. The very valuable work done by Dr. Evans in relation to these texts was of the greatest assistance to Professor Strachan, and as an expression of gratitude for the help thus given, as well as in recognition of the services rendered to Welsh scholarship by Dr. Evans, it was the intention of the author to dedicate his book to him.

The idea of working up his notes into a book that might serve as an introduction to the study of older Welsh seems first to have occurred to Strachan in the spring of 1907. On the fifth of April he wrote to Mr. R. I. Best, the Secretary of the School of Irish Learning in Dublin: " I have been thinking of drawing up a little primer of Early Welsh. With that the language of Middle-Welsh prose should be child's play

to learn. However, that may or may not come off." And to his old friend Dr. P. Giles of Emmanuel College, Cambridge, he wrote on the same day: "I think I must draw up and print outlines of Middle-Welsh grammar. I cannot well teach without some book, and the beginner is lost in the wilderness of the *Grammatica Celtica*." His original intention evidently was to publish a mere sketch of the grammar, somewhat like his *Old-Irish Paradigms*. But at the suggestion of his friend and colleague, Professor T. F. Tout, he decided to expand the Grammar on the larger and fuller lines of the present volume. At the same time the plan of adding a Reader of excerpts from mediæval Welsh literature took concrete shape in the course of conversations and correspondence with Dr. Evans. On both these tasks he began to work during the Summer Term of 1907. With what amazing rapidity he must have toiled to have all but completed the work by the end of the following August! Giving up a visit to Germany to which he had long been looking forward, he devoted the whole long vacation to the preparation and printing of his book. At the moment of his death, on the 25th of September, both the Grammar and Reader were in type, and he had read a first, and in some cases a second, proof. Writing to Professor Thurneysen a week before his death, he says that he had then only the notes and vocabulary to add.

After Professor Strachan's death, at the request of the Publications Committee of the Manchester University, Professor Kuno Meyer of the University of Liverpool kindly undertook the task of reading final proofs of the Grammar and Reader, and of adding a Glossary, an Index and a list of contents. In this task, which involved very considerable labour, he obtained the assistance of Mr. Timothy Lewis, who had worked for two years under Professor Strachan, and who returned

from Berlin whither he had gone to continue his studies with Professor Zimmer, and devoted the winter to help with the completion of the book. Mr. Lewis verified the quotations in the Grammar where this was possible; drew up the Glossary, prepared the Index, and revised proofs. An old student of Professor Meyer's, the Rev. Owen Eilian Owen, placed his collection of Old and Middle-Welsh words at his disposal for the elucidation of rare and difficult vocables, while both Mr. Owen and Mr. J. Glyn Davies read proofs of the whole book, many valuable suggestions being due to them. But Professor Meyer and Mr. Lewis are solely responsible for the Glossary.

There can be no doubt that if Strachan had lived to complete the book himself, he would have made alterations and additions in several places both in the Grammar and Reader, and would have still further normalised the spelling in his critical versions of sections IV. and V. in the Reader. It will be observed that his treatment of the texts varies greatly. Except in the sections just mentioned, he does not seem to have aimed so much at the construction of a critical text as at the presentation of a clear, precise, and intelligible version, which would at the same time serve to introduce the student to the characteristic features of Middle Welsh orthography. In the Corrigenda some necessary emendations[1] have been indicated by Professor Meyer

1. From a collation of the poems printed from the Red Book with the original, it appears that the following corrections should be made :—

P. 233, l. 4, *for* dȯg *read* dȯng
ib., l. 19, *for* aghaeat *read* agkaeat
P. 235, l. 29. *for* gȯawr *read* gȯaȯr
P. 236, l. 2, *for* can *read* kan
P. 237, l. 22, *for* uvulldaȯt *read* uvulltaȯt
P. 238, l. 9, *for* dyrnaȯt *read* dyrnnaȯt
ib., l. 11, *for* diffirth *read* diffyrth
ib., l. 18, *for* vedissyawt *read* vedyssyaȯt
ib., l. 20, *for* adueil *read* atueil

who has also added some further variants (marked *a*, *b*, &c.) in the foot-notes.

Strachan had left behind no material for the Glossary except a first rough list of words. In drawing it up use was made of a letter to Thurneysen, in which he expressed his intention to arrange the words according to their actual sounds. His only doubts were about the phonetic value of final *c*, *t*, *p*. On this point he wrote: "Of course final *b* is common, also certain of my texts write *d* for *d*. But none of them have *g* for final *g*." In accordance with modern pronunciation, Professor Meyer considered it desirable to substitute the letter *g*, though the period at which final *c* became voiced has not yet been established.

No notes to the texts were found among Strachan's papers. He had brought back from Peniarth, from MSS. No. 22, 44, 45, and 46, a large number of variants to the Story of Lear and that of Arthur, which he would no doubt have used for his notes. Those to Lear have been printed in an Appendix; but the Peniarth versions of Arthur seem to differ so much from those of the *Red Book* and the Additional MS. 19,709 that they would have to be printed in full.

Since the great work of Zeuss, this is the first attempt to write a grammar of Early Welsh on historical principles. It was the hope of the author expressed in letters to friends that his work would stir up Welsh scholars to investigate more thoroughly than they have done hitherto the history of their language. But no one was more conscious of the gaps still left by his work than Strachan himself. "It is only a beginning," he wrote to Thurneysen. "I hope people will make some allowance for the difficulties of the work and the scanty amount of trustworthy material. One is continually finding out something new." References to the need of further investigation will be found in many places throughout the Grammar. His own discoveries

of the functions of *ry*, of the relative forms of the verb, and his account of the uses of the verbal prefixes *a* and *yδ* point out the way to future investigators in this neglected field of research. To these discoveries he was led by his unrivalled knowledge of Irish grammar, so intimately connected in its origins with that of Welsh that he believed no true progress possible without their parallel study. "It is absurd to think," he once wrote to Mr. Best, "that either branch of Celtic can be satisfactorily studied apart from the other;" and to Mr. Giles: "Without the knowledge of Irish early Welsh grammar is rather like a book sealed with seven seals."

The circumstances under which this book has been produced having been thus indicated, it remains to express acknowledgement of the work of the scholars who have contributed towards the result: first to those whose assistance to Professor Strachan in his lifetime he would specially have desired to recognise; in particular to Dr. Evans who furnished the editions both published and unpublished of the Welsh texts which were used in compiling the Reader; to the late Mr. Wynne of Peniarth who freely gave access to the MSS. in his possession; and to Sir John Rhys (joint editor of the *Red Book* and of other texts) and to the Fellows of Jesus College, Oxford, who afforded every facility in their power; secondly to those who since the author's death have enabled his work to be presented to the public, especially to Professor Tout who initiated the idea of preparing the book for publication and undertook the arrangements for it; to Professor Kuno Meyer, whose long and intimate association with Strachan in his Celtic studies specially fitted him to undertake the duty of revising the whole work and seeing it through the press; to Mr. Lewis in assisting Professor Meyer particularly in the preparation

of the Glossary; and to Mr. O. Eilian Owen and Mr. J. Glyn Davies for their help in reading proofs. The title of the book was chosen by Strachan himself.

It has been the earnest wish of those who have taken part in preparing this work for publication that it should appear in a form worthy of the reputation and memory of the distinguished scholar whose career was cut short so sadly in the midst of his full literary activity, and that the results of his devoted labours and profound learning should not be lost to students of the Welsh language.

February, 1909.

TABLE OF CONTENTS

PAGE

Preface - - - - - - - - - v

List of Abbreviations - - - - - - - - xv

GRAMMAR

The numbers refer to the paragraphs.

Sounds and sound changes 1—22.
Vowels and diphthongs 1; vowel quantity 2; accented vowels 2A; unaccented 2A; consonants classified 3; orthographical variations 3; accent 4; changes of vowels 5; changes of vowels due to *i* vowel preserved 6; changes due to a lost vowel 7; vowel variation due to accent 8; prothetic vowel 9; epenthetic vowel 10; consonantal changes 11; sound changes within the sentence 12; table of consonant mutations 13; vocalic mutation or lenation 14; general exceptions to rules of lenation 15; lenation of noun and adjective 16; lenation of pronoun 17; lenation of verb 18; nasal mutation 19-20; spirant mutation 21; *h* in sentence construction 22.

The Article 23-24.

The Noun 25-29.
Numbers and cases 25; syntax of the cases 26; formation of plural 27-28; collective nouns 29.

The Adjective 30—39.
Gender 30; formation of plural 31; concord 32; number 33; order in sentence 34; predicative noun and adjective with *yn* 35; adjectival phrases 36; comparison 37; construction of comparative and superlative 38; the equative 39.

The Adverb 40.

The Numerals 41—44.
Cardinals and ordinals 41; syntax of cardinals and ordinals 42; distributives 43; multiplicatives 44.

The Pronoun 45—90.
Personal pron. 45—51; independent pron. 45—47; infixed pron. 48—51; pron. with preposition 52—54; possessive pron. 55-56; possessive adjs. 57—59; *hun, hunan* etc. 60; demons. pron. 61-62; article + substantive + adverb 63; indefinite prons. and adjs. 64—72; substantives in a pronominal function 73—78; interrog. prons. 79—81; relat. prons. 82—89; expression of case in the relative 86—89; substitutes for the relative 90.

Preverbal particles 91—97.
The particle *yd* 91—94; the particle *ry* 95—97.
The Verb 98—161.
Conjugation of the verb 98–126: verbal classes 98; voice 99; number 100-101; person 102-3.
The moods 104; the indicative 105—109; present 106; imperfect 107; preterite 108; pluperfect 109.
The subjunctive 110—114: formation of subj. 110; tenses 111; usages of subj. 112—114.
The imperative 115.
The participle passive in *-edic* 116; verbal in *-adwy* 117.
The verbal noun: formation of 118-119; usage 120—126.
Paradigm of the regular verb 127—139: types 127; pres. and fut. indic. 128—130; imperf. indic. and conditional 131; pret. and perf. indic. act. 132; pret. and perf. indic. pass. 134; plupf. indic. 135—136; imperat. 137; pres. subjunctive 138; past subj. 139.
Irregular verbs: *mynet* 140; *dyvot* 141; *gwneuthur* 142; *gwybot* 143; *adnabot* 144; *caffel* 145; *rodi* 146; *tawr* 147; *moes* 148; *hwde* 149; *med* 150; *heb* 151.
The substantive verb: paradigm 152; remarks on subst. vb. 154; on copula 155—158; position of copula 159.
Compounds of *bot* 160-161.
The Preposition 162—197.
The Conjunction 198—234.
Negative particles 235—238.
Interrogative particles 239—240.
Responsive particles 240—241.
The Interjection 243—244.

READER

PAGE

I. Lear and his Daughters - - - - - - 139
From *Ystorya Brenhined y Brytanyeit*, printed in *Red Book of Hergest*, ed. J. Rhŷs and J. G. Evans, vol. ii, pp. 64—69. The variants are from Brit. Mus. MSS. Add. 19,709.

II. The Story of Arthur - - - - - - 145
From the same source, pp. 184—232.

III. The Hunting of Twrch Trwyth - - - - 193
An excerpt from the story of *Kulhwch and Olwen*. Chapters 1—6 are from the *White Book of Rhydderch* (Peniarth MS. 4), with variants from the *Red Book* (Rhŷs-Evans, vol. i, pp. 126—128); chapters 7—25 from the *Red Book* (ib. p. 128, l. 13—p. 142, l. 19).

IV. The Procedure in a Suit for Landed Property - 208
From the oldest copy of the Laws of Howel Dda contained in the *Black Book of Chirk* (Peniarth MS. 29). The variants are from Aneurin Owen's *Ancient Laws of Wales*, vol. i, pp. 142—156. The text in the right-hand columns is a critical edition with normalised spelling by Strachan.

V. The Privilege of St. Teilo - - - - - 222
From Evans-Rhŷs, *Liber Landavensis*, p. 118. The text in the right-hand columns is a critical edition with normalised spelling by Strachan.

VI. Moral Verses - - - - - - - - - 225
From the *Red Book*, col. 1031, printed in Skene's *Four Ancient Books of Wales*, vol. ii, pp. 249–250.

VII. Doomsday - - - - - - - - - 227
From the Book of Taliessin, printed in *Four Ancient Books*, vol. ii, pp. 118—123. Strachan has made no use of the variants printed in *Myvyrian Archaiology*, p. 72 ff.

VIII. To Gwenwynwyn - - - - - - - 233
From the *Red Book*, col. 1394, where it comes after several poems ascribed to Llywelyn Vardd; printed in *Myvyrian Archaiology*, p. 176a, where it is ascribed to Cynddelw.

IX. Cynddelw to Rhys ab Gruffudd - - - - 234
(*a*) from *Black Book of Carmarthen*, ed. J. G. Evans, fo. 39b; (*b*) from *Red Book*, col. 1436.

X. A Religious Poem - - - - - - - 237
From *Black Book of Carmarthen*, fo. 20a, and from *Red Book*, col. 1159.

XI. A Dialogue between Ugnach Uab Mydno and Taliessin - - - - - - - - - 239
From *Black Book of Carmarthen*, fo. 51a.

XII. Winter - - - - - - - - - - 241
From *Black Book of Carmarthen*, fo. 45a.

Glossary - - - - - - - - - - 243
Appendix - - - - - - - - - - 277
Index - - - - - - - - - - - 279
Corrigenda - - - - - - - - - - 293

LIST OF ABBREVIATIONS

Anc. Laws. Ancient Laws and Institutes of Wales, edited by Aneurin Owen. 1841.

Arch. Archiv für celtische Lexikographie.

Arch. Cambr. Archaeologia Cambrensis.

BB. Black Book of Carmarthen, edited by J. G. Evans. Oxford. 1888.

BCh. Black Book of Chirk.[1]

Bezz. Beitr. Bezzenberger's Beiträge zur Kunde der indogermanischen Sprachen.

Bret. Breton.

CM. Ystorya de Carolo Magno, from the Red Book of Hergest, edited by Thomas Powell. 1883.

Corn. Cornish.

Cymrod. Y Cymmrodor, embodying the Transactions of the Cymmrodorion Society of London. 1877 ff.

CZ. Zeitschrift für celtische Philologie.

E. Lh. Archæologia Britannica, by Edward Lhuyd. Oxford. 1707.

Eng. English.

Eriu The Journal of the School of Irish Learning, Dublin.

FB. The Four Ancient Books of Wales by W. F. Skene. Edinburgh. 1868.

Gaul. Gaulish.

Hg. Selections from the Hengwrt Mss. edited by Robert Williams, vol. I. 1876; vol. II. London. 1892.

Ir. Irish.

KZ. Kuhn's Zeitschrift für vergleichende Sprachforschung.

LA. The Elucidarium and other tracts in Welsh from Llyvyr Agkyr Llandewivrevi, edited by J. Morris Jones and John Rhŷs. Oxford. 1894.

1. The references in the Grammar are to the pages of the photographic facsimile about to be published by J. G. Evans.

Lat. Latin.

Laws, see Anc. Laws.

Leg. Wall. Cyfreithjeu Hywel Dda ac eraill, seu Leges Wallicae, edited by W. Wotton. Londini. 1730.

Lhuyd, see E. Lh.

Lib. Land. Liber Landavensis, edited by J. G. Evans and J. Rhŷs. Oxford. 1893.

Loth Mab. Les Mabinogion traduits en entier par J. Loth. Paris. 1889.

MA. The Myvyrian Archaiology of Wales. Denbigh. 1870.

Mart. Cap. The Old-Welsh Glosses on Martianus Capella edited by Wh. Stokes in the *Archaeologia Cambrensis* for 1873, p. 1 ff. and in *Beiträge zur vergl. Sprachforschung* VII. p. 385 ff.

Mid. Middle.

Mod. Modern.

O. Old.

Ox. gl. Glossae Oxonienses, edited in Zeuss-Ebel, Grammatica Celtica, p. 1052 ff. Berlin. 1871.

Pughe A Dictionary of the Welsh Language by W. Owen Pughe. 2. ed. Denbigh. 1832.

RB. The Red Book of Hergest edited by J. Rhŷs and J. G. Evans, vol. I. (Mabinogion), Oxford. 1887; vol. II. (The Bruts), Oxford. 1890.

Rev. Celt. Revue Celtique.

Rhŷs, Celt. Heath. J. Rhŷs, Lectures on the Origin and Growth of Religion as illustrated by Celtic Heathendom. 3. ed. 1898.

Rhŷs, Lect. J. Rhŷs, Lectures on Welsh Philology. 2. ed. London. 1879.

WB. The White Book of Rhydderch.[1]

1. The references in the Grammar are to the pages of the edition about to be published by J. G. Evans.

SOUNDS AND SOUND-CHANGES.

VOWELS AND DIPHTHONGS.

1. Middle Welsh has the following system:—

Vowels:—**a, e, i, o, u, w, y.**

Diphthongs:—**ae, oe, ei, eu, aw, ew, iw, yw, wy.**

NOTE.—The following are the more important orthographical variations:

(a) **u** is written **u** or **v**, e.g. **un** or **vn** *one*. That **u** already in O.W. approached to an **i** sound is shown by the spelling **Dinoot** (from Lat. Donatus) in Bede for what in O.W. would be normally **Dunaut**, later **Dunawt.**

(b) **w** (=u in sound) is in Mid.W. commonly written **w** or **6**; in O.W. it is written **u**, and in some Mid.W. MSS. **u** or **v**, e.g. O.W. **crunn** *round*, later **crunn, crvnn, cr6nn, crwnn.** The same applies to **w** in diphthongs, e.g. O.W. **dui** *two*, later **duỳ, dvỳ, d6y, dwy**; O.W. **bleu** *hair*, later **bleu, blev, ble6, blew.**

(c) **y** is in O.W. written **i**, in Mid.W. MSS. **i, e, ẏ, y**, e.g. O.W. **hinn** *these*, later **henn, hẏnn, hynn.**

(d) The diphthongs **ae, oe**, are in O.W. **ai, oi**, later **ai, aẏ, ay, ae**; **oi, oẏ, oy, oe**, e.g. O.W. **air** *slaughter*, later **aẏr, ayr, aer**; O.W. **coit** *wood*, later **coẏt, coyt, coet.**

(e) The diphthong **eu** appears in O.W. as **ou**, e.g. **aperthou** *offerings*, later **abertheu.** In final position in Mid.W. **-eu** sometimes appears as **-e**, e.g. **minhe** *on my part* = **minheu**; in Mod.W. it is written **-au**, e.g. **pennau** *heads* = Mid.W. **penneu.**

(f) For **wy, oẏ** and **oe** are also found, e.g. **boẏ** = **bwy** *he may be*, **moe** = **mwy** *greater.*

VOWEL QUANTITY.

2. The quantity of vowels depends not on their prehistoric quantity, but on the nature of the syllables in which they stand. Apart from dialectal variation, the following may serve as approximate rules, at least for the period subsequent to the shifting of the accent (§ 4).

A. Accented vowels are :—

(a) Long.

(α) In monosyllables ending in a vowel, e.g. **tȳ** *house*.

(β) In monosyllables ending in a single consonant, e.g. **dȳn** *man* (= O.Ir. duine), **gwlād** *country* (= O.Ir. flaith), **māb** *son*, **glān** *pure* (= O.Ir. glan), **glās** *green* (= O.Ir. glas), **crȳch** *curly*.

NOTE.—**s** always goes back to an earlier **ss** ; **ch, th, ff** (= **f** in sound) to an earlier double consonant, e.g. **crȳch** *curly* = Gaul. Crixos, **brīth** *variegated* = Ir. mrecht, **clōff** *lame* = Low Lat. cloppus; here the reduction to a single consonant was prior to the operation of the above law. In Mod.W. a vowel is short before final **c, t, p**; these final sounds occur only in late borrowings.

(b) Half-long, in open syllables of polysyllabic words, e.g. **dì-nas** *city*: **dīn** *fortress* (= Ir. dūn), **tà-deu** *fathers*: **tād** *father*.

(c) Short.

(α) In monosyllables originally ending in a double consonant (with the above exceptions), e.g. **pĕnn** *head* (= Ir. cenn), **trŭm** *heavy* (= Ir. tromm), **părth** *part* (from Lat. part-em).

(β) In closed syllables of polysyllabic words, e.g. **pĕnneu** *heads*: **pĕnn, ŭndeb** *unity*: **ūn** *one* (= Ir. ōen). The vowel is somewhat shorter in polysyllables like **penneu** than in monosyllables like **penn**.

B. Unaccented vowels are short. This rule also applies to proclitic words like **heb** *without*, **fy** *mine*, **dy** *thine*.

THE CONSONANTS.

3. The consonants may be classified :—

	Explosives.		Spirants.		Nasals.	
	Voiceless.	Voiced.	Voiceless.	Voiced.	Voiceless.	Voiced.
Gutturals	**c**	**g**	**ch**	(**ȝ**)	**ngh**	**ng** (= ŋə)
Dentals	**t**	**d**	**th**	**đ**	**nh**	**n**
Labiodentals			**ff** (= **f**)	**v**		
Labials	**p**	**b**			**mh**	**m**

Liquids. Voiceless :—**ll, rh**; voiced:—**l, r**.

Semivowels :—**y, w**.

Sibilant :—**s**.

Breath :—**h**.

NOTE.—The following are the more important orthographical variations :—

(a) For O.W. **c** = **k**, both **c** and **k** found in Mid.W., **c** particularly at the end of a word ; e.g. O.W. **cimadas** *fitting*, Mid.W. **kyvadas** and **cyvadas**. In Mid.W. **sc, sp** became **sg, sb**, e.g. **kysgu** by **kyscu** *to sleep*, **ysbryd** from Lat. spiritus.

(b) With regard to the graphic representation of the mediæ the following may be noted. In Old British the symbols **c, t, p** were taken over from Latin with their Latin values. In the course of time, before the loss of final syllables, **c, t, p**, when they stood between vowels, or after a vowel and before certain consonants, became in sound mediæ **g, d, b**, but continued in O.W. to be usually written **c, t, p**, e.g. **trucarauc** *compassionate* = Mid.W. **trugarawc**, Mod.W. **trugarog**, **dacr** *tear* = Mid.W. **dagyr**, **atar** *birds* = Mid.W. **adar**, **datl** gl. foro = Mid.W. **dadyl**, **etn** *bird* = Mid.W. **edyn**, **cepistyr** *halter* (from Lat. capistrum) = Mid.W. **kebystyr**. In Mid.W. **g, d, b** are regularly written in the interior of a word (except that **c, t, p** may appear in composition, e.g. **rac-ynys** *fore-island*, **kyt-varchogyon** *fellow-horsemen*, **hep-cor** *to dispense with*, or in inflexion and derivation under the influence of the simple word, e.g. **gwlatoed**, by **gwladoed** *countries*: **gwlat**, **gwaet-lyt** *bloody*: **gwaet**). But final **g** is regularly expressed by **c**, and final **d** by **t** (except in certain MSS. such as BB. which express **d** regularly by **d** and use **t** to express the spirant **đ**). Final **p** for **b** is not so universal; there are found, e.g. **pawp, pop**, *everyone, every* by **pawb, pob**, and **mab** *son*, **heb** *said*.

(c) The spirant **f** is in O.W. written **f**, and this orthography survives in Mid.W., but the usual Mid.W. symbol is **ff** or **ph**. In O.W. the tenuis is sometimes traditionally written for the spirant, e.g. **cilcet** gl. tapiseta (from Lat. culcita) = Mod.W. **cylched**.

(d) With regard to the graphic representation of the voiced spirants the following may be noted. **g, d, b, m** were taken from Latin with their Latin values. In time, between vowels and before and after certain consonants, they became spirants **ȝ, đ, v**, but continued to be written **g, d, b, m**, e.g. **scamnhegint** gl. levant = later **ysgavnheynt, colginn** gl. aristam = Mod.W. **colyn** *sting*, **cimadas** *fitting* = Mod.W. **cyfaddas, abal** *apple* = later **aval**. In O.W. the spirant **g** had already been lost in part, e.g. **nertheint** gl. armant by **scamnhegint, tru** *wretched* = Ir. truag *wretched*. In Mid.W. the spirant **g** has disappeared. The spirant **đ**, which in Mod.W. is written **dd**, is in Mid.W. usually expressed by **d**, e.g. **rodi** *to give* = Mod.W. **rhoddi**, except in certain MSS. such as BB. which use the symbol **t**, e.g. **roti** = **rhoddi**. The spirant **v** in Mid.W. is written **u, uu, v, fu, f**, the last particularly at the end of a word, (e.g. **cyuadas, cyvadas, cyfuadas, cyfadas** *fitting* = O.W. **cimadas**, Mod.W. **cyfaddas**), in Mod.W. **f**; in certain MSS., however, such as BB. it is expressed by **w**, e.g. **calaw** *reeds* = **calaf**. In O.W. final **v** has been already lost in part, e.g. **lau** *hand* = Ir. lām, and in the course of time it tends more and more to disappear, e.g. in Mid.W. the superlative ending **-af** appears also as **-a**.

(e) The guttural nasals **ng** (i.e. *ŋə* as in Eng. *sing*) and **ngh** are often written **g** and **gh**, e.g. **llog**=**llong** *ship*, **agheu** *death*=**angheu**.

(f) The voiceless l is in O.W. written l at the beginning of a word, e.g. **lau** *hand*=Mid.W. **llaw**, elsewhere **ll**, e.g. **mellhionou** gl. violas. In Mid.W. it is in all positions written **ll** or **ll**. For the voiceless **r**=Mod.W. **rh**, Early Welsh has no special symbol; it is written **r**.

(g) The semivowel **y** is in O.W. written **i**, e.g. **iechuit** gl. sanitas, **mellhionou** gl. violas: in Mid.W. it is expressed by **i**, e.g. **ieith** *speech*, or **y**, e.g. **engylyon** *angels*. In the initial combinations **hw** (from an earlier **sv**), which in Mid.W. appears as **chw** or dialectally as **hw**, and **gw** (from an earlier **w**), **w** is in O.W. expressed by **u**, e.g. **hui** *you*=Mid.W. **chwi**, **guin** *wine* (from Lat. uinum)=Mid.W. **gwin**; in Mid.W. it is commonly written **6**, **w**, but in some MSS. **u**, **v**, e.g. **gó́ynn**, **guynn**, **gvynn** *white*; but in Mid.W. O.W. initial **guo-** becomes **go-**. In other positions in Mid.W. **w** is expressed by **6**, **w**, sometimes by **u**, **uu**, **v**; here it comes from O.W. **gu**, e.g. O.W. **neguid** *new*=Mid.W. **newyd**, **neuyd**, **neuuyd**, **nevyd**, O.W. **petguar** *four*=Mid.W. **petwar**, **petuar**, **petvar**. It is to be noted that initial **gw** from an earlier **w** does not form a syllable even before a consonant; thus **gwlad** *country* from ***ulatis**=Ir. **flaith** *kingdom* is monosyllabic.

The Accent.

4. In accented words in Mod.W. the accent, with certain exceptions, falls on the penult, e.g. **pechádur** *sinner*, **tragywýddol** *eternal*. This accentuation, however, has replaced an earlier system which was common to all the British dialects and is still preserved in the Breton dialect of Vannes, according to which the accent fell on the last syllable, e.g. **parawt** *ready*. The effect of this earlier accentuation is seen in the weakening of vowels in syllables that according to the later system would have borne the accent, e.g. **pechadúr** *sinner* from Lat. **peccātōrem**: **pechawt** *sin* from Lat. **peccātum**, O.W. **Dimét**, Mid.W. **Dyvet**: **Demetae**, O.W. **hinhám**, Mid.W. **hynhaf** *oldest*: **hen** *old*, Mid.W. **llynghes** *fleet*: **llong** *ship*, O.W. **cilchét**, Mid.W. **cylchet** from Lat. culcita, Mid.W. **drysseu** *doors*: **drws** *door*. The date of the change of accent has not yet been accurately fixed; with it seems to be connected the change of **aw** to **o** in final syllables, e.g. Mid.W. **pechawt**=Mod.W. **pechod**, of which there are sporadic instances in early Mid.W., e.g. **rýmdýwod** (=**rym dywawt**), BB. 28ª 13.

Changes of Vowels.

Changes due to a vowel which follows or which originally followed.

5. The quality of a vowel is liable to be influenced by the vowel of the following syllable. Sometimes the infecting vowel remains, e.g. **Ceredic** from Old British **Coroticus**, **eyt** *goes*=O.W. **egit** by O.W. **agit**, **menegi** *to show* by **managaf** *I show*. Sometimes the infecting vowel has been lost, e.g. **trom** f. by **trwm** m. *heavy* from ***trummā**, ***trummos** (where it will be seen that the short vowel of the masculine exerted no influence, while the long vowel of the feminine did), **brein** *ravens* (by **bran** *raven*) from ***branī**, earlier ***branoi**, **cyrn** *horns* (by **corn** *horn*) from ***cornī**, earlier ***cornoi**, **dreic** *dragon* (by pl. **dragon**) from ***dracī**, from ***dracū** from Lat. dracō, **ceint** *I sing* (by **cant** *he sang*) from ***cantī**, from ***cantū**, from ***cantō**, **Meir** from Lat. Maria, **yspeil** *spoil* from Lat. spolium. The infection may extend back more than one syllable e.g. **menegi**: **managaf**, **deveit** *sheep*: **davat** *a sheep*. The following are the changes of the kind which are important for inflection:—

A. Changes due to an *i* Vowel Preserved.

6. **a** > **e**, e.g. **ederyn** *a bird*: **adar** *birds*, **peri** *to cause*: **paraf** *I cause*, **edewis** *he promised*: **adaw** *to promise*, **cerit** *was loved*: **caru** *to love*, **llewenyd**, O.W. **leguenid** *joy*: **llawen** *joyous*.

ae > **ei**, e.g. **meini** *stones*: **maen** *stone*, **seiri** *artisans*: **saer**.

B. Changes due to a Lost Vowel.

7. (a) The lost vowel is **ā**.

y > **e**, e.g. **berr** f.: **byrr** m. *short*. The variation in **brith**, f. **braith** *variegated* is of the same kind; **brith** comes from ***mrictos**, **braith** from ***mrectā**, ***mrictā**.

w > **o**, e.g. **trom** f.: **trwm** m. *heavy*.

(b) The lost vowel is **ī** (of various origin).

a > **ei**, e.g. **meib** *sons*: **mab** *son*, **meneich** *monks*: **manach**

monk; **geill** *is able*: **gallaf** *I am able*, **gweheird** *he forbids*: **gwahardaf** *I forbid*, **ceint** *I sang*: **cant** *he sang*.

ae > **ei**, e.g. **mein** *stones*: **maen** *stone*, **Seis** *Saxon* (from *Saxī, *Saxū, Saxō): **Saeson** (from **Saxŏnes**).

Final **aw** > **eu, y**, e.g. **teu** *is silent*: **tawaf** *I am silent*, **edeu, edey, edy** *leaves*: **adawaf** *I leave*.

e > **y**, e.g. **hyn** *older*: **hen** *old*, **cestyll** *castles*: **castell** *castle*, **gwyl** *sees*: **gwelaf** *I see*, **gweryt** *helps*: **gwaret** *to help*.

o > **y**, e.g. **pyrth** *gates*: **porth** *gate*, **escyb** *bishops*: **escob** *bishop*, **tyrr** *breaks*: **torraf** *I break*, **egyr** *opens*: **agoraf** *I open*, **try** *turns*: **troaf** *I turn*.

oe > **wy**, e.g. **wyn** *lambs* (from *ognī): **oen** *lamb* (from ***ognos**).

w > **y**, e.g. **bylch** *gaps*: **bwlch** *gap*, **yrch** *roebucks*: **ywrch** *roebuck*.

Note 1.—In the 3 sg. pres. indic. act. of the verb the prehistoric ending is uncertain; **geill** might come phonetically from either *gallīt or ***gallyet**. In verbs containing radical **o**, infection is found only in the 3 sg. pres. indic. act., e.g. **tyrr** *he breaks*, but **torri** *to break*, **torrynt** *they broke*, **torrir** *is broken*. In shaping the conjugation of these verbs analogy seems to have played a large part, but the details of the development are obscure.

Note 2.—It will be observed that in the case of **i** infection the infection extends back to a preceding **a**, e.g. **deveit, edewis, egyr**.

Note 3.—There is also a variation between **ae** and **eu, ei**, e.g. **caer** *city*: pl. **ceuryd, ceyryd**; **aeth** *he went*: **euthum** *I went*.

Vowel Variation due to Accent.

8. Celtic **ā** became in British **ō**; the **ō** stage is seen in Bede's **Dinoot** from Lat. **Donātus**, and in early Irish loanwords which came from Latin through Britain, e.g. trindōit *Trinity* from Lat. trinitātem. In Welsh, during the period of the older accentuation this **ō** became in accented syllables **aw**, e.g. **Dunaẃd, trindaẃt**, in unaccented syllables **o**. To this are due variations like O.W. **cloriou** gl. tabellae: sg. **clawr**, Mid.W. **marchogyon** *horsemen*: **marchawc** *horseman*, **moli** *to praise*: **mawl** *praises*, and the proclitic **pob** *every* (= Ir. căch): accented **pawb** *everyone* (= Ir. cāch). After the shifting of the accent from the ultima to the penult, **aw** in accented words of more than one syllable became **o**,

e.g., Mod.W. **márchog** = Mid.W. **marchawc**, but Mod.W. **paẃb** = Mid.W. **paẃb**. For other instances of vowel weakening in unaccented syllables see § 4.

Prothetic Vowel.

9. Before words which in O.W. began with **s** + consonant there developed in the Mid.W. period a prothetic **y**, e.g. **ysgriven** *writing*: O.W. **scribenn, ystavell** *chamber*: O.W. **stabell, ystrodur** *packsaddle*: O.W. **strotur, yspeil** *spoil*: O.W. ***speil**, from Lat. spolium.

Epenthetic Vowel.

10. Before a final liquid, nasal, or **v**, an epenthetic vowel is often written, which, however, does not count metrically as a syllable.

(a) **Consonant + l**, e.g. **mynwgyl** by **mynwgl** *neck* = Mod. W. **mynwgl**; **kenedel, kènedyl** by **kenedl** *race* = O.W. **cenetl**, Mod.W. **cenedl**; **kwbwl, kwbyl** by **kwbl** *whole* = Mod.W. **cwbl**; **tavyl** *sling* = Mod.W. **tafl**.

(b) **Consonant + r**, e.g. **hagyr** by **hagr** *ugly* = Mod.W. **hagr**; **lleidyr** by **lleidr** *robber* = Mod.W. **lleidr**; **llestyr** *vessel* = O.W. **llestr, llestir**, Mod.W. **llestr**; **dwvyr, dwvwr** by **dwvr** *water* = Mod.W. **dwfr**.

(c) **Consonant + m**, e.g. **talym** *space* = Mod.W. **talm**.

(d) **Consonant + n**, e.g. **gwadyn** by **gwadn** *sole* = Mod.W. **gwadn**; **dwvyn** *deep* = Mod.W. **dwfn**.

(e) **Consonant + v**, e.g. **dedyf** *custom* = Mod.W. **deddf**; **baraf, baryf** *beard* = Mod.W. **barf**; **twrwf, twryf** by **twrf** *noise*.

Consonantal Changes.

11. The following changes of consonants in combination are of importance for accidence:—

(a) In the Indo-Germanic parent language **d** or **t + t** became **t^{t}t**, and **t^{s}t** in Celtic became **ss**, e.g. W. **llas** *was killed* = Ir. -slass from ***slat^{s}tos**: **llad** *kill* = Ir. slaidid *hews*.

(b) **act>aeth,** or, with ī infection,>**eith**; **ect>eith**; **wct >wyth**; **wcn, wgn>wyn,** e.g. **aeth** *he went* from ***act,** but **imdeith** *I travelled* from ***actī** (earlier ***actū, *actō**): Mid.W. **eyd** *goes* = O.W. **egit, agit**; **dyrreith** *he returned,* from ***-rekt**: √**reg-**; **amwyth** *he defended* from ***amukt**: **amwgaf** *I defend,* of which the verbal noun is **amwyn** from ***amucn**...

(c) **rt>rth,** e.g. **cymmerth** *he took* from ***com-bert**: **cymmeraf** *I take.*

(d) Before a labial **n** becomes **m,** e.g. **y maes** *in the field* from **yn maes.**

(e) **nd, mb > nn, mm,** e.g. **vyn nyvot, vy nyvot** *my coming* from **vyn dyvot**; **ym mwyt, y mwyt** *into food* from **yn bwyt.**

(f) **nc, nt, mp.** At the end of a word **nc, mp** remained, e.g. **ieuanc** *young,* **pump** *five*; **nt** remained in accented monosyllables, e.g. **dant** *tooth* (but proclitic **can, gan** *with* = O.W. **cant**); in words of more than one syllable it appears as **nt** or **n,** e.g. **ugeint** and **ugein** *twenty,* **carant** and **caran** *they love.* In the interior of a word **nc, nt, mp** develop regularly in the penultimate syllable to **ng, nn, mm,** in the antepenult to **ngh, nh, mh,** e.g. **tranc** *cessation*: **trengi** *to cease*; **angen** *necessity* (from ***ancen** = Ir. ēcen): **anghenawc** *necessitous*; O.W. **hanther** *half,* later **hanner**; **dant** *tooth*: **danned** *teeth*: **danhedawc** *toothed*; O.W. **pimphet** *fifth,* later **pymmet**; **cymmell** *compulsion* (from Lat. compello): pl. **cymhellyon.** The regular development, however, is liable to be affected by analogy.

NOTE 1.—The cause of the different treatment in the penult and the antepenult is the accent. In early W. the accent was on the last syllable (§ 4); the syllable immediately preceding the accent would be most weakly accented, the syllable before that would have a secondary accent, e.g. ắnghenawc, dắnhedawc, cy̆́mhellyón.

(g) Before **h**—

(α) **g, d, b** become tenues, e.g. **teckaf** *most beautiful* from ***teg-haf**: **tec** (phonetically **teg**) *beautiful,* **tebycko** from ***tebyg-ho** *he may think:* **tebygu** *to think,* **plyckau** *to fold* from ***plyg-hau**: **plyc** (phonetically **plyg**) *fold;* **calettaf** *hardest* from ***caled-haf**: **calet** (phonetically **caled**) *hard,* **cretto** *he may believe* from ***cred-ho**: **credu** *to believe,* **bwyta** *to eat* from ***bwyd-ha**: **bwyt** (phonetically **bwyd**) *food*; **cyvelyppaf** *most like* from ***cyvelyb-haf**: **cyvelyp** (phonetically **cyvelyb**) *like,* **attepo** from ***ad-heb-ho** *he may answer*: **attebu, digaplo** *he may cease to calumniate* from ***digabl-ho**: **digablu, llwyprawt** from ***llwybr-hawt** *will course*: **llwybraw** *to course.*

(β) **đ** becomes **th,** e.g. **diwethaf** *last* from ***diweđ-haf**: **diwed** *end,* **rotho** *he may give* from ***rođ-ho**: **rodi** *to give,* **rythau** *to set free* from ***ryđ-hau**; **ryd** *free.*

(γ) **v** becomes **f,** e.g. **tyffo** *he may grow* from ***tyv-ho**: **tyvu** *to grow,* **dyffo** *he may come:* **dyvod** *to come,* **coffau** *to remember* from ***cov-hau**; **cof** *memory.*

NOTE 2.—Instances of **ff** from **v-h** are not numerous, they have commonly been replaced by analogical forms, e.g. **araf-hau** *to make gentle,* **digrif-af** *most entertaining.* So **th** from **đ+h** becomes rarer and rarer in Mid.W., where e.g. **rotho** is replaced by **rodho** and **rodo**; the old forms are most persistent in the case of the tenues **c, t, p.** (cf. § 110)

(f) **th+đ > th,** e.g. **athiffero** *who may defend thee* from **ath-differo.** But here commonly the **đ** is written etymologically.

(g) **d+đ** became apparently **d,** e.g. **adyn** *wretch* from **ad-đyn** (**ad-** = Ir. aith-, with sense of Lat. re-).

SOUND-CHANGES WITHIN THE SENTENCE.

12. Within the sentence closely connected word groups are liable to changes similar to those that take place within individual words. As within the word vowel-flanked consonants were reduced, e.g. **cegin** *kitchen* from Lat. coquina, **niver** *number* from Lat. numerus, so in a word group, e.g. ***tōtā mārā** *great people* became **tud vawr.** As within the word **nc** became **ngh, nt** became **nh, mp** became **mh** (§ 11), **nd** became **nn,** e.g. **crwnn** *round* by Ir. cruind, **mb** became **mm,** e.g. **camm** *crooked* from Old British **cambos,** so in word groups, e.g. **vyn cynghor** *my counsel* became **vy ghynghor, vyn penn** *my head* became **vym penn, vy mhenn, vyn dyvot** *my coming* became **vyn nyvot, yn bwyt** *into food* became **ym mwyt, y mwyt.** But, on the one hand, a

particular mutation may spread analogically, if it becomes connected with some grammatical function; thus in Welsh it became the rule that after all feminine nouns in the singular a following adjective was mutated, though in Celtic only certain classes of feminine nouns ended in a vowel. On the other hand, the change may analogically disappear altogether, or the mutation may be restricted to certain phrases as in the case of the nasal mutation after numerals (§ 20c). In sound groups there are three kinds of initial change (1) vocalic mutation or lenation, which originated from cases where the preceding member of the group originally ended in a vowel, (2) nasal mutation where the preceding member originally ended in **n**, (3) spirant mutation where the preceding member ended in certain consonants, most commonly **s** but also **c**.

NOTE.—In reading Early Welsh texts the student must be careful not to be misled by the orthography, which does not consistently express the initial changes. Thus if he should meet with, e.g. **y gwlat** *the country* for **y wlat**, or **vyn dyvot** for **vyn nyvot**, that is only an archaistic or etymological orthography which is no evidence of the actual sound at the time.

13. Table of Consonant Mutations.

		radical	vocalic	nasal	spirant
Tenues	**c**	**c**orn	**g**orn	ng**h**orn	**ch**orn
	t	**t**at	**d**at	n**h**at	**th**at
	p	**p**renn	**b**renn	mh**r**enn	**ph**renn
Mediae	**g**	**g**wr	wr	ng**w**r	
	d	**d**yn	**đ**yn	n**y**n	
	b	**b**aryf	**v**aryf	m**a**ryf	
Liquids	**ll**	**ll**aw	law		
	rh	**rh**an	ran		
Nasal	**m**	**m**am	**v**am		

NOTE 1.—In vocalic mutation **g** became first the spirant **ȝ**, which was early lost (§ 3d). From the fact that initial **g** was thus lost, many words which originally began with a vowel in time assume an initial **g**; e.g. **y ord** *his hammer* (=Ir. ord) resembled externally **y wr** *his man*, and this superficial resemblance led to **gord** (for **ord**) like **gwr**. The principle is the same as in the development of initial **f** before a vowel in Mid.Ir.

NOTE 2.—As in Mid.W. the spirant is commonly written **d** (§ 3d), the vocalic mutation of initial **d** is not discernible in writing.

NOTE 3.—In Mid.W. initial **rh** is written **r**, so that the unmutated and the mutated forms are indistinguishable (§ 3f).

Vocalic Mutation or Lenation.

14. The history of Welsh lenation has still to be written. In some respects, particularly with regard to lenation after the verb, the subject is full of difficulty. In the development of lenation analogy played a large part, so that to some extent the usage would differ at different periods. And the fixing of the rules of lenation for a particular period is complicated by the fact that the mutation is not consistently expressed in writing. The following are the chief facts about lenation in Mid. W. prose; the material is taken from the Red Book of Hergest.

15. General exception to the rules of lenation. After final **n** and **r** initial **ll** and **rh** were regularly unmutated, e.g. **yn llawen** *gladly*, **y llaw** = O.W. **ir lau** *the hand*. For **rh** the rule is seen in Mod.W., e.g. **yn rhydd** *freely*, **y rhan** *the part*. As **rh** was not written in Mid. W. this distinction is not discernible there.

A. Lenation of Noun and Adjective (including nominal adjectival pronouns).

16. (a) After the article.

After the article in the sg. fem. the initial consonant of a following noun or adjective is lenated, e.g. **y gaer** *the city*, **yr dref** *to the town*, **y vrenhines** *the queen*. But **y llaw** *the hand* (§ 15).

(b) After the noun.

(α) After a noun in the feminine singular or the dual an adjective is lenated, e.g. **morwyn benngrech velen** *a curlyhaired auburn maid*, **deu vilgi vronwynnyon vrychyon** *two whitebreasted brindled hounds*. Also when the adjective is separated from the noun, e.g. **kaer uawr** a welynt, **vwyhaf** or byt *they saw a large town, the largest in the world.*

NOTE 1.—After the masc. sg. and the plur. lenation of the comparative is found in sentences of the following type: ny welsei dyn eiryoet llu **degach** . . . . noc oed hwnnw *no man had ever seen a host fairer than that* RB. 90, 13; na welsynt llongeu **gyweiryach** y hansawd noc wynt *that they had not seen ships better equipped than they* RB. 27, 3.

(β) After a noun in the fem. sg. or the dual a following genitive is lenated when it is equivalent to an adjective, e.g. **kist vaen** *a stone chest*; **deu vaen vreuan** *two millstones.*

NOTE 2.—The genitive is lenated after **meint, ryw, kyvryw** and **sawl** (§ 76-7), e.g. **y veint lewenyd** *the amount of gladness*; pa **ryw wysc** *what kind of dress?* **kyvryw wr** *such a man*; **y sawl vrenhined** *all the kings.* Further, the genitive of proper names is lenated after certain nouns, e.g. **Cadeir Vaxen** *Maxen's Seat*; **Caer Vyrdin** *Carmarthen*; **Llan badarn** lit. *Padarn's Church*; **Ynys Von** *Island of Mon*; **Eglwys Veir** *Mary's Church*; **Gwlat Vorgan** *the land of Morgan*; **pobyl Vrytaen** *the people of Britain*; **ty Gustenin** *the house of Custenin* (cf. Mod.W. **ty Dduw**); **mam Gadwaladyr** *mother of Cadwaladr*; Branwen **verch Lyr** *Branwen daughter of Llyr*; **gwreic Vrutus** *wife of Brutus*; **deu vab Varedud** *two sons of Maredud*.

(γ) After proper nouns there is lenation of a following noun or adjective denoting a characteristic of a person, e.g. **Llud vrenhin** *King Llud*, **Peredur baladyrhir** *Peredur of the long spear.*

NOTE 3.—The initial consonants of **mab** *son* and **merch** *daughter* are lenated, e.g. Pryderi **uab** Pwyll *Pryderi son of Pwyll*, Aranrot **verch** Don *Aranrod daughter of Don.*

NOTE 4.—Further instances of lenation in apposition are, e.g. ewythred Arthur oedynt, **urodyr** y uam *they were uncles of Arthur, his mother's brothers*, Giluaethwy ac Euyd . . . y nyeint, **ueibion** y chwaer *Gilvaethwy and Euyd his nephews, his sister's sons.* Aranrot uerch Don dy nith, **uerch** dy chwaer *Aranrot daughter of Don thy niece, thy sister's daughter.*

(δ) Lenation is found in the genitive of the verbal noun, particularly when it is separated from the governing word, e.g. menegi **uot** y crydyon wedy duunaw *declaring that the cobblers had united*; a dyuot . . . yn y vedwl **uynet** y hela *and it came into his mind to go to hunt*; a ryuedu o Owein yr mackwy **gyuarch** gwell idaw *and Owein wondered that the youth should greet him.*

(c) After the adjective.

(α) When an adjective in the positive degree precedes, the noun is lenated, e.g. **brawdoryawl garyat** *brotherly love*, **dirvawr wres** *excessive heat*, **amryuaelyon gerdeu** *divers songs.* So after the pronominal adjective **holl** *all*, e.g. **holl gwn** *all the dogs*, **holl wraged** *all the women.*

NOTE 5.—For the comparative the material to hand from RB. is scanty; with lenation: **yn llei boen** *less pain* 146, without lenation: **mwy gobeith** *greater hope* 95, **muscrellach gwr** *a more helpless man* 13. In RB. II. there are some instances of lenation after **mwy** *more.* After the superlative in RB. non-lenation seems to be the rule; in RB. II. lenation is more frequent.

NOTE 6.—In Celtic, when the adjective preceded the noun, it formed a compound with it, e.g. **hen-wrach** *old hag* (§ 34a), and in composition the lenation of the second element was regular, e.g. **eur-wisc** *golden dress*, **bore-vwyt** *morning-food, breakfast.* In Welsh, when the adjective came to be used freely before the noun, the lenation of the old compounds was retained in the positive.

NOTE 7.—On the analogy of lenation in compound words and of lenation of the noun following the adjective, in poetry, when the genitive precedes the noun, it may lenate, e.g. **byd lywyadwr** *the ruler of the world*, **o Gymry werin** *of the host of the Cymry.*

(β) When an adjective is repeated, e.g. **mwy vwy** vyd *greater and greater will be.*

(d) After YN forming adverbs, and with predicative nouns and adjectives (§ 35), e.g. yn vynych *often*, yn borth *as a help*, yn wreic *as a wife.* But yn llawen *gladly* (§ 15).

NOTE 8.—With regard to their influence upon a following word it is necessary to bear in mind that predicative **yn** lenates, that **yn** *in* is followed by the nasal mutation (§ 20b) and that **yn** with the verbal noun, e.g. **yn mynet** *going* (§ 126a), does not affect a following consonant.

(e) After numerals.

(α) After cardinal numbers.

un *one.* After the fem., lenation seems to be regular, e.g. **un wreic** *one woman*, **un vil** *one thousand*, **yr un gerdet** *the same going.* Initial **ll** is regularly uninfected, e.g. **un llynges** *one fleet.* After the masc. the usage seems to vary, e.g. **vn geir** *one word* RB. 197 = WB. 123, but **vn eir** RB. II. 222, yr **un march** *the same horse* RB. 9, but **neb vn varchawc** *any horseman* RB. II. 278, yn **un uaes** *in one field* RB. 114.

NOTE 9.—In Irish, ōin regularly mutates a following consonant. According to Rowlands, Mod.W. **un** mutates in the fem.

deu, dwy *two.* After these lenation is regular, e.g. **deu barchell** *two pigs*, **deu lu** *two hosts*, **dwy verchet** *two daughters.* But **deu cant** *two hundred* RB. II. *passim.*

chwech, chwe *six*:—**chwech wraged** *six women* RB. 18, 16; but **chwe blyned** *six years* RB. II. 387, 404.

seith *seven*: **seith gantref** *seven cantreds* RB. 25, 44, **seith gelfydyt** *seven arts* RB. II. 200, **seith wystyl** *seven hostages* RB.

II. 327. But usually without lenation **seith cantref, seith cuppyt** *seven cubits*, **seith cant** *seven hundred*, **seith punt** *seven pounds*, **seith meib** *seven sons*.

wyth *eight*: **wyth drawst** *eight beams* RB. 111, 21, **wyth gant** *eight hundred* RB. II. 386, but **wyth cant** 39, 40, 230, 257, 258, 385, **wyth temyl** *eight temples* 101, **wyth tywyssawc** *eight chiefs* 14.

naw *nine*. After this lenation is occasionally found, e.g. **naw rad** *nine ranks* LA. 17.

mil *thousand*: **mil verthyr** *a thousand martyrs* RB. II. 199.

10.—In **pumwyr** *five men*, **seithwyr** *seven men*, **nawwyr** *nine men*, **canwr** *a hundred men*, there seems to be composition.

(β) After ordinal numbers.

After the feminine ordinals from *three* onwards there is lenation, e.g. **y dryded geinc** *the third branch*, **y seithvet vlwydyn** *the seventh year*, **yr vgeinuet vlwydyn** *the twentieth year*.

11.—The same rule seems to hold with **eil** *other, second*, e.g. **yr eil marchawc** *the second horseman*, but **yr eil vlwydyn** *the second year*, and with **neill** *one of two*, e.g. **y neill troet** *the one foot*, but **y neill law** *the one hand*.

(f) After the pronoun.

(α) After the possessives **dy** *thy* and **y** *his*, e.g. **dy davawt** *thy tongue*, **ath lu** *and thy host*; **y benn** *his head*, **ae rud** *and his cheek*.

(β) After interrogatives, e.g. **pa le, py le** *where?* **pa beth** *what thing?*

(γ) In apposition, e.g. **ynteu Bwyll** *he Pwyll*, **hitheu wreic** Teirnon *she the wife of Teirnon*; **ef Vanawydan** *he Manawydan*; on hachaws **ni bechaduryeit** *because of us sinners*.

(g) After the verb.

(α) After the verb lenation is found not only of the object but also of the subject, whether the verb immediately precedes the lenated form or is separated from it, e.g. mi a **wnn gyghor** da *I know good counsel*, **y gwelynt uarchawc** *they saw a horseman*, ny **mynnei Gaswallawn** y lad ynteu *Caswallawn did not desire to slay him*. The proportion of lenation to non-lenation differs

in different parts of the verb. After certain parts of the verb lenation is absent or exceptional. Such are 3 sg. and 3 pl. pres. ind. act., 3 sg. pres. subj. act. and the passive forms. After the 3 sg. of the pret. ind. act. non-lenation of the subject is the rule; in RB. lenation of the object is occasionally found when it directly follows the verb, e.g. **y kavas Uendigeit** Uran *he found Bendigeit Vran*, frequently when the subject precedes it, e.g. **y lladawd** Peredur **wyr** yr iarll *Peredur slew the earl's men*.

(β) After most of the forms of the verb "to be" lenation is found, most consistently in the predicate from its close connexion with the verb, but also in the subject whether it follows the verb immediately or is separated from it, e.g. ot **wyt uorwyn** *if thou art a maid*, **yd ym drist** ni *we are sad*, **yssyd urenhin** *who is king*, **yssit le** *there is a place*, nyt **oed uwy** *it was not greater*, **oedynt gystal** *they were as good*, mi a **uydaf borthawr** *I am gatekeeper*, ni a **vydwn gyuarwyd** *we will be guides*, ny **bydei vyw** *he was not alive*, **y bydynt barawt** *they should be ready*, ny **buost gyvartal** *thou hast not been just*, tra **uu vyw** *while she lived*, pan **uuant veirw** *when they were dead*, **buassei oreu** *it would have been best*, **byd lawenach** *be more joyous*, **bit bont** *let him be a bridge*, **bydwch gedymdeithon** *be ye comrades*, tra **vwyf vyw** *while I live*, tra **vych vyw** *while thou livest*, tra **vom vyw** *while we live*, mal na **bont ueichawc** *so that they may not be pregnant*, pei **bewn urathedic** *if I were wounded*, a **vei vawr** *which should be great*, gwedy **y beym uedw** *after we were intoxicated*, nyt **oes blant** *there is no offspring*, budugawl **oed Gei** *Kei was gifted*, y hwnnw **y bu uab** *to him there was a son*, cyt **bei lawer** o geiryd *though there were many cities*, nyt **oes** in **gyghor** *we have no counsel*, **oed** well ytti **geisaw** *it were better for thee to seek*, tost **vu** gantaw **welet** *it pained him to see*. There is, however, no lenation after **ys**, e.g. **ys gwir** *it is true* (unless the subject be separated, e.g. kan**ys** gwell genthi **gyscu** *since she prefers to sleep*); after **nyt, nat, neut**, e.g. **nyt llei** *is not less*, **neut marw** *he is dead*; after **os**, e.g. **os gwr** *if he is a man*; after **ae** e.g. **ae gwell** *is it better?* after **yw**, e.g. pan yw **Peredur** *that it is Peredur* (unless the subject be

separated, e.g. hawd **yw** gennyf **gaffel** *I think it easy to get*); after **yttiw,** e.g. a **yttiw Kei** yn llys Arthur *is Kei in Arthur's court?* after **mae,** e.g. **y mae llech** *there is a flagstone* (unless the subject be separated, e.g. **y mae** yma **uorwyn** *there is here a maiden*); after **maent,** e.g. **y maent perchen** *there are owners*; after **byd,** e.g. ny **byd gwell** *it will not be better* (unless the subject be separated, e.g. or **byd** gwell genwch **bresswylaw** *if ye think it better to dwell*); after **boet,** e.g. **poet kyvlawn** dy rat titheu *may thy prosperity be complete*; after **bo,** e.g. pan **uo parawt** *when it is ready* (unless the subject be separated, e.g. pan **uo** amser in **uynet** *when it is time for us to go*).

(h) **In adverbs and adverbial phrases.**

In the interior of a sentence the initial consonant of an adverb or an adverbial phrase is often lenated, e.g. nyth elwir **bellach** byth yn vorwyn *thou shalt never more be called a maiden,* ny orffowysaf **vyth** *I will never rest,* pan daeth y paganyeit **gyntaf** y Iwerdon *when the pagans came first to Ireland,* bydwch yma **vlwydyn** y dyd hediw *be ye here a year to-day,* bu farw . . . . **vis whefrawr** *she died in the month of February,* pebyllaw a oruc **lawer o dydyeu** *he encamped many days.* In the same way lenation is found in preposition and suffixed pronoun, e.g. ny eill neb vynet **drwydi** *no one can go through it,* a gymero yr ergit **drossof i** *who shall take the blow in my stead,* hir uu **gennyf i** y nos honno *that night seemed long to me.*

Note 12.—In origin this is only a special case of post-verbal lenation, like the corresponding change in Irish, for which see Pedersen, KZ. xxxv. 332 sq.

Note 13.—Lenation is found of the initial consonants of some prepositions and conjunctions: **ar**=O.W. guar (Ir. for), **gen** by **can, wedy** by **gwedy**=O.W. guetig, **wrth**=O.W. gwrth, **dan** by **tan, dros**=O.W. **trus, drwy** by **trwy**=O.W. troi, **ban** by **pan, bei** by **pei.** The reason of the weakening here, however, seems to be that the words are pretonic.

(i) **After the prepositions am, ar, att, can, heb, o (a), tan, tros, trwy, uch, wrth, y, and frequently after the nominal preposition hyt,** e.g. **am betheu** *about things*; **ar vrys** *in haste*; **att Bwyll** *to Pwyll*; **gan bawb** *with every one*; **heb vwyt** *without food*; **o gerd** *of music*; **dan brenn** *under a tree*; **dros**

vor *across the sea*; **trwy lewenyd** *through joy*; **uch benn** *above*; **wrth Gynan** *to Cynan*; **y vynyd** *upwards*; **hyt galan Mei** *till the first of May.*

(k) **After a negative in phrases like na wir** *it is not true* RB. 105; **na well** *it is not better* RB. 61.

(l) **After mor** *how, so* and **neu** *or,* e.g. **mor druan** *how wretched*; **neu vuelyn** *or horn.*

(m) **After interjections.**

(α) The vocative is lenated after **a, ha, oia, och, ub** e.g. **a vorwyn** *O maiden*; **oia wr** *ho! man*; **och Ereint** *alas! Gereint*; **ub wyr** *alack! men.* But without any preceding particle lenation of the vocative is found, e.g. **dos vorwyn** *go, maiden.*

(β) After **llyma, llyna,** and **nachaf,** e.g. **llyma luossogrwyd** yn ymlit *see! there is a host following* RB. II. 302; **llyna uedru** yn drwc *there is bad behaviour*; **nachaf uarchawc** yn dyuot *behold! a horseman was coming.*

B. Lenation of the Pronoun.

17. The pronoun is lenated:—

(a) As subject or object, or emphasizing an infixed or suffixed pronoun or possessive adjective, e.g. elwyf **ui** *I might go,* gallaf **i** *I can,* ny buum drwc **i** *I was not evil,* y rodaf **inneu** *I will give,* arhowch **uiui** *wait for me,* na chabla **di uiui** *do not blame me,* nyt atwaenwn **i didi** *I did not recognise thee,* ath gud **ditheu** *which hides thee,* ohonaf **i,** ohonaf **inneu** *by me,* vy ysgwyd **i** *my shield,* dy grogi **di** *thy hanging,* dy lad **ditheu** *thy slaying.*

Note 1.—But after final **t t** is usual, e.g. y rodeist **ti** *thou hast given,* gan dy genyat **ti** *with thy leave,* dy vot **titheu** *thy being.*

(b) Sometimes in apposition, e.g. ni a awn **ui** a thi *we will go, I and thou,* keisswn ninneu **ui** a thi *let us seek, I and thou.*

(c) After other lenating words, e.g. **gwae vi** *woe to me,* neu **vinneu** *or I,* **neu ditheu** *or thou.*

C. Lenation of the Verb.

18. The verb is lenated :—

(a) After infixed pronoun of sg. 2, e.g. **yth elwir** *thou art called.*

(b) After relative **a,** e.g. govyn **a oruc** *he asked.*

(c) After the interrogative **pa, py,** e.g. hyt na wydat **pa** (or **py**) **wnaei** *so that she did not know what she should do*; **py liwy** di *why dost thou colour?*

(d) When the copula follows the predicate (§ 159), e.g. **llawen uu** y uorwyn *the maiden was glad.*

(e) After the verbal particle **yt** (§ 91 note 2) in the older language, e.g. **yt gaffei** *he should get.*

(f) After the verbal particle **ry** (but cf. § 21 note), e.g. **ry geveis** *I have got.* Similarly after **neur** (§ 95 note), e.g. **neur gavas** *he has got.*

(g) After the interrogative **a,** e.g. **a bery** di *wilt thou effect?*

(h) After the conjunctions **pan, tra, yny,** e.g. **pan golles** *when he lost,* **tra barhaawd** *while it lasted,* **tra vwyf** *as long as I am,* **yny glyw** *till he hears,* **yny welas** *till he saw,* **yny vyd** *till he is.*

(i) After the negatives **ny** (including **ony, pony**) and **na** (with the exception of the tenues § 21e), e.g. **ny allaf** *I cannot,* **ny ladaf** *I will not slay,* **kany vynny** *since thou dost not desire,* **pony wydut ti** *didst thou not know?* **na ovyn di** *do not ask,* Duw a wyr **na ladaf i** *God knows that I will not slay.*

Note.—But after **ny, na** the rule of lenation is not absolute. In particular initial **m** is commonly unchanged, e.g. **ny mynnaf** *I do not desire,* **hyt na mynnei** *so that he did not desire.* Further, initial **b** of forms of **bot** *to be* is commonly unlenated, e.g. **ny bu** gystal *it was not so good*; a wypo **na bo** miui *who shall know that it is not I.* But in the imperative lenation seems to be the rule, e.g. **na uit** amgeled gennweh *be not troubled.* Non-lenation after **ny** comes from the old non-relative forms (§ 21 note). **Na** originally ended in a consonant (**nac**), so that after it the lenation is irregular; so far as it lenates it has followed the analogy of **ny.**

Nasal Mutation.

19. Nasal mutation is very irregularly written in Mid.W.MSS. The mutation of **nc** is expressed by **gk** or **gh,** the mutation of **nt** commonly by **nt,** rarely by **nh,** the mutation of **mp** commonly by **mp,** sometimes by **mph** or **mh.** The mutation of **ng** is expressed by **gg** or **ngg,** the mutation of **nd, nb** by **n** or **nd,** and **m** or **mb.**

20. Nasal mutation is found :—

(a) After **vyn** *my,* e.g. **vygkynghor, vyghynghor** *my counsel,* **vyntat, vynhat** *my father,* **vympenn, vymphen, vymhen** *my head,* **vyggwreic (gwreic)** *my wife,* **vynggwely** *my bed,* **vynyvot, vyndyvot** *my coming,* **vymaraf (baraf)** *my beard.*

(b) After **yn** *in, into,* e.g. **ygkarchar, ygharchar** *in prison,* **ymperved, ymherved** *in the centre,* **ymhoen (poen)** *in punishment*; **yn diwed** (=**yn niwed**) *in the end*; **ymbwyt, ymwyt (bwyt)** *into food.*

(c) In certain phrases after numerals (chiefly with **blyned** *years* and **dieu, diwarnawt** *days*), e.g. **pump mlyned** *five years,* **chwech mlyned** RB. II. 397 (more usually **chwe blyned**) *six years,* **seith mlyned** *seven years,* **wyth mlyned** *eight years,* **naw mlyned** *nine years,* **naw nieu** *nine days,* **deng mlyned** *ten years,* **dec nieu** *ten days,* **deudec niwarnawt** *twelve days,* **pymtheng mlyned** *fifteen years,* **ugein mlyned** *twenty years,* **deugeint mlyned** *forty years,* **cant mlyned** *a hundred years,* **can mu** *a hundred kine,* **trychan mu** *three hundred kine.*

Note.—This usage started from those numerals which in Old Celtic ended in **n**: **seith** (cf. Ir. secht n-, Lat. septem; final **m** in Celtic became **n**), **naw** (cf. Ir. nōi n-, Lat. novem), **dec** (cf. Ir. deich n-, Lat. decem), **cant** (cf. Ir. cēt n-, Lat. centum).

Spirant Mutation.

21. This is found :—

(a) After the numerals **tri** *three* and **chwe(ch)** *six,* e.g. **tri chantref** *three cantreds,* **tri pheth** *three things,* **chwe thorth** *six loaves.*

(b) After **y** *her,* e.g. **y chlust** *her ear,* **y throet** *her foot,* **y phenn** *her head.*

(c) After the prepositions **ac, a** *with,* **tra** *beyond,* e.g. **a chledyf** *with a sword,* **a thi** *with thee,* **tra thonn** *beyond wave.*

(d) After the conjunctions **a(c)** *and*, **no(c)** *than*, **o** *if*, e.g. mam **a that** *father and mother*, traet **a phenn** *feet and head*; gwaeth **no chynt** *worse than before*; **o chigleu** *if he has heard.*

NOTE 1.—After **kwt** *where* spirant change is found: **cv threwna** *where it settles* BB. 44^b, but **kwt gaffei** (**caffei**) *where he should get* WB. 453; cf. **cud vit** BB. 44^b, **cwd uyd** *where it will be* FB. 146.

(e) After the negatives **ny** and **na(c)**, e.g. **ny chysgaf** *I will not sleep*, **ny thyrr** *does not break*, **ny phryn** *does not buy*; **na chwsc** *do not sleep*, **na thorraf** *that I do not break*, na marchawc **na phedestyr** *neither horseman nor footman.*

NOTE. 2.—But in the early poetry **ny** produces the spirant change only when it is non-relative; when it is relative a following **c**, **t**, or **p** is lenated, e.g. **ny char** *he does not love*, but **ny gar** *who does not love.* In the early poetry there is the same difference of treatment after the verbal particle **ry**, e.g. **ry charas** *has loved*, **ry garas** *who has loved.* This distinction between non-relative and relative forms must have extended to all consonants capable of mutation, but in the case of the other consonants confusion set in earlier. In later Mid.W. after **ny** the non-relative form has been generalised in the case of words beginning with **c**, **t**, **p**, the relative form, with certain exceptions, in the case of words beginning with other mutable consonants (cf. § 18 i). After **ry** the relative form was generalised. For further details see Eriu III. pp. 20 sq.

h in Sentence Construction.

22. After certain words **h** appears before a following word beginning with a vowel.

(a) After the infixed and the possessive pronoun **m**, e.g. **am h-**ymlityassant *who followed me*, **om h-**anvod *against my will.*

(b) After the infixed pronoun **e**, e.g. **ae h-**arganvu *who perceived him.*

(c) After **y** *her*, e.g. **y h-**enw *her name.*

NOTE.—In Irish also **h** appears after **a** *her*, e.g. a h-ainm *her name.* The Irish and Welsh **h** here comes from the original final **s** of the possessive.

(d) After **an** *our*, e.g. **an h-**arueu *our arms.*

(e) Aften **eu**, **y** *their*, e.g. **eu h-**arueu *their arms.*

(f) After **ar** before **ugeint** *twenty*, e.g. un **ar h-**ugeint *twenty one.*

THE ARTICLE.

23. In O.W. the article is **ir** throughout, e.g. **ir pimphet eterin** *the fifth bird*, **dir finnaun** *to the fountain.* In Mid.W. **yr** remains before vowels and **h**, e.g. **yr amser** *the time*, **yr alanas** (from **galanas**) *the bloodfine*, **yr henwr** *the old man*; before other consonants except **y** it becomes **y**, e.g. **y bwyt** *the food*, **y wreic** (from **gwreic**) *the woman*; before **y** the usage varies, e.g. **yr iarll** or **y iarll** *the earl.* But if the article be fused together with a preceding conjunction or preposition, or if the **y** be elided after a preceding vowel, then **'r** remains, e.g. y nef **ar dayar** *heaven and earth*, yn gyuagos **yr gaer** *near to the city*, gwirŷon **yw'r uorwŷn** ohonof i *the maiden is innocent as regards me.*

SYNTAX OF THE ARTICLE.

24. (a) In addition to its use before common nouns the article appears regularly before the names of certain countries, such as **yr Affrica** *Africa*, **yr Asia** *Asia*, **yr Alban** *Scotland*, **yr Almaen** *Germany*, **yr Eidal** *Italy*, **yr Yspaen** *Spain*, e.g. vn yw **yr Asia**, deu yw **yr Affrica**, tri yw **Europa** *Asia is one, Africa is two, Europe is three* FB. 216. Occasionally the article appears before names of persons, e.g. **yr Beli mawr** (=**y Beli uawr** WB. 191) *to Beli the Great* RB. 93, 2; mwyhaf oe vrodyr y karei Lud **y Lleuelys** *Llud loved Llevelys more than any of his other brothers* ib.

(b) The article is not used before a noun followed by a dependent genitive, e.g. gwyr **ynys y kedyrn** *the men of the island of the strong*, unless it be accompanied by a demonstrative pronoun, e.g. **or meint gwyrtheu hwnnw** *from that amount of miracles*, or unless the genitive be the equivalent of an adjective, e.g. **y werin eur** *the golden chessmen*, **y moch coet** *the wild pigs* (lit. *the pigs of the wood*), **y peir dateni** *the cauldron of rebirth, the regenerative cauldron.*

THE NOUN.

Numbers and Cases.

25. In Welsh the old Celtic declension is completely broken down. Of the three genders the neuter has been lost. The dual, which, as in Irish, is always preceded by the numeral for *two*, in some classes of nouns would phonetically have fallen together with the singular; in Welsh this has been generalised so that the dual (apart from forms like **deu ychen** *two oxen*) coincides in form with the singular; a trace of the dual inflection remains in the lenation of a following adjective, e.g. **deu vul gadarn** (from **cadarn**) *two strong mules*, **deu vilgi vronwynnion vrychion** *two whitebreasted brindled greyhounds*. In the regular inflexion there remains only one case for each number; in the singular this corresponds sometimes to the old nominative, e.g. **car** *friend* = Ir. carae, sometimes to the form of the oblique cases, e.g. **breuant** *windpipe* = Ir. brāge, g. brāgat; a few traces of lost cases still survive in phrases, e.g. **meudwy** *hermit* (lit. *servant of God*), where **dwy** is the genitive of **duw**; **erbynn** *against* (= Ir. ar chiunn), where **pynn** (from ***pendī**, from ***pendū**) is the dative of **penn** *head*; **peunyd** *every day*, **peunoeth** *every night*, where **peun-**, which in O.W. would be ***poun-**, comes from ***popn-**, the old accusative singular of **pob** *every*.

Syntax of the Cases.

26. As in Irish, the nominative may stand absolutely at the beginning of the sentence to introduce the subject of discourse, e.g. **y wreic honn** ym penn pythewnos a mis y byd beichogi **idi**, lit. *this woman, at the end of a fortnight and a month there will be conception to her*. In prose the genitive follows the noun on which it depends, e.g. **enw y mab** *the name of the son*; in poetry it may precede, e.g. **byt lywaydur** = **llywaydur byt** *the ruler of the world*; sometimes, as in Irish, it is used after an adjective meaning *with respect to a thing*, e.g. nỳ bỳdỳ **anuodlawn y phrỳt** *thou wilt not be displeased with her form*. The accusative can be recognised only from the construction; in poetry the accusative of a place-name is common after verbs of motion, e.g. dywed **y down Arwystli** *say that we will come to Arwystli* MA. 192ᵇ.

Formation of the Plural.

27. A. The plural is based on Old Celtic plural formations.

(a) Plural with ī infection (§ 7b), e.g. **march** *horse*: **meirch, manach** *monk*: **meneich, maen** *stone*: **mein, oen** *lamb*: **wyn, asgell** *wing*: **esgyll, corn** *horn*: **cyrn, escob** *bishop*: **escyb, gwr** *man*: **gwyr.**

Note 1.—This represents the old plural formation of **-o-** stems, e.g. **meirch** from ***marcī** from ***marcoi**. In part, however, it might represent the plural of **-i-** stems, cf. Ir. sūili *eyes*: sūil *eye*. In **dagr** *tear* the plur. **deigr** (= Ir. dēr) comes from ***dacru**, the plur. of a neut. **-u-** stem.

Note 2.—Many substantives which regularly form their plural otherwise, particularly such as form their plural in **-ion**, follow this inflexion after numerals above *two*, e.g. **tri gweis** *three boys*, **seith meib** *seven sons* (GC.² 283).

(b) Plural in **-eu, -ieu** (O.W. **-ou, -iou**), e.g. **gen** *jaw*: **geneu, penn** *head*: **penneu, cledyf** *sword*: **cledyveu, pebyll** *tent*: **pebyllyeu, glin** *knee*: **glinyeu.**

Note 3.—**-ou, -eu** started from **-oues**, the nom. pl. of **-u-** stems, cf Gaulish **Lugoves**.

(c) Plural in **-on -ion**, e.g. **medyc** *physician*: **medygon, cenaw** *whelp*: **cenawon, lleidr** *robber*: **lladron, mab** *son*: **meibyon, dyn** *man*: **dynyon, gelyn** *enemy*: **gelynyon.** This is the common ending of adjectives.

Note 4.—**morwyn** *maiden* becomes in the plural **morynyon.**

Note 5.—**-on** is based on **-ŏnes**, the nom. pl. of masc. and fem. **-n-** stems, cf. Gaulish **Lingŏnes**. The borrowed **lleidr** *robber*: **lladron** represents an older ***latrī** (from ***latrū latrō**); ***latrŏnes**; similarly **dreic** *dragon*: **dragon, Seis** *Saxon*: **Saeson.**

(d) Other old consonantal plurals, e.g. **car** *relative*: **carant** (from ***carants**: ***carantes** = Ir. carae: carait), **ci** *dog*: **cwn** (from ***kuū**: ***kunes**), **ych** *ox*: **ychen, brawt** *brother*: **broder, troet** *foot*: **traet, ty** *house*: **tei** (an old neut.-**s**-stem, cf. Ir. tech:

tige). Under the influence of §27a **carant** became **cereint**, **broder** became **brodyr**; in the same way may be explained **nei** *nephew*: **neieint**, **gof** *smith*: **goveint**. Some neut. **-n**-stems make their plur. in **-ein**, e.g. **enw** (O.W. **anu**) *name*: **enwein**, **cam** *step*: **cemmein**; here ***-en** might have been expected as in Ir. bēim *blow*: bēmmen; the change of ***-en** to **-ein** may be explained as above.

28. **B.** The plural is formed by various suffixes, many of which appear in the formation of abstract nouns.

(a) **-awr**, **-iawr**, e.g. **ysgwyt** *shield:* **ysgwydawr**, **gwaew** *spear:* **gwaywawr** (also **gwaewar**, **gwewyr**), **cat** *battle:* **cadyawr.**

Note.—This formation is mostly poetical.

(b) **-awt** (=**-awd**), e.g. **pysc** *fish:* **pyscawt**, **gorwyd** *steed:* **gorwydawt.**

(c) **-et** (=**-ed**), e.g. **merch** *daughter:* **merchet**, **pryf** *worm:* **pryvet.**

(d) **-ed** (=**-eđ**), e.g. **bys** *finger:* **byssed**, **dant** *tooth:* **danned**, **gwreic** *woman:* **gwraged.**

(e) **-eit**, **-ieit** (=**-eid**, **-ieid**), e.g. **mil** *animal:* **mileit**, **barwn** *baron:* **barwneit**, **barwnyeit.**

(f) **-i**, e.g. **llestyr** *vessel:* **llestri**, **cawr** *giant:* **cewri**, **saer** *artificer:* **seiri.**

(g) **-ot** (=**-od**), e.g. **hyd** *stag:* **hyddot**, **llwdn** *beast:* **llydnot.**

(h) **-oed** (=**-oeđ**), e.g. **mor** *sea:* **moroed**, **ieith** *language:* **ieithoed.**

(i) **-yd** (=**-yđ**), e.g. **avon** *stream:* **avonyd**, **gwlat** *country:* **gwledyd**, **chwaer** *sister:* **chwioryd.**

29. **C.** Some nouns are collective, with a singular formation in **-ynn** masc., **-enn** fem., e.g. **adar** *birds:* **ederyn** *a bird*, **calaf** *reeds:* **celevyn** *a reed*, **coll** *hazles:* **collenn** *a hazle*, **tywys** *ears of corn:* **tywysen** *a corn ear.*

THE ADJECTIVE.

Gender.

30. There is a special form of the feminine only in the singular, and only in adjectives containing **y**, **w**, which in the feminine became **e**, **o** (§ 7a), e.g. **gwynn** *white:* **gwen**, **melyn** *yellow:* **melen**, **bychan** *small:* **bechan**, **brith** *variegated:* **breith**, **llwmm** *bare:* **llomm**, **crwnn** *round:* **cronn.**

In the singular the adjective is lenated after a feminine noun, e.g. **gwreic dec** *a beautiful woman* (§ 16bα); in the plural there is no lenation.

Note.—In the Celtic adjective there were **-o-** stems, **-i-** stems and **-u-** stems, which are distinguishable in O.Ir., e.g. **tromm** *heavy* from ***trummo-s**, **cruind** *round* from ***crundi-s**, and **il** *much* from ***pelu-s**. Only the **-o-** stems had a fem. in **-ā**, so that only in these is the Welsh change of vowel etymologically justified. But in Welsh, after the loss of final syllables, the three classes were indistinguishable in the masculine, and the vowel-change in the feminine spread analogically from the **-o-** stems to the others, e.g. **crwnn** from ***crundis** formed a feminine **cronn** after the analogy of **tromm**: **trwmm**, etc.

Formation of the Plural.

31. The plural is formed:—

(a) By change of vowel e.g. **bychan** *small:* **bychein**, **ieuanc** *young:* **ieueinc.**

(b) By adding **-on**, e.g. **du** *black:* **duon**, **gwineu** *bay:* **gwineuon.**

(c) By adding **-yon** (its usual formation), e.g. **gwynn** *white:* **gwynnyon**, **melyn** *yellow:* **melynyon.**

Concord.

Gender.

32. In the singular the attributive adjective agrees in gender with its noun, e.g. **gwas melyn** *an auburn lad*, **morwyn benngrech velen** *a curly-headed auburn maiden.* With the predicative adjective agreement is also found, e.g. **un** ohonunt oed **amdrom** *one of them was very heavy* RB. 54, 17, oed **amdroch**

llynges *the fleet was shattered* MA. 150^{b}, bit **wenn gwylyan** *the seagull is white* FB. 247, **llem awel** *keen is the wind* FB. 255, ys **lledan** y **lenn** *its mantle is broad* FB. 146, **bolch** y **lauyn** *his blade is notched* MA. 172^{a}; but here the masculine form is also found, e.g. **llym awel** *keen is the wind* BB. 45^{a} 1, pan yw **gwyrd llinos** *when the linnet is green* FB. 133, oedd **bwlch llafn** yn llaw gynnefin *the blade was notched in a practised hand* MA. 217^{b}, **guaedlyd** y **lein** *bloody is his spear* MA. 184^{a}.

Number.

33. With the attributive adjective there is concord, the dual or a singular noun preceded by a numeral having the construction of the plural, e.g. **danned hiryon melynyon** *long yellow teeth*, **deu vackwy wineuon ieueinc** *two auburn young lads*, **pedeir meillionen gwynnyon** *four white blades of clover*. But there are many exceptions; with certain adjectives the singular is regularly used; such are adjectives in **-awc, -awl, -eid, -ic,** comparatives and superlatives, some other simple adjectives such as **mawr** *great*, **tec** *beautiful*, and compound adjectives; e.g. **gwyr arvawc** *armed men* (but exceptionally **o vrenhined coronogyon** *of crowned kings* WB. p. 90^{a}), **llygeit hebogeid** *hawklike eyes*, **niveroed mawr** *great numbers*, **dyrnodeu calet-chwerw** *hard bitter buffets*. With the predicative adjective there are found on the one hand, e.g. **bychein** ynt **wynteu** *they are small* RB. 60, **wynteu** a veynt **veirw** *they would be dead* Hg. I. 138, oedd **beilch gweilch** *heroes were proud* MA. 217^{b}, **kertoryon** neud ynt **geith** *now poets are captive* MA. 157^{b}, on the other hand, e.g. **cadarn** oed y holl **aelodau** *all his limbs were strong* CM. 26, **balch** iawn yw dy **eiryeu** *thy words are right haughty* CM. 34, **marw** ynn *they are dead* MA. 164^{a}, **rud** ynt **wy** *they are red* FB. 284, **doeth** y **veirt** *his bards are learned* MA. 262^{a}, ys **da** y **gampeu** *his feats are good* MA. 237^{b}. The whole subject needs a thorough investigation.

Order.

34. (a) In Welsh, as in the other Celtic languages, the adjective normally follows the noun, e.g. **dyn doeth** *a wise man*, **gwreic dec** *a fair woman*, **arveu trymyon** *heavy arms*. In Celtic, when the adjective preceded, it formed a compound with the noun, e.g. Gaulish **Cambo-dunum,** which would in W. be ***cam-ðin,** O.Brit. **Cuno-maglos** lit. *lofty chief* = W. **Cynvael,** W. **hen-ðyn** *old man* (= Ir. sen-duine) from ***seno-dunyos,** W. **prif-ðinas** *chief city* (cf. Ir. prīm-dūn *chief fort*), W. **hen-wrach** *old hag*, which would in Irish be *sen-fracc. From this principle W. has departed in that, under conditions the details of which have still to be investigated, the inflected adjective may precede the noun, e.g. **bolch-lauyn** *a cutting blade* MA. 263^{a}, **gwen llaw** *white hand* MA. 153^{b}, **amryvaelon gerdeu** *various songs*.

(b) In various phrases the noun with the preposition **o, a** follows the adjective, e.g. ys **drwc a gedymdeith** a uuost **di** *thou hast been a sorry comrade*, **bychan a dial** oed an lloski **ni** *our burning were a small revenge*, ys **dyhed o beth** *it is a strange thing*.

The Predicative Noun and Adjective with YN.

35. A predicative noun or adjective is often preceded by **yn** (lenating), e.g. gwedy llosci canhwyll ohonei **yn oleuat** idaw *after she had lighted a candle as a light to him*, mi ath roessum **yn wreic** y Uanawydan *I have given thee as a wife to Manawyddan*, ych gelwir chwi **yn Grystonogyon** *ye are called Christians*, neum goruc **yn oludawc** *he has made me wealthy*, a phob ty a welei **yn llawn** o win *and every house he saw full of wine*, yd oed ef **yn holliach** *he was quite well*, un a welei **yn amdrom** *one* (fem.) *he saw very heavy*, paham y maent hwy **yn varw** o newyn *why are they dead with hunger?* mi a wnaf seith cant ohonawch **yn ueirw** *I will make seven hundred of you dead men*, an gunel **in rit** *may He make us free*, eu gwneuthur **yn rydyon** *to make them free*, eu clusteu **yn gochyon** *their ears red*, eu harwydyon **yn purwynn** *their standards pure white*. The concord after the feminine and the plural still needs investigation.

Adjective Phrases.

36. In place of a simple adjective may be found an adjectival phrase, e.g. gwr **dirvawr y veint** *a man of huge size* (lit. *a man huge his size*), eurwalch balch **bolch y daryan** *a proud golden hero with hacked shield* (lit. *hacked his shield*), gwreic **digonach y thecket** *a woman of more perfect beauty,* dyrnodeu **diuessured eu meint** *mighty buffets,* **drwc a dyn y thygetuen** *a woman of unhappy fate* (lit. *ill of a woman her fate*), ys **drwc a wyr eu dihenyd** vydem ni *we should be men of an ill ending,* pan yttoedynt **yn digrifaf gantunt** eu gware *when they were most interested in their play,* y wreic **vwyhaf a garei** *the woman whom he most loved.*

Comparison.

37. **(a)** The regular suffix of the comparative is **-ach,** of the superlative **-haf** (for the phonetic changes see § **11g**), e.g.—

Positive.	Comparative.	Superlative.
tec (=**teg**) *beautiful*	**tegach**	**teckaf**
tlawt (=**tlawd**) *poor*	**tlodach**	**tlottaf**
cyffelyb *like*	**cyffelybach**	**cyffelyppaf**

Note.—In Mod. W. the consonantism of the superlative has spread to the comparative, e.g. **teg, tecach, tecaf.**

(b) The following are irregular:—

agos } **cyfagos** } *near*	**nes** (Ir. nessa)	**nesaf** (Ir. nessam)
bychan *small*	**llei** (Ir. lugu)	**lleiaf** (Ir. lugem)
da *good*	**gwell**	**goreu**
drwc *evil*	**gwaeth**	**gwaethaf**
hawd *easy*	**haws**	**hawsaf**
hen *old* (Ir. sen)	**hyn** (Ir. siniu)	**hynaf**
hir *long* (Ir. sīr)	**hwy** (Ir. sīa)	**hwyaf** (Ir. sīam)
ieuanc *young* (Ir. ōac)	**ieu** (Ir. ōa)	**ieuaf** (Ir. ōam)
isel *low* (Ir. īssel)	**is**	**isaf**
llydan *broad* (Ir. lethan)	**llet** (Ir. letha)	**llettaf**
mawr *great* (Ir. mōr)	**mwy** (Ir. mōa)	**mwyhaf** (Ir. mōam)
tren *strong* (Ir. trēn)	**trech** (Ir. tressa)	**trechaf** (Ir. tressam)
uchel *high* (Ir. ūassal)	**uch**	**uchaf**

Construction of the Comparative and Superlative.

38. **(a)** The comparative is followed by **no,** before vowels **noc** *than,* e.g. ny bu **hwy no hynny** *it was not longer than that,* **mwy** a vyrywys ef y dyd hwnnw **noc undyd** *more he threw on that day than on any single day.*

(b) The superlative is followed by the preposition **o,** e.g. y uorwyn **deckaf onadunt** *the fairest maiden of them.*

(c) In sentences like *the more the better* the superlative is used, e.g. **pei vwyhaf** y lladei ef y march **pellaf** vydei hitheu y wrthaw ef *the more he struck the horse the farther she was from him* RB. 9, 13; **goreu** yw gennyf i **bo kyntaf** *the sooner it is the better it pleases me* RB. 12, 4.

The Equative.

39. The possession by two objects of a quality in the same degree is expressed by a derivative in **-het** (=**-hed**) from the adjective preceded by **cyn-, cy-,** e.g. **kynduhet (du) ar muchud** *as black as jet,* **kyngadarnet (cadarn) ac Adaf** *as strong as Adam,* **kyndecket (tec) a hi** *as fair as she,* **kynvelynet (melyn) ar eur** *as yellow as gold,* **kynehofnet (ehovyn) a hynny** *as fearless as that,* **kynwynnet (gwynn) ar eiry** *as white as snow,* **kygadarnet a brenhin** *as strong as a king,* **kyduet ar muchud** *as black as jet,* **kywynnet ar alaw** *as white as the lily.*

Note 1.—The Celtic preposition **com-** would in Welsh become **cym-, cyn-, cyf-, cy-** according to the following sound, and would be liable to various changes in connexion with a following consonant, e.g. **com+vowel > cyf, com+l- > cyfl-, com+w- > cy-, com+p- > cymh-, com+b- > cymm-, com+g- > cyng-, com+d- > cynn-,** etc.; there is an interesting example of the regular development in **cythrymhet (trwmm)** RB. 112, for **ntr** becomes **thr.** But the form **cyn-** with analogical lenation became the general form before all sounds, though for a time it had to contend with **cy-,** the form which would arise in Celtic before initial **w.** For a discussion of the formation see Zimmer KZ. xxxiv. 161 sq., Loth Rev. Celt. xviii. 392 sq., Stern CZ. iii. 135 sq.

Note 2.—Equality may also be expressed by **mor—a,** e.g. **pryf mor dielw a hynny** *a creature so vile as that,* am gyflafan **mor anwedus ac a wnaethoed** *on account of a crime so base as he had committed.*

The Adverb.

40. The adverb is regularly formed from the adjective by prefixing **yn** (lenating), e.g. **yn vawr (mawr)** *greatly,* **yn llawen** *gladly,*

yn drwmm (**trwmm**) *heavily*, **yn well** *better*, **yn vwyhaf** *most*. But, if it precedes the verb, the adjective is used without **yn**, e.g. **mynych** y dywedut *thou didst often say*; in the following sentence both forms occur: kanys **mwy** y karyssei ef hi nor rei ereill eiryoet. a hitheu yn y dremygu ynteu **yn vwy** nor rei ereill *for he had always loved her more than the others, while she contemned him more than the others* RB. II. 65.

THE NUMERALS.

41. Cardinals and Ordinals.

One, etc.	*First, etc.*
i. un	cyntaf
ii. deu, f. dwy	eil
iii. tri, f. teir	trydyd, f. tryded
iv. petwar, pedwar, f. pedeir	petwyryd, petweryd, f. petwared; also pedwyryd, etc.
v. pump	pymhet
vi. chwech, chwe	chwechet
vii. seith	seithvet
viii. wyth	wythvet
ix. naw	nawvet
x. dec, deng	degvet
xi. un ar dec	unvet ar dec
xii. deudec	deudegvet
xiii. tri, f. teir, ar dec	trydyd, f. tryded, ar dec
xiv. petwar, pedwar, f. pedeir, ar dec	petwyryd, etc., f. petwared, etc., ar dec
xv. pymthec, pymtheng	pymthegvet
xvi. un ar bymthec	unvet ar bymthec
xvii. deu, f. dwy, ar bymthec	eil ar bymthec
xviii. tri, f. teir, ar bymthec	trydyd, f. tryded, ar bymthec
xix. petwar, pedwar, f. pedeir, ar bymthec, un eisieu o ugein	petwyryd, etc., f. petwared, etc., ar bymthec
xx. ugeint, ugein	ugeinvet

Note.—The form deng is found only before nouns beginning with certain sounds, cf. Rev. Celt. XXVIII. 201.

xxi.-xcix. In O.W. **trimuceint** is found for *thirty*. The usual reckoning, however, is by multiples of *twenty*:—**deugein(t)** (O.W. **douceint**) *forty*, **deugeintvet** *fortieth*, **trugein(t)** *sixty*, **trugeinvet** *sixtieth*, **petwarugein(t)** *eighty*, **petwarugeinvet** *eightieth*. The intermediate numbers are expressed by addition, e.g. **un ar hugein(t)** *twenty-one*, **dec erydyr ar hugeint** *thirty ploughs*, **deudec brenhin ar hugeint** *thirty-two kings*, **deng mlyned a deugeint** *fifty years*, **deudeng mlyned a thrugeint** *seventy-two years*, **petwyryd ar ugeint** *twenty-fourth*. This reckoning may extend beyond a hundred, e.g. **pedeir gwlat a seith ugeint** *one hundred and forty-four countries*.

c.-cciↄↄ. **Cant** *hundred*, **canvet** *hundredth*. From this the other hundreds are formed by prefixing the cardinals:—**deucant** or **deugant**, **trichant**, **petwarcant**, **pumcant**, **chwechant**, **seithcant**, **wythcant**, **nawcant**. **Mil** *thousand*, **dwy vil** = *two thousand*, etc. **Un vlwydyn ar bymthec ar hugeint a deucant** = *236 years*; **chwech marchawc a thrugeint a phumcant** = *566 horsemen*; **deudeng mlyned a thrugeint ac wythcant** = *872 years*; **deg mlyned a phetwar ugein a chant a mil** = *1190 years*. **cciↄↄ. myrd** *myriad*.

Syntax of the Cardinals and Ordinals.

42. (a) After **deu, dwy,** the singular (i.e. historically the dual § 25) form is regularly used; but there are exceptions, e.g. **deu ychen** *two oxen* (where, however, the form might be dual), **dwy chwiored** *two sisters* LA. 39, RB. II. 39, **dwy burloywduon hirueinon aeleu** *two brilliant black long slender eyebrows* (by **dwy ael**) LA. 93, **deu rudellyon lygeit** *two ruddy eyes* ib., **deu perffeithloyw gochyon rudyeu** *two perfect brilliant red cheeks* ib., **deu nyeint** *two nephews* RB. II. 69, **dwy wraged** *two wives* ib. 239 **dwy vlyned** *two years* ib. 240. As to the higher numbers the general rule is that, if there be a plural with internal vowel change (§ 27a), the plural is used, e.g. **tri meib** *three sons*, but otherwise the noun is in the singular, e.g. **teir ynys** *three islands* (pl. **ynysed**), **petwar marchawc** *four horsemen* (pl. **marchogyon**). There are, however,

exceptions, e.g. **teir chwioryd** *three sisters*, **pump gwraged** *five women*, **trychant tei** *three hundred houses*; so very often with **dyd** *day* pl. **dieu**, and **blwydyn** *year* pl. **blyned**. Compare the exceptions after **deu** above. Another mode of expression is, e.g. **tri chawr o gewri** *three giants*, lit. *three giants of giants*.

(b) The ordinals precede the noun, e.g. **y betwared vlwydyn** *the fourth year*. But **cyntaf** usually follows, e.g. **y marchawc kyntaf** *the first horseman*; sometimes, however, it precedes, e.g. **kỳntaw geir** a dỳwedaw *the first word that I will say* BB. 41^{b} 1. The ordinal may denote not the order in a series, but, as also in Irish, one of a certain number, e.g. odena y kerdus er tir a naw kedemdeith ganthav, **ar nauvet** a las ar hynt *thence he came to land with nine comrades, and one of the nine was slain at once* Arch. Cambr. 1866 p. 114, **ỳ trỳdỳ gwr** a dienghis o Gamlan *one of the three men who escaped from Camlan* WB. 463; **e tredyt anhebchor** *one of the three indispensables* BCh. 8.

Distributives.

43. These are expressed by prefixing **pob** *every* to the cardinal, e.g. eu bwrw **pob dec pob deudec** *throwing them by tens and twelves* Hg. II. 160, gwin ỳ bid hi ỳ vedwen in diffrin Guỳ a sirth ỳ chegev **pop vn pop dvỳ** *happy the birch in the valley of the Wye, whose branches fall by twos and threes* BB. 24^{a}.

Multiplicatives.

44. These are expressed by **gweith** f. preceded by the cardinal, e.g. **unweith** *once*, **dwy weith** *twice*, **teir gweith** *thrice*, **pedeir gweith** *four times* etc.

THE PRONOUN.

Personal Pronouns.

The Independent Pronoun.

45. Independent pronouns fall into three sub-divisions, **(a)** the simple pronoun, **(b)** the emphatic pronoun, **(c)** the conjunctive or contrasting pronoun (*I also, I on my part, I on the other hand,*

etc.) When attached to a verb as its subject the pronouns are liable to weakening, e.g. **vi, i** for **mi, di** for **ti, ditheu** for **titheu.** Classes **(a)** and **(c)** are used also to reinforce an infixed pronoun (§49a), a pronominal preposition (§52), or a possessive pronoun (§56), or possessive adjective (§ 58); then, too, they are liable to the same reduction (§ 17a).

(a) Simple.	(b) Emphatic.	(c) Conjunctive.
I, me **mi, vi, vy, i, y.**	**mivi, myvi, myvy, vivi, vyvi.**	**minheu, minneu, inneu.**
We, us **ni, ny.**	**nini, nyny.**	**ninheu, ninneu.**
Thy, thee **ti, di, dy, de.**	**tidi, tydi, dydi, dydy.**	**titheu, ditheu.**
Ye, you **chwi.**	**chwichwi.**	**chwitheu.**
He, him **ef** (O.W. **em**).	**efo.**	**ynteu.**
She, her **hi, hy.**	**hihi.**	**hitheu.**
They, them **(h)wy, (h)wynt.**	**(h)wyntwy.**	**(h)wynteu.**

Note 1.—In **chwi** the **w** may be omitted after **w** in the verb, e.g. **ewchi** *go ye*, **dowchi** *come ye*.

Note 2.—**wy** is the earlier form, which became **wynt** under the influence of the ending **-nt** of the 3 plur. of the verb, just as O.Ir. ē *they* became in Mid.Ir. īat. In Mid.W. **wynt** is particularly used when it precedes the verb, e.g. **wynt a welynt** *they saw*, but **y gwelynt wy**; this, however, is a later distinction, in earlier Welsh **wy** is used everywhere, e.g. **wy gwnaethant** *they did*, **wy ladassant** *they slew*.

46. The independent pronouns are used as the subject of a sentence, as the object of a sentence, where, however, they enter into concurrence with the infixed pronoun (§ 48), (which, to judge from Irish, was the original method of expressing the object), after prepositions which did not enter into a unity with the pronoun (§ 52), and after some conjunctions. The following examples will illustrate the usage :—

(a) **mi** a wnaf *I will do*; pan y gweleis **i ef** *when I saw him*; nyt yspeilwys ynteu **vi** *he did not strip me*; a rithwys Duw cyn no **mi** *whom God created before me*; **ti** a wely *thou wilt see*; a wely **di** *dost thou see?* kymer dy hun **ef** *take it thyself*; nyt oes seith cantref

well noc **wy** *they are not seven cantreds better than they*; gyt ac **wynt** *along with them.*

(b) kynt y kyuarchawd ef well y mi no **miui** idaw ef *he greeted me before I greeted him*; pa le y keisswn i **dydi?** pan geissych di **vyvi,** keis parth ar India "*where should I seek thee?*" "*When thou seekest me, seek towards India*"; gofyn a oruc idi ae **hihi** oed yn peri hynny *he asked her if it was she who was causing that.*

(c) Mivi a rodaf vyg cret, heb hi, na charaf i dydi ac nath vynnaf yn dragywydawl. **minneu** a rodaf vyg cret, heb y Peredur, na dywedaf **ynneu** eir byth wrth Gristiawn yny adewych **ditheu** arnat vyg caru i yn vwyhaf gwr "*I pledge my faith,*" *said she,* "*that I do not love thee and that I will not desire thee to all eternity.*" "*I, on my part,*" *said Peredur,* "*pledge my faith that I will never speak a word to Christian soul, until thou shalt confess that thou lovest me more than any man;*" ac yn keissaw bwrw y gelein ar y march yn y kyfrwy, y dygwydei **ynteu** yr llawr ac y dodei **hitheu** diaspat *and as she sought to cast the corpse on the horse into the saddle, it kept falling to the ground, and she raised a cry.*

NOTE.—**ynteu** etc., is also used before a proper name, e.g. y wybot dy atteb di am hynny y deuthum i. Rof i a Duw, heb ynteu Bwyll, llyna vy atteb i ytti, "*I have come to learn thy answer about that.*" "*Between God and me,*" *said Pwyll,* "*here is thy answer*" RB. 11. cf. RB. 25, 65, 77, 79, 81, etc., **wynteu y Galissyeit** CM. 1; before a common noun, e.g. sef a wnaeth **ynteu yr eryr** *this the eagle did* RB. 78, a **hitheu wreic Teirnon** a gytsynnywys *and the wife of Teirnon agreed* RB. 22; after a proper name, e.g. **Troilus ynteu** lleiaf mab y Briaf oed herwyd oet *Troilus was Priam's youngest son* RB. II. 7, so RB. 14, II. 8, 9, 14, 22, **Castor a Pholux wynteu** a aethant *Castor and Pollux went* RB. II. 9, **y Telepus ynteu** RB. II. 17; after a common noun, e.g. a **gwyr Troea wynteu** a ymhoelassant *and the men of Troy on their part returned* RB. II. 20; and in instances like: y gelwit hi Lundein **neu ynteu** Lwndrys *it was called Llundein or Lwndrys* RB. 93, **neu ynteu** ony edy hynny udunt *or again if you do not allow them that* RB. II. 44. Cf. Mod.W. **ynte.**

47. Issem, ysef, sef. In O.W. the pron. **em** is used with **iss, is** *is* in phrases like **issem** i anu *that is his name.* From **issem** comes in Mid.W. **ysef, sef,** e.g. **ysef** a rodaf inneu *this is what I will give*; **sef,** gwreic a vynnawd Kicua *that was the wife he desired, Kigfa*; **ssef** a gafas yn y chyghor fo y ynyalwch *this is what she resolved upon, to flee into a wilderness*; **sef** y kyrchassant y dref uchaf o Arllechwed *they made for the highest town of Arllechwedd*;

arglwyd, heb ynteu, minneu a allaf dy rydhau ditheu. **sef** ual y gallaf "*Lord,*" *said he,* "*I can free thee. This is how I can do it;*" **ssef** y gwelynt varchawc *then they saw a horseman.* In a similar way **ef** is used by itself, e.g. pan dyuu y thymp idi, **ef** a dyuu y hiawnbwyll idi *when her time of labour came, then her right senses came to her.*

48. Infixed Pronoun.

	Sing.	Plur.
1.	*me* **-m-**	*us* **-n-**
2.	*thee* **-th-**	*you* **-ch-**
3.	*him, her, it* **-s-, -e-**	*them* **-s-, -e-**

REMARKS.

49. (a) The infixed pronoun may be strengthened by putting the corresponding simple or conjunctive pronoun after the verb, e.g. a thydi a**m** gwely **i** *and thou shalt see me,* euo a**th** gud **ditheu** *he will hide thee.*

(b) In the third person **-e-** is used after the relative particle **a,** e.g. mi **ae** gwelaf *I see him,* and after the conjunction **tra,** e.g. **trae** llathei pob tri *while he slew them by threes* BB. 48[a], mi **ae** kynhalyaf hyt **trae** gallwyf *I shall maintain it as long as I can* Hg. I, 4; elsewhere **-s-** is used. After the verbal particle **yd-,** however, if the verb begins with a consonant, there is no visible pronoun of the third person, e.g. **y** gwelaf *I see her* RB. 278, 6; a phan **i** gweles meibion Collwyn *and when the sons of Collwyn saw him* MA. 729[a]; if the verb begins with a vowel **yh** appears, e.g. **ẏ h**anuones *sent it* WB. 104, **y h**edewẏnt *they left them* WB. 186; similarly after **yny** *until,* e.g. ny dygaf i un daryan **yny h**anuono Duw im *I shall not bear any shield till God send it to me* Hg. I. 15. After **pan** *when* the infixed pronoun is regularly preceded by **y-,** e.g. **pan yth** wnaethpwyt ti *when thou wast made*; in the third person it is **pan y(h),** e.g. **pann y h**archo udunt *when he asks it of them* LA. 56.

(c) In early poetry in connexion with **ny** and **ry** there are in the third person special forms, **nwy, nyw, rwy, ryw,** used when the verb is relative, e.g. ir nep **nuy** hatnappo *to one who does not*

recognise it BB. 4[b], nyt kerdaur **nyu** moluy *he is not a poet who does not praise him* MA. 174[b], y ren **rwy** digonsei *the King who had made them* FB. 138. In non-relative usage the infixed pron. after **ny** is **-s-**, the form of the non-relative infixed pronoun after **ry** I have not been able to establish.

NOTE.—The infixed pronoun may, as in Irish, anticipate a following object, e.g. **ai** torro hac **ay** dimanuo **ỳ bryeint hunn** *who shall violate and diminish this privilege*, **ay** enrydedocao **ỳ breint hunn** *who shall respect this privilege* Lib. Land. 121, **y** harchwn ni **dy drugared** *we ask thy mercy* RB. II. 44.

50. The infixed pronoun follows :—

(**a**) The relative particle **a**, e.g. mynn y gwr **a-n** gwnaeth *by Him who made us*, Duw **a-ch** nodho *may God protect you*, mi **a-e** harhoaf *I will await him, her, it, or them*, **a-e** lladawd ef *who killed him*, y niver **a-e** gwelei wynt *the multitude that saw them.*

(**b**) The verbal particle **yd**, e.g. **y-m** gelwir *I am called*, **ywch** kymhellasant *they have compelled you.*

(**c**) The infixing particle **a-** (§ 94), e.g. **a-m** bo *may there be to me*, **a-th** volaf *I will praise thee*, **a-s** rodwy trindawt trugared *may the Trinity give him mercy*, gwedi **a-n** gwelwch *after ye see us*, pei **a-s** archut *if thou hadst asked it*, kyt **a-m** llatho *though he should slay me.* So when this **a-** has been replaced by **y-**, e.g. **y-s** rodho Duw ymi *may God give it me* LA. 121.

(**d**) The verbal particle **ry-** in the earlier language, e.g. **ry-m** goruc *he has made me.* But in later Mid.W. the pronoun is infixed before **ry-** by means of **yd-**, e.g. **y-th** ry gereis *I have loved thee.*

(**e**) The particle **neu-**, e.g. **neu-m** goruc *he has made me* MA. 141[a], **neu-s** cud *hides it* FB. 272.

(**f**) Sometimes in early poetry **dy-** of compound verbs, e.g. **dy-m** ryd *gives me.*

(**g**) The negatives, e.g. **ny-m** oes *there is not to me*, **ny-s** gweleis *I have not seen him, her, it*, or *them*, **cany-ch** gwelas neb *since no one has seen you* ; **na-m** gommed *do not refuse me*, mi a debygaf **na-ch** rydhawyt *I think that you have not been freed.*

NOTE.—In later Mid.W. **nys** seems sometimes to be used merely in a relative sense, e.g. yn y wlat **ny-s** ry welsei *in the country that he had not seen* RB. 114, 13 = ỳn ỳ wlad nỳ rỳ welei WB. 471. This usage may have developed from cases where the nominative stands at the head of the sentence introducing it (§ 26), e.g. amheu yr hynn a dywedwch chwi **ny-s** gwnaf i lit. *doubting of what you say I will not do it.* A meaningless **-s-**, however, is found when the verb is non-relative, e.g. **nys** gohiryassant *they did not delay* RB. II. 48.

(**h**) Certain conjunctions :—**tra-e** llathei *while he slew them* BB. 48[a], **yny-m** byrywyt i *till I was thrown* RB. 169, **o-s** lledy *if thou slayest him* Hg. I. 368. Some conjunctions are followed by the infixing **a**, see above (**c**).

51. The infixed pronoun commonly expresses the accusative relation. With the verb 'to be,' however, it regularly expresses its dative relation, e.g., **am bo** *may there be to me, may I have*, vn tat **ae bu** *one father they had* ; it may further express the dative relation with other verbs, e.g. y perffeith garyat hwnnw **an** rodho yr yspryt glan *may the Holy Spirit give us that perfect love* LA. 103, **an** gunel iechid *may He work salvation for us* BB. 20[b].

PRONOUN WITH PREPOSITION.

52. In Welsh as in Irish the pronoun is regularly fused together with the preposition. After **ac** *with* and **gwedy** *after*, however, the pronoun follows separately, e.g. **a mi** *with thee*, **gwedy ni** *after us* ; the explanation seems to be that the usage of these words as prepositions is secondary. With respect to the formation, the following points may be noted.

(**a**) In the first and second persons (except after **y** *to*) there is an intervening vowel **a, o** (**aw**), or **y** (and in 2 pl. also **w**), so that in these persons there are the following series :—

	Sing.	Plur.
1.	**-af, -of, -yf**	**-am, -om, -ym**
2.	**-at, -ot, -yt**	**-awch, -och, -wch, -ych**

(**b**) In the 3 sg. masc. the ending is **-aw**, in the 3 sg. fem. **-i** (infecting a preceding vowel) and **-ei**, e.g. **oheni** and **ohonei** ; sometimes the infected vowel spreads analogically, e.g. 3 pl. **ohenynt.** In the 3 pl. the oldest ending was **-u**, whence developed later **-ud** (i.e. **-ud̓**), **-unt, -ynt.** In the third persons **-aw, -u**, etc., are commonly preceded by a dental.

(c) In the 1 sg. and 3 pl. there are also endings **-wyf, -wynt.**

(d) After the prepositions **ar, o, am** are inserted respectively **-n-, -hon-, -dan-** (i.e. the prep. **tan** *under*). In the 3 pl. there are certain other insertions.

53. The forms assumed by the pronouns in connection with the several prepositions will be seen from the following table :—

		Sing.	Plur.
am *about*	1.	amdanaf, ymdanaf	amdanam
	2.	ymdanat	amdanawch
	3m.	amdanaw, ymdanaw	amdanunt, ymdanunt, amdanadunt, ymdanadud, ymdanadunt, amdanwynt
	3f.	ymdeni, amdanei, ymdanei	
ar *on*	1.	arnaf	arnam
	2.	arnat	arnawch, arnoch
	3m.	arnaw	arnunt, arnynt, arnadud, arnadunt
	3f.	arnei, arni, erni	
att *to*	1.	attaf	attam
	2.	attat	attawch
	3m.	attaw	attunt, attadunt
	3f.	attei, etti	
can, gan *with*	1.	genhyf, gennyf	genhym, gennym
	2.	genhyt, gennyt	genhwch, gennwch
	3m.	gantaw, ganthaw, gentaw	gantunt, ganthu, ganthud, ganthunt
	3f.	genti, genthi	
heb *without*	1.	hebof	
	2.	hebot	
	3m.	hebdaw	hebdunt
	3f.	hebdi	
is *below*	3f.	adisti	

		Sing.	Plur.
nem *except of*	2.		nemoch
o *from*	1.	ohonaf, ohanaf, ohonof	ohonam, ohonom
	2.	ohonat, ohonawt, ohonot	ohonawch
	3m.	ohonaw	ohonu, ohonunt, ohenynt, onadu, onadunt
	3f.	oheni, ohoni, ohonei, ohanei, ohenei	
rac *before*	1.	ragof	ragom, rogom
	2.	ragot	ragawch, ragoch
	3m.	racdaw, rogdaw	racdu, racdunt, rocdunt
	3f.	recdi, racdi, rocdi, rygthi	
ro *between*	1.	yrof	yrom
	2.	yrot	yryoch, yroch
	3m.	yrydaw	yrydunt
	3f.	yrydi	
rwng *between*	1.		yrynghom
	2.	ryngot	ryngoch
	3m.	ryngtaw, ryngthaw, ygrythaw	ryngdunt, ryngtunt, ryngthunt, ryndynt
	3f.	ryngthi	

NOTE.—In O.W. there is also a 3 pl. igridu Lib. Land. XLIII. l. 9, and in poetry from cyfrwng a 3 pl. cyfryngthud.

tan, dan *under*	1.	adanaf	ydanam
	3m.	ydanaw, adantaw	adanunt, ydanunt, adanadunt
	3f.	deni, adanei	
tros *over*	1.	trossof	trossom
	2.	trossot	trossawch, trossoch
	3m.	trostaw	trostud, trosdunt
	3f.	trosti	

Usually with initial *d*, **drossof** etc.

		Sing.	Plur
trwy *through*	1.	**trwydof**	
	2.	**trwydot**	
	3m.	**trwydaw**	**trwydunt**
	3f.	**trwydi**	
uch *above*	1.		**uchom**
	3m.	**odyuchtaw**	
	3f.	**oduchti**	
wrth *towards*	1.	**wrthyf**	**wrthym**
	2.	**wrthyt**	**wrthych, wrthywch**
	3m.	**wrthaw**	**wrthu, wrthunt**
	3f.	**wrthi**	
y (O.W. **di**) *to*	1.	**im**	**in**
	2.	**itt**	**ywch**
	3m.	**idaw**	**udu, udud, udunt**
	3f.	**idi**	
yn *in*	1.	**ynof**	
	2.	**ynot**	**ynoch**
	3m.	**yndaw**	**yndunt**
	3f.	**yndi**	
yr *for*	1.	**yrof**	**erom**
	2.	**yrot**	**yroch**
	3m.	**yrdaw**	**yrdunt, erdunt**

54. The above forms may be strengthened by the addition of the simple or the conjunctive pronouns, e.g. **arnaf i, gennym ni, itti, ohonawch chwi, idaw ef, erni hi, udunt hwy; yrof inneu, attat titheu, gennwch chwitheu, ohonei hitheu, attunt wynteu.**

55. Possessive Pronouns.

1. *mine*	**meu**	*ours*	**einom, einym**
2. *thine*	**teu**	*yours*	**einwch, einywch**
3. *his*	**eidaw**	*theirs*	**eidud, eidunt**
hers	**eidi**		

56. They are used (**a**) alone, (**b**) preceded by the article, (**c**) preceded by a possessive adjective, (**d**) after a noun, which may be preceded by a possessive adjective. They may be strengthened by a following personal pronoun. The following examples will illustrate the usage:—

(**a**) y sawl a uo **meu** *all that are mine*; ny bo **teu** dy benn *may not thy head be thine*, milwriaeth kymeint ac a oed **eidunt** *all the valour that was theirs*, y rei a oed **eidaw ef** *those that were his*, nyt yttoed y llew **yn deu** ytti *the lion was not thine* Hg. I. 63, nyt oes petrus genyf gaffel holl Freinc **yn einym** *I have no doubt that we should get all France as ours* RB. II. 116.

(**b**) neb un mor wedus cledyf ar y ystlys **ar meu i** *none whose sword on his side is so becoming as mine*; y mae **y meu i** y lle hwnn *this place is mine*; ath gedymdeithas yssyd adolwyn gennyf y gaffel. keffy, myn vyg cret, a dyro ditheu **y teu,** "*and I would pray to have thy friendship.*" "*Thou shalt have it, by my faith, and give me thine;*" deu parth vy oet a deu parth **y teu ditheu** *two-thirds of my life and two-thirds of thine*; dwc uendith Duw **ar einym** gennyt *take with thee God's blessing and ours*; ef a daw y dwyn yr einwch *he will come to carry off your property*; py darpar yw yr **einywchi** yna *what preparation is that of yours there?* nyt oed olwc degach **nor eidi** *there was no aspect fairer than hers.*

(**c**) pa vedwl yw **dy teu ti** *what purpose is thine?* mivi a dodaf vyg korff yn erbyn **y eidaw** *I will set my body against his.*

(**d**) ar dy drugeinuet **or rei teu ditheu** *with sixty of your men* CM. 8; **o rei eidaw ef** *of his* LA.; **or petheu einym nynhev** *of our things* LA. 164; **dy ymadrawd teu di** *thy speech* Hg. II. 1.

57. Possessive Adjectives.

	a	b		a	b
1. *my*	**vy, vyn** (before explosives)	**'m**	*our*	**an, yn**	**'n**
2. *thy*	**dy**	**'th**	*your*	**ach, ych, awch**	**'ch**
3. *his*	**y**	**'e, 'y**	*their*	**eu, y**	**'e, 'y**
her	**y**	**'e, 'y**			

Remarks.

58. (a) The **b** forms occur in fusion with a preceding preposition or conjunction. Such forms in the 2 pl. seem to be comparatively rare, e.g. **ych** plith *in your midst* by **yn ych** plith LA., etc. **ach** rydit *and your freedom* RB. II. 189; more usually **yn awch** medyant chwi *in your power* RB. II. 50.

(b) With the prep. **y** in the third persons there is a variety of forms: **y, yw, eu, oe, oc eu.**

(c) The possessives may be strengthened by the addition of a simple or conjunctive pronoun after the noun.

59. Examples: (a) **vy arveu** *my arms*, **vy nyuot (dyvot)** *my coming*, **an meirch ninneu** *our horses*, **dy benn** *thy head*, **awch cledyveu** *your swords*, **y wreic ef** *his wife*, **y phenn** *her head*, **eu hieith** *their tongue.*

(b) **ym tat** *to my father*, **am arveu** *and my arms*, **yn porthi ni** *supporting us* (lit. *our supporting*), **ath teulu** *with thy household*, **ach rydit** *and your freedom*, ydys **ych gwahawd** *you are invited*, **ywch didanu** *to comfort you*, **och pechodeu** *from your sins*, **ae waet ynteu** *and his blood*, **y** (=**yw** WB.) **letty** *to his lodging* RB. 284, **ae ueirch** yw y rei hynn *and these are his horses* RB. 28, **oe chladu** *to bury her*, **y cheissaw** *to seek her*, **oe hanvod** *against her will*, **oe harveu** *from their arms*, **y kestyll** *to their fortresses*, **oe gwlatoed** *to their countries*, **oc eu porthi** *to support them.*

NOTE.—Sometimes, as in Irish, the possessive seems to anticipate a following genitive, e.g. ỳn ỳ geissaw ỳnteu **Peredur** *seeking for Peredur* WB. 140, **y** hwyneb **hitheu Riannon** *the face of Riannon* RB. 18, 27, am ỳ mỳnwgỳl (without **y** RB. 117, 19) **y uorwỳn** *about the neck of the maiden* WB. 475.

SELF.

60. This is expressed by sg. **hun, hunan,** pl. **hun, hunein** added to personal pronouns or to possessive pronouns or adjectives, e.g. **my hun, myvy vy hun** *I myself*, **ohonaf vy hun** *by me myself*, **ym vy hunan** *to me myself*, **vym** penn **vy hun** *my own head*, **arnom ny hunein** *upon us ourselves*; **dy hun** *thou thyself*, **yth** person **dy hunan** *in thy own person*; **or tat ehunan** *from the father himself*, ny digawn **ehunan** *he is not able himself*, ef **ae** byryawd **ehun** *he cast himself*, **idaw ehun** *to himself*; **hi ehunan** *she herself*, **ohonei ehunan** *by her herself*; **wynt ehun** *they themselves*, **yr etholedigyon ehunein** *the elect themselves*, **yrydunt ehun** WB. 211 = **yryngtunt ehunein** RB. 272 *between themselves*, **yn eu** cnawt **ehun** *in their own flesh*, yn **eu** rith **ehunein** *into their own form.*

DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS.

61. **hwnn** *this*, **hwnnw** *that.*

Sing.	Plur.	Sing.	Plur.
M. **hwnn**	**hynn**	**hwnnw**	**hynny**
F. **honn**		**honno**	
N. **hynn**		**hynny**	

62. These pronouns are used :—

(a) absolutely, e.g. beth yw **hwnn?** heb y Peredur wrth y kyfrwy. kyfrwy yw, heb yr Owein "*What is this?*" *said Peredur, with reference to the saddle.* "*It is a saddle,*" *said Owein*; Peredur oed y enw, a ieuhaf oed **hwnnw** *Peredur was his name and he was youngest*; yna y kymerth ynteu yr hutlath. camma di dros **honn,** heb ef *then he took the magic wand.* "*Step over this,*" *said he*; yn ol **honno** y kerdwys ef *he went after her*; a **hyn** a dywedaf ytti *and this I will tell thee*; mi a wnaf na chaffo ef viui vyth. pa ffuryf vyd **hynny**? heb y Pwyll "*I will effect that he shall never get me.*" "*How will that be?*" *said Pwyll*; yn ol **hynny** *after that.*

(b) After a substantive preceded by the article, e.g. ger llaw auon a elwit yn **yr amser hwnnw** Sabrina, yn **yr amser hwnn** y gelwir hitheu Hafren, *beside a river that was called at that time Sabrina, at this time it is called Severn*; yn **yr ynys honn** *in this island*; **y nos honno** *that night*; **yr anniveileit hynn** *these animals*; **yr enweu hynny** *those names.* Similarly in the plural with **rei,** e.g. pa ryw aniveileit yw **y rei hynny?** *what kind of animals are those?*

(c) Preceded by the article, e.g. dywet, heb y Gereint, py fford oreu inni gerdet or dwy hyn. Goreu itt gerdet hon, heb ef, ot ey **yr hon** issot ny deuy trachefyn vyth "*Tell*," *said Gereint*, "*which of these two roads is best to travel*." "*It is best for thee to travel by this one*," *said he*; "*if thou travel by the lower one, thou wilt never come back*." It may be followed by a genitive, e.g. Heuel ar doythyon . . . . a ossodassant eu hemendyth **ar honn Kemry holl** *Howell and the wise men set their curse and that of all the Welsh* BCh. 1. In particular **yr hwnn**, etc., is frequently followed by a relative clause, e.g. bei dywetut ti y peth a ovynnaf ytti, minneu a dywedwn **yr hynn** a ovynny ditheu *if thou wouldst tell the thing that I desire of thee, I would tell that which thou desirest*; ef a vennyc fford itti ual y keffych **yr hynn** a geissy *he will show thee a road so that thou mayest obtain what thou seekest*; pwy bynnac . . . a dremyckont dysgu **yr hynn** a dylyynt y wneuthur *whoever despise learning what they ought to do*; Bryttaen oreu or ynyssed **yr hon** a elwit gynt y wen ynys *Britain, the best of the islands, which was formerly called the White Isle*; yr heul **yn yr hwnn** y mae tri pheth *the sun in which are three things*. In this usage the plural is **y rei**, e.g. gwraged oll eithyr **y rei** oed yn gwassanaethu *all the women except such as were serving*; gweirglodyeu . . . **yn y rei** y maent ffynhoneu gloew eglur **or rei** y kerdant ffrydeu *meadows in which are clear bright springs, from which issue streams*. This device for expressing an inflected relative is particularly common in the translation literature.

Article + Substantive + Adverb.

63. Some adverbs have a demonstrative force along with a substantive preceded by the article, e.g. deu ychen, y lleill yssyd **or parth hwnt** yr mynyd ar llall **or parth yma** *two oxen, one of them is on yonder side of the mountain, the other on this side*; beth yw **y rei racko?** *what are those yonder?* att **y vorwyn draw** *to the maiden yonder.*

Indefinite Pronouns and Adjectives.

64. neb (= Ir. nech) *some one* is used :—

(a) Substantivally, e.g. a weleist di **neb** *hast thou seen any one?* nyt adwaeney **neb** efo *no one recognised him.*

(b) With the article before a relative clause, e.g. ediuar uyd **yr neb** ae wnaeth *whoever has done it will repent it*; ny chigleu i dim **or neb** a ouynnwch chwi *I have heard nothing of him of whom you ask* RB. 129.

(c) Adjectivally, e.g. gwell yw dedyf Cristonogaeth no **neb dedyf** or byt *the law of Christendom is better than any law in the world.*

65. pawb (= Ir. cāch) *every one* is used substantively, e.g. sef a orugant **pawb** or teulu *that is what each one of the household did*; Peredur a rodes **y bawp** gystal ae gilyd *Peredur gave to every one as much as to the other.*

66. pob (the unaccented form of **pawb**, = Ir. cach, cech) is used adjectivally, e.g. **pob peth** *every thing.* **Pob** is also used with **un** *one*, e.g. **pob un** onadunt *every one of them*; the plural is **pob rei**, e.g. a **phob rei** ohonunt o bop parth a gladassant y rei meirw *and both sides buried the dead* RB. II. 30.

67. oll *all*, e.g. y deulu **oll** *all his household*; gwraged **oll** *all the women*; cewri ynt **oll** *they are all giants.* Before a noun is found **holl**, e.g. **yr holl gwn** *all the dogs.* In composition with numerals there appear **ell, ill, yll** e.g. **ell deu, ill deu, yll deu** *both*; **ell pedwar, yll pedwar** *all four.*

Note.—A compound **hollre** is found, e.g. **ỳ rolre seint** *all the saints* BB. 36ᵃ, **yn holre oludoed** *in all manner of wealth* LA. 165, **hollre genedyl** anifeileit *every kind of animals* LA. 166.

68. arall *another*, pl. **ereill**, is used :—

(a) Substantivally, e.g. kymer ef a dyro y **arall** *take it and give it to another*; da **arall** *the goods of another*; penneu rei a dygynt, llygeit **ereill**, a chlusteu **ereill**, a breicheu **ereill** *they took away the heads of some, the eyes of others, and the ears of others, and the arms of others.*

(b) Adjectivally, e.g. **marchawc arall** *another horseman*; **y**

gymeint arall *as much again*; arveu gwell **nor rei ereill** *arms better than the others.*

69. neill *one of two*, e.g. **y neill** or llewot *one of the two lions*; y gwydyat vot yndaw **y neill** ae gwr ae gwreic *he knew that there was in it either a man or a woman* Hg. I. 54; ar **y neill law** y gwr oed Peredur yn eisted *Peredur was seated on one hand of the man*; pob un **ar neilltu** *each one separately.*

70. y llall *the other*, pl. **y lleill**, e.g. y kymerth Peredur hanner y bwyt idaw ehun ac adaw **y llall** yr vorwyn *Peredur took half of the food to himself and left the other to the maiden*; ar vn y bydei borth ef idaw a gollei y gware, **ar llall** a dodei awr *and the one whom he was helping lost the game, and the other raised a shout*; paham na chadarnnhawyt **y lleill** velle *why were not the others thus strengthened?* LA. 8; cwymp **y lleill** *the fall of the others* LA. 8; y daw **y llall** *his other son-in-law*, an brodyr **y lleill** *our other brethren* LA.

71. y neill, y lleill, —y llall *the one—the other*, e.g. **y neill** ohonunt yn was gwineu **ar llall** yn was melyn *one of them an auburn lad, the other a yellow lad*; yn y orffei **y lleill** ar **y llall** *till the one overcame the other.* With a substantive **arall** is used in place of **llall**, e.g. **or neill tu—or tu arall** *on the one side—on the other side.*

72. y gilyd is used for *the other* in expressions like:—dyrnodeu calet a rodei bawp onadunt **y gilyd** *each of them gave hard buffets to the other*; yn un or teir person **noe gilyd** *in one of the three persons than in another*; or mor **pwy gilyd** *from sea to sea*; corph ni glivit pa leueir **ỏ gilit** *body, who hearest not what thy fellow says* BB. 10^{b}.

NOTE.—**y gilyd** (=Ir. a chēle) means literally *his fellow*, but, as in Irish, the phrase has become petrified in this form, and is used without respect to gender, number, or person.

SUBSTANTIVES IN A PRONOMINAL FUNCTION.

73. dim *thing*, e.g. kymer gret y mackwy na dywetto **dim** or a welas yman *pledge the youth that he will not tell aught of what he has seen here*; heb allel gwneuthur **dim lles** *without being able to do any good.*

74. peth m. *thing*, e.g. kymmer dy varch nu a **pheth oth arueu** *take thou thy horse then and some of thy arms*; onyt ef a wyr **peth or hynn** *unless he knows something of this.*

75. rei, e.g. **rei onadunt** *some of them*, **rei drut rei mut** *some bold, some dumb* FB. 164, cf. § **62 (c)**.

76. ryw m. *kind*, e.g. **pa ryw chwedleu** yssyd gennyt *what kind of news hast thou?* na allei **neb ryw dyn** marwawl datkanu *so that no mortal man could proclaim*; ymlad **ar ryw dyn hwnnw** *to fight such a man as that* RB. II. 182; gwelet **y ryw gatwent honno** *to see such a fight as that* ib. 58; drwy **y ryw edewidyon** twyllodrus **hynny** *through such false promises as those* ib. 104. Similarly **cyvryw**, e.g. **yr kyfryw wr hwnnw** *to a man of such a kind* ib. 65.

NOTE.—Observe that in expressions like **y ryw dyn hwnnw** the pronoun is attracted in gender and number to the noun preceding. Cf. the similar attraction with **sawl** below.

77. sawl f. *multitude* and **meint** *greatness*, e.g. **yr sawl** a dihagassei oe wyr yn vyw *to those of his men who had escaped alive*; yr honn (sc. **breich**) a ladawd **y sawl gewri** *which slew so many giants*; **by sawl nef** ysyd *how many heavens are there?* **y sawl nifer hwnnw** *such a number as that* RB. II. 139; **y ssawl vlwynyded hynny** *so many years as that* ib. 44; colli **y meint gwyr** a oed idaw *to lose all the men that he had* ib. 46; blyghau a oruc Goronilla **rac meint** oed o varchogyon gyt ae that *Goronilla became angry because there were so many soldiers with her father* ib. 66; ymerbynyeit **ar ueint allu hwnnw** *to encounter such a force as that* ib. 348; yn **y veint perigyl honno** *in so great danger as that* ib. 160; **y veint uudugolyaetheu hynny** *such great victories as that* ib. 199.

78. un *one*, e.g. eithyr bot yn prudach pryt Gwydyon noc **un y gwas** *except that the aspect of Gwydyon was graver than that of the lad.*

INTERROGATIVE PRONOUNS.

79. pwy *who, what*, used substantivally, e.g. **pwy** wyt *who art thou?* **y bwy** y rodit (*they discussed*) *to whom it should be given*

RB. 258; dywet **pwy** a uu yma *tell who was here*; govyn **pwy** yw eu tystyon *to ask who are their witnesses*; **pwy** yw dy enw di *what is thy name?* LA. 128; **pwẙ** well genhẙt *which dost thou prefer?* WB. 487; dayar **pwy** y llet neu pwy y thewhet *the earth, what is its breadth or what its thickness?* FB. 133; **pwy** kynt ae tywyll ae goleuat *what was first, darkness or light?* FB. 301. In the sense of *what thing?* is used **pa beth, py beth,** commonly abbreviated to **peth, beth,** e.g. **peth** yw y rei racko *what are those yonder?* a wdost ti **peth** wyt pan vych yn kyscwyt *knowest thou what thou art when thou art asleep?* FB. 145; a gofyn idaw **beth** a wnaei a phwy oed *and asked him what he was doing and who he was.*

NOTE.—The use of **pwy** before a noun is exceptional, **pwẙ ẙstŷr** WB. 454, 456 = **pa ystyr** RB. 101 = **py ystyr** 103.

80. pa, py *what?* adjectivally, e.g. **pa drwc** digoneis inheu ytti *what evil have I done to thee?* **py drwc** yw hynny *what evil is that?* This interrogative enters into various phrases, e.g. **pa le, py le** (also **ble**) *where?* **pa veint, py veint** *how great?* **pa ryw, py ryw** *of what kind?* **pa sawl** *how many?* **Pa** and **py** are also found with the addition of **un,** pl. **rei,** e.g. **pa un** wyt titheu *who art thou?* ef a ovynnawd udunt **pa rei** oedynt *he asked them who they were.*

NOTE 1.—**Pa** and **py** seem to be used without distinction of meaning. In the Mabinogion when the Red Book has **pa** the White Book has very frequently **py.**

NOTE 2.—In the earlier literature **pa** and **py** are found also without a noun, e.g. **pa** roteiste oth olud *what hast thou given of thy wealth?* BB. 10b; **pa** wnaf *what shall I do?* FB. 282; hyt na wydat or byt **pa** wnaei (= **py** wnaei WB. p. 212) *so that she did not know at all what she should do* RB. 273; **py** holy di y mi *what seekest thou of me?* RB. 128. cf. further FB. 127, 145, 216, MA. 189b. Cf. also **pa** daruu **y Garadawc** *what has been the fate of Caradawc?* RB. 41, so 59,287 (= **pẙ** WB. p. 221), **py** derw itti 176; **pathawr** (= **pa-th-dawr**) *what does it matter to thee?* WB. 430 = **pythawr** p. 215; Duw reen **py** bereist lyvwr *Lord God, why hast Thou made a coward?* FB. 251; **py** liuy di *why dost thou colour?* RB. 102.

NOTE 3.—**Pa** and **py** are followed by a preposition in **pahar** *for what?* e.g. **pahar** e roet *for what it was given* BCh. 30; **paham, pa rac, py rac** and **pyr** (= **py yr**) *why?* e.g. **pŷr** (= **pŷ rac** RB. 126) **ỳ kŷuerchŷ dŷ** *why dost thou call?* WB. 486.

NOTE 4.—**pa diw, py diw.** The following occurrences of this may be noted:—Quid (i. **pa diu,** lit. *for what*) tibi Pasiphae pretiosas sumere vestes? Ox. 41a. Cunctis genitoris gloria uestri laudetur celsi thronus est cui regia caeli, where *est cui regia caeli* is translated literally and unidiomatically by issit **padiu** itau gulat Iuv. 39b. Gwynn y uyt **py diw** y rodir kerennyd Duf a hoedyl hir *blessed is he to whom is given the friendship of God and long life* FB. 308. (If a man gives a thing, and a dispute arises between two men as to *to which of them* it has been given, the word of the donor shall decide) **pa dyu** y rodes *to whom he gave it* BCh. 31. **pa diw** y damweinei y uudugolyaeth *to which the victory should fall* RB. II. 57 (so with **y** *to,* **y by diw** y damweinhei y uudugolyaeth onadunt 162, cf. CM. 32). **pa diw bynnac** y mynnynt hwy y rodi hi *to whomsoever they desired to give it* RB. II. 24, cf. further 181, 185. Here the use of **yd,** not **a** (§ 84), indicates that **diw** is a prepositional phrase (= *to him, to it?*).

81. pwy bynnac, pa, py—bynnac, pa beth bynnac, peth bynnac. The addition of **pynhac** or **pynnac** gives the sense of *whosoever, whatsoever,* e.g. **pwy bynnac** ae kaffei *whoever should take it*; **pa** dyn pwyllauc **benac** a ladho enuyt *whatever sane man shall slay an idiot*; **pa** le **bynnac** y gwelwn vwyt *wherever I saw food*; **py** fford **bynnac** y ffoynt *whatever way they fled*; **peth bynnac** a dywettei Peredur *whatever Peredur said.*

RELATIVE PRONOUNS.

UNIVERSITE DE POITIERS

82. In Welsh there is no inflected relative. In clauses which according to the Welsh idiom are relative, relativity is expressed by the relative particle **a** when the clause is positive, by the negative **ny** (cf. § **21** note) when the clause is negative, e.g. pechodeu **a** gyffesser ac **ny** wneler yr eilweith *sins that are confessed and that are not committed a second time.* Before the details of relative usage are considered, there are several general points to be noted.

83. (**a**) The relative **a** is not used :—

(α) Before the relative form **yssyd, syd** *who is, which is,* e.g. nifer a uu ac a uyd uch nef is nef meint **yssyd** *the multitude that has been and that will be, above heaven, below heaven, all that there are* FB. 114.

(β) Before the verb **pieu** (§ **161**), e.g. Efrawc iarll bioed iarllaeth ỳn ỳ gogled *Evrawc the earl had an earldom in the north.*

(γ) Regularly in the earlier Welsh, and usually throughout the Mid.W. period before the verbal particle **ry,** e.g. mi **ryth gereis** *I have loved thee.*

(δ) Before the copula when preceded by the predicate (§ **159**), e.g. **llawen uu** *he was glad*; **pwy wyt** *who art thou?* (but **pwy a uu** yma *who was here?*)

(b) (α) In Mid.W. prose **a** is frequently absent before **oed** *was*, e.g. **Arthur oed** yg Kaerllion *Arthur was in Caerllion.* In the Mabinogion the White Book has often **a oed** when the Red Book has **oed,** cf. WB. 227, 229, 250, 453, with RB. 101, 165, 166, 183.

(β) In early poetry **a** is very often omitted, e.g. **Duu vet** (= **Duw a ved**) *God rules* BB. 15[a] by **Duw a wet** 13[a]. The details have still to be investigated.

84. In certain constructions the preverbal particle **yd** (= Mod.W. **yr**) seems to enter into concurrence with relative **a,** and in Mod.W. grammars **yr** is given along with **a** as a relative particle. This, however, comes from reading English syntax into Welsh; historically, the use of **yd, yr** points to a non-relative construction. In the Celtic languages the rules for the use of the relative are peculiar. In particular it should be noted that in Welsh an adverbial or prepositional phrase is not as such followed by the relative construction, e.g. **mwyhaf** oe vrodyr **y karei** Lud y Lleuelys *Llud loved Llevelys more than any of his other brothers*; pan uei **mwyhaf yd ymgerynt** *when they most loved one another*; bit **chwero ỏ talhaur** in ỏ diwet *bitterly will it be paid for in the end*; mi a brynaf dy gerennyd. **pa delw,** heb ynteu, **y pryny** di "*I will buy thy friendship.*" "*In what way,*" *said he,* "*wilt thou buy it?*" **lle y gwelych** eglwys *wherever thou seest a church*; **or lle yd oed** *from the place where he was*; **yn y rei y maent** ffynhoneu *in which there are fountains*; ar hynny **att y kwn y doeth** ef *thereafter he came to the hounds.* With the first instance may be contrasted expressions like **y wreic vwyhaf a garei** *the woman whom he most loved,* where without **mwyhaf** the clause would be relative, **y wreic a garei** *the woman whom he loved*; similarly **gwreica da it a wedei** *to wed would suit thee well* WB. 453.

85. In the Celtic sentence the verb normally comes first, e.g. **y kymerth** y marchawc y march *the horseman took the horse.* In Irish, when part of the sentence is to be emphasised it is brought forward by means of the copula, e.g. **is ē beres** *it is he who carries*; sometimes the copula is omitted. In Welsh a part of the sentence is emphasised in the same way; the copula form, however, is regularly omitted. Thus in the example given above, if the subject were to be emphasised, the sentence would run: **y marchawc** a gymerth y march; if the object, **y march** a gymerth y marchawc. In accordance with the preceding paragraph, if the subject or object be thus brought forward, the following clause will be relative in form, but not if an adverbial or prepositional phrase be brought forward, e.g. **mwy y karei** *he loved more*; **attunt yd aeth** *he went to them.*

NOTE.—In the development of Welsh **yd** tends to spread at the expense of **a.**

The Expression of Case in the Relative.

86. In the relation of subject or object of a following verb, in positive clauses **a** is used (except in so far as it must or may be omitted, § **83**), in negative clauses **ny**, e.g. **y gwr a doeth** *the man who came*; **y vorwyn a weleist** *the maiden whom thou hast seen*; **y wreic yssyd** yno *the woman who is there*; **meibon ny ellynt** ymlad *boys who could not fight.*

87. In connection with the use of **a, ny,** the following points call for special notice:—

(a) **or a** (Mod.W. **ar a**), neg. **or ny, ar ny,** lit. *of that which* (or *which not*), *of what* (or *what not*), e.g. pawb **or a** oed yno *everyone who was there* (lit. *of that which was there*); **or a** welsei o helgwn ny welsei cwn unlliw ac wynt *of all the hounds that he had seen he had never seen hounds of the same colour as they*; pob peth **or ny** damweinassant eiroet *everything that has never happened* LA. 33; nyt oes neb **or a**th welei **ar ny**th garei *no one who saw thee would not love thee*; pob peth **or a** uu ac yssyd ac a vyd *everything that was and is and will be* (where rel. **a** is regularly omitted before **yssyd**); llawer **or yssyd** da *many who are good.* In the above examples the relative **a** appears in positive clauses. But after **or** = *of that by which,* etc., in accordance with § **84, yd** is used, e.g. gorchymynneu

Duw a wneynt o bop fford **or y gellynt** *they did God's commandments in every way in which they could* LA. 119; ffo. . a oruc Pandrassus a gwyr Groec y gyt ac ef y bob mann **or y tebyckynt** caffel dianc *Pandrassus with the Greeks fled to every place from which they thought to find escape* RB. II. 44. In sentences like: paup **or y rodho** y brenhyn ofrum idaw *everyone to whom the king gives a present*, or ba hustyng bynnac . . . . **or y kyfarffo** y gwynt ag ef *every whisper that the wind meets* RB. 60, the use of **yd** is due to the form of the relative clause (§ 89).

NOTE.—As Zimmer has shewn, CZ. II. 86 sq. **or, ar** is made up of the preposition **o, a** + the article **yr.** Similarly **yr** = **y** *to* + **yr**: ef a dely medhecynyat rad **yr a uo** en e llys *he is obliged to give free medical attendance to such as are in the palace* BCh. 18.

(b) Without an antecedent **a,** neg. **ny,** is used in the sense of *what* as the subject or the object of a sentence, in a genitive relation, and after a preposition, e.g. **a gahat** o uedic da *what was got of good physicians*; mi a wnaf **yssyd** waeth it *I shall do what is worse for thee*; ỏs tir (= dir) nithiau **nỏ bo** pur *it is necessary to sift what is not pure* BB. 42^{b}; y kymerth yntev gwrogaeth **a oed** yno onadunt *he received the homage of such of them as were there* RB. 267; **yr a welsynt** o vwyt *on account of what they had seen of food*; **or a glywyssynt** o gerd *of what they had heard of song*; mi a vydaf **wrth a dywedeisti** *I shall follow thy advice*; hyt na cheffwch byth werth un geinawc **oc yssyd** yn y dref *so that you shall never get a pennyworth of what is in the town* Hg. II. 169. In a sentence like: sef a oruc Scuthyn yn llaỏen gỏneuthur **yr oedit yn y erchi** idaw *Scuthyn did gladly what was asked of him* LA. 111, the form of the relative sentence does not admit of **a** (§ 88).

88. The genitive relation *whose, of which*, is expressed with the help of the possessive adjective before the noun on which in English the *whose* would depend. In Welsh, if the noun following the possessive be not under the government ot a preposition the clause is relative, if it be under the government of a preposition the clause is non-relative, e.g. (a) Teithi Hen **a** oresgynnwys mor **y kyuoeth** *Teithi Hen whose kingdom the sea submerged* RB. 108; peth arall **ny** ellych byth **y gaffel** *another thing that thou wilt never be able to get;*

(b) y gur **y** buost neithwyr **yn y dy** *the man in whose house thou wert last night*; y gwr **y** buost **yn y geissaw** *the man whom thou hast been seeking.*

NOTE.—In: yr hynn a odologyssynt ac **a** yttoedynt **yn y damunaw** *that which they craved and were desiring* RB. II. 34, **a** is used where the above rule would require **yd.** In MA. 267^{a} occurs: gwr am **dotyw** gwall **oe golli** *a man from whose destruction loss has come to me.* Further exceptions seem to be very rare; I have noted: amperffeith yw caru y peth **y** galler **y gassau** *it is imperfect to love the thing that may be hated* LA. 86; wrth na bu yn dyn **y** bei arnaf i **y ofyn** *because there was no living man the fear of whom was on me* CM. 30.

89. Where in English the relative is preceded by a preposition (*to whom*, etc.) in Welsh the relation is expressed by a preposition + personal pronoun, and the clause is non-relative, e.g. hỳnỳ elỳch ỳr koet ỳ dodhwỳt **trwỳdaw** *till thou goest to the wood through which thou hast come* WB. 228; yno y byd eneideu ry darffo **udunt** penydyaw *there are souls that have finished penance* (lit. *to whom penance is past*) LA. 129.

NOTE 1.—In the inverted sentence (§ 85) Madawc uab Maredud a oed **idaw** Powys *Madawg son of Maredudd had Powys* RB. 144, the clause is expressed relatively. Similarly in another special type of sentence: Achelarwy **a uu** lawen **gantaw** *Achilles was pleased* RB. II. 31, cf. RB. II. 189·20, RB. I. 94·5. In the translation literature a number of exceptions occur:—y rei **a** uo ragor **arnunt** *those on whom there is pre-eminence* LA. 32, cf. 130·27, 131·2, 135·8, 149·17, all in sentences of the same type; y rei hynny **a** ry daroed (= earlier W. **rydaroed**) **udunt** gwrthlad Maxen *those who had succeeded in expelling Maxen* RB. II. 111; mein **a** ellit gwneuthur gweith **onadunt** *stones from which building could be made* RB. II. 167; gwr...**a** wedo **idaw** *a man to whom it is fitting* CM. 77.

NOTE 2.—The following is an exceptional construction:—gwelet y bed a vynnei **trw y kaffei** (= **trw ỳt gaffei** WB. 453) gwreicka *he wished to see the grave through which he might be able to marry* RB. 101; na chadarnhao dyn kelwyd trwy twng **trwy y colletto** y gymodawc *that a man shall not confirm a falsehood by an oath through which he may ruin his neighbour* LA. 143; **trwy y bei** *through which there should be* LA. 144.

SUBSTITUTES FOR THE RELATIVE.

90. Particularly in the translation literature there are various devices for getting an equivalent of the relative admitting of a casual construction. Such are **yr hwnn,** pl. **y rei** (§ 62c), **y neb** (§ 64b), **y sawl** (§ 77).

THE VERB.

PREVERBAL PARTICLES.

The Particle yd.

91. In Mid.W. prose this particle usually appears as **yd** (i.e. **yḋ**) before a vowel or **h**, as **y** before other consonants. But by the side of **yd** there is found from the fourteenth century **yr**, which in Mod.W. has completely superseded **yd**.

NOTE 1.—Occasionally **y** appears before **h**, e.g. **y hanoed** RB. II. 109, **y hanoed** LA.

NOTE 2.—In RB. **yt** with lenation appears before a consonant in **yt gweirwyt** (from **cyweirwyt**) 120. In the WB. version of the Kulhwch story **yt** (i.e. **yd**) is more frequent: **ỳt gaffei, ỳt gaffo** 453, **ỳt uo** 458, **ỳt wertheỳ** 470, **ỳt vỳd** 471, **ỳt uerwit** 478. In BB. **yt** (=**yḋ**) is regular before vowels: **it oet** 10[b], **it aethant** 11[a], **it imne** 15[b], **it elher** 17[a], **ỳt hoet** 22[b], 23[a], **it adcorssant** 23[b], **it vif** 25[b], **it arwet** 51[a], **it aw** 51[b]; it is written **id** twice in **id aeth** 49[a] marg. Before consonants there appears both **y** and **yd** (=**ỳt** of WB.); the latter lenates, though the change is not always expressed. Before **g, t, d, ff, s, m, n, ỳ** only appears: **ỳ godriccawr** 51[a]; **ỳ tirran** 1[b], **ỳ talhaur** 16[a], **ỳ tereu** 32[a], **ỳ tragho** 35[b]; **ỳ deuthan** 1[b], **ỳ daeth, ỳ doethan** 2[a], **ỳ doethan** 2[b], **ỳ darparan** 3[a], **ỳ dỳlanuan, ỳ daruuan** 3[b], **ỳ diadaud** 10[b], **ỳ dinwassute** 11[b], **ỳ deuth, ỳ del** 21[a], **ỳ doeth** 22[b], **ỳ deuthant** 23[b], **ỳ deuant** 25[a], **ỳ dav** 32[a], **ỳ dinwassune** 44[a], **ỳ duc** 44[b], **ỳ diwedi** 51[b], **ỳ dodir** 53[b]; **ỳ ffoes** 22[b]; **ỳ sirthei** 50[a]; **ỳ mae** 13[b], 32[a], 34[a], 34[b], 35[a], 41[b]; **ỳ nottvỳ** 38[b]. Before **p** and **r yd** only: **id pridaw** 21[a], **yd portheise** 27[a]; **ỳd rotir** 23[b]. Before other consonants the usage varies,—**c**: **ỳ kuỳnan** (infixed pron.?) 2[a], **ỳ kisceisse** 25[a], **ỳ keweis** (infixed pron.?) 43[b], but **id gan** 8[a], **id keiff** 43[a], **id cuitin** 48[a], **ỳd gan** 54[a]. **gw**: **ỳ gvna** 34[b], **ỳ gweleise** 36[a], 36[b], **ỳ guỳstluỳ** 38[a], **ỳ guiscav** 41[b], but **id woriv** 9[a], **ỳd welese** 27[a], **ỳd vna** 32[a]. **b**: **ỳ bu** 33[b], **ỳ bit** 28[a], but **ỳd vei** 34[b], **ỳd vo, ỳd vit** 42[a], **ỳd uit** 44[b]. **ll**: **ỳ llas** 36[b], **ỳ lleinw** 51[a], but **id lathennawr** 26[a], **id lathei** 48[b]. In the O.W. glosses **it** only appears: **it dagatte** Mart. Cap. 4[b], **it darnesti** Iuv. p. 88. From all this it may be inferred that there was a period in Welsh when the particle was **yḋ** before vowels, **yd** with lenation before consonants. As to the origin of non-lenating **y**, it is probable that it started from verbs beginning with **d**. As **adyn** *wretch* comes from ***ad-ḋyn**, so, e.g. ***yd ḋuc** would give ***yd uc**. From association with the other forms of the verb this would naturally come to be regarded as **y duc**, and hence, probably with the help of **y** containing an infixed pronoun (§ 50[b]), **y** might spread as the general form before consonants. As to the later **yr**: **y** for **yd**: **y**, it is probably due to the influence of the forms of the article **yr**: **y**.

NOTE 3.—In **ac yr gyscwys** RB. 28, **ual yr lygryssit** RB. 54, **ual yr notayssynt** CM. 57, **yr**=**y ry**, cf. § 93 note 4.

Usage of yd.

92. In normal Mid.W. prose the particle **yd,** which has no appreciable meaning, is, with certain exceptions, used regularly before indicatives and subjunctives, e.g. **yd af** yn egyl gyt ac wynt *I will go as angel along with them*; **y deuei** y kythreul *the devil used to come*; ac yno **y gwelas** ef pedeir gwraged *and there he saw four women*; yn y lle **y gwelsei** Gynon *in the place where he had seen Cynon*; lle **y gwelych** eglwys *wherever thou seest a church*; **val y gwelas** y gwr Peredur yn dyuot *as the man saw Peredur coming*; megys **y mynnei** ehun *as he himself desired*; hyt **y buant** *as long as they were.*

93. But it is not used:—

(**a**) at the beginning of a clause before a subjunctive of wish or command, e.g. **diwỳccom-ne** a digonhom o gamuet *may we make atonement for the iniquity which we have done* BB. 15[b]; **hanpych** gwell *hail!* dos titheu ar Arthur . . . ac **erchỳch** hỳnnỳ idaw *go thou to Arthur and ask that of him* WB. 454; Agamemnon . . . a dwawt . . . **gossottynt** hwy y neb a vynnynt yn y le ef *Agamemnon said they should set whomsoever they pleased in his place* RB. II. 24.

NOTE 1.—Contrast **yng ngoleu addef nef yt nodder** *in the light of the heavenly home may he be protected* MA. 174[a].

(**b**) When the verb is repeated in answers, e.g. **a bery di? paraf** *wilt thou effect? I will.*

(**c**) In such instances as the following:—Bei dywedut ti y mi y peth a ovynnaf ytti, minneu a dywedwn y titheu yr hwnn a ovynny ditheu. **Dywedaf** yn llawen, heb yr Owein "*if thou wouldst tell me what I ask of thee, I would tell thee what thou askest.*" "*I will tell gladly,*" *says Owein*; ath gedymdeithas yssyd adolwyn gennyf y gaffel. **Keffy** myn vyg cret "*and I pray to obtain thy friendship.*" "*Thou shalt obtain it by my faith;*" ac yna y dywawt Peredur: **diolchaf** ynneu y **Duw na** thorreis vy llw *and then Peredur said*: "*I give thanks to God that I have not broken my oath*" (cf. the use of **na** § 237 **c**).

(d) When the predicate precedes the copula, e.g. **llawen vuant** *they were glad.*

NOTE 2.—But with verbs of naming **yd** with an infixed pronoun is used when the predicate precedes, e.g. **Peredur ym gelwir** *I am called Peredur.*

(e) After a negative, e.g. **ny welas** *he did not see;* **pony wdost** *dost thou not know?*

(f) In relative construction, e.g. **ef a doeth** *he came.*

(g) After the interrogative **a,** e.g. **a wely di** *dost thou see?*

(h) After the particle **neut,** e.g. **neud ynt** geith *now they are slaves* MA. 157^{b}.

(i) After **mad** *well,* e.g. **mad devthoste** *happily didst thou come,* BB. 44^{a}, unless there be an infixed pronoun, e.g. **mat ẏth anet** *happily wert thou born* FB. 101.

(k) After **moch** *soon* (=Ir. mos), e.g. **moch guelher** *soon will be seen* BB. 1^{b}.

(l) After certain conjunctions, e.g. **can buost** *since thou hast been;* **kwt gaffei** *where he should get* WB. 453; **cyn gwnel** *though he does;* **kyt dywetto** *though he should say;* **o gwely** *if thou seest;* **pan welsant** *when they saw;* **pei kaffwn** *if I should get;* **tra vych** *while thou art;* **yny digwyd** *till he falls.* But it is used with an infixed pronoun after **pan,** e.g. **yr pan yth weleis** *since I saw thee;* so after **tra** (but cf. § 49^{b}), e.g. **hyt tra yn dygyrcher** *so long as we are visited* RB. 105.

NOTE 3.—After **gwedy** *after* the usage is not very clear. Before a following vowel, we have on the one hand **gwedy ed eystedont** *after they sit* BCh. 53, **gwedy yd elont** *after they go* Hg. I. 11, **gwedy yd elom** *after we go* Hg. II. 146, on the other hand **gwedy aruerych** *after thou dost practise* LA. 90. Before a following consonant, in BCh. **gwedy y** (e.g. **gwedy e kafo** *after he gets* 34) is more common than **gwedy** (e.g. **gwedy roder** *after she is given* 130); in BB. is found **wide kẏwisscaran** (leg. **kẏwisscarun**) *after we separate* 12^{b}; **gwẏdi darffo** *after it is over* 4^{b}; in Mid.W. prose **gwedy** is much more common than **gwedy y,** but it is a question how far **gwedy** comes after fusion from **gwedy y.** It is to be noted that infixing **a-** (§ 94) is found after **gwedy** as well as after the conjunctions which are not followed by **yd;** this would seem to suggest that the use of **yd** after **gwedy** was not original, but there is need for further investigation based on fuller material.

NOTE 4.—In Mid.W. prose **yd** is sometimes found before **ry,** even when there is no infixed pronoun, e.g. **fford y rẏ [d]uuost** *the way by which thou hast come* WB. 138; **ẏm pob gwlat or ẏ rẏfuum** *in every country in which I have been* ib. 144; **y ry dugassei** *he had brought* RB. II. 139; **megys y ry wnathoed** *as he had done* ib. 161. Cf. the instances of **yr** § 91 n. 3.

94. In later Mid.W. the use of **yd** is more extensive than at an earlier period. In the archaic prose of the story of Kulhwch and Olwen it is often wanting in the White Book version where it is present in the Red Book, and in the earlier poetry it is rarer still; the conditions of the earlier usage have still to be investigated. It may be noted that in earlier Welsh, when **yd** is not syntactically permissible, **a-** is used to infix a pronoun, e.g. **a-m bo** *may there be to me* BB. 17^{b}; **ath uendiguiste** *he has blessed thee* 18^{a}; **as attebwys** *answered them* FB. 139; **as redwn** (leg. **rodwn**) *we will give it* WB. 475. In prose this usage survives after some conjunctions, e.g. **gwedy an gwelwch** *after ye see us* Hg. II. 1; **gwedy as cladawch hi** *after ye bury her* LA. 81; **pei as rodei** *if he gave it* RB. 136. This **a** tends to become **y** under the influence of the infixed pronoun after **yd** (**y-m,** etc.), e.g. **ẏs po** *may there be to him* BB. 53^{b}; **bei ẏscuẏpun** *if I had known it* BB. 41^{a}; **bei ẏs gattei** *if it had permitted it* WB. 424=**pei as gattei** RB. 274; **kyt ym lladho** *though he slay me* RB. 280=**kyt am llatho** Peniarth MS. 4. With fusion, e.g. **peis mynnynt** *if they desired it* LA. 69.

THE PARTICLE ry.

95. The particle **ry,** which corresponds etymologically to the Ir. verbal particle ro-, and resembles it in its uses, is in Welsh a disappearing particle; it is much less frequent in Mid.W. prose than in the early poetry.

NOTE.—**Ry** is sometimes reduced to **r,** e.g. **nẏr darffo** WB. 230=**ny darffo** RB. 168; **nar geueis** *that I did not get* Hg. II. 265; **ar ethynt** (v.l. **a ethynt**) *that have passed* RB. II. 205; **ar doethoed** (=**a dathoed** RB. 197) *who had come* WB. 62; **wedyr vligaw** (=**wedy y vlingaw** Hg. II. 112) *after his flaying* CM. 102. From **neu**+**ry** has come the common Mid.W. **neur,** cf. **neur dialawd** (=**neu rẏ dialawd** WB. 404) *he has avenged* RB. 259; **neur daroed** (=**neu rẏ daroed** WB. 402) *it was over* RB. 258. For **yr**= **y ry** see § 91 n. 3.

96. In Mid.W. prose **ry** is used:—

A. With the indicative.

(a) Optionally with the perfect (as distinguished from the preterite, § 108), e.g. uẏ llẏsuam **rẏ dẏgvẏs** (=**a dynghwys** RB. 102) im *my stepmother has sworn to me* WB. 454; pawb **rẏ gauas** (=**a gauas** RB. 113) ẏ gẏuarws *everyone has received his boon* WB. 470; drycheuwch ẏ fẏrch uẏ aeleu **rẏ syrthwẏs** (=**a syrthwys** RB. 119) ar aualeu vẏ llygeit *raise the forks of my eyelashes which have fallen on my eyeballs* WB. 478; llawer dyd **yth ry gereis** *I have loved thee many a day* RB. 118; **nẏs rẏ geueis** (=**nys keueis** RB. 126) *I have not got him* WB. 487; **ny ry giglef** i eirmoet dim y wrth y uorẁyn *I have never heard anything of the*

maiden RB. 113; a ffan **ry dyuu** amser mab a anet a elwit Bown *and when the time was come, there was born a son who was called Bown* Hg. II. 119.

(b) Optionally with the pluperfect, e.g. gwallocau a oruc ẏ rŷn **rẏ adawsei** (=yr hyn **a adawssei** RB. 101) *he neglected what he had promised* WB. 453; a thrist oed genthi, **kanẏ rẏ welsei** (= **kany welsei** RB. 116) eiroet ẏ uẏnet ae eneit ganthaw a delhei ẏ erchi ẏ neges honno *and she was sad, for she had never seen anyone who came on that quest depart with his life* WB. 474; a chael yn y uedwl **na ry welsei** eiryoet mab a that kyndebycket ar mab y Pwyll *and he thought that he had never seen son and father so like as the boy was to Pwyll*; a chynn ymgyweiryaw yn y gyfrwy neur **ry adoed** heibyaw *and before he had settled himself in his saddle, she had passed by.* In the sentence: dechreu amouyn a gwyrda y wlat beth uuassei y arglwydiaeth ef arnadunt hwy y vlwydyn honno y wrth **ry uuassei** kyn no hynny *he began to ask the nobles of his country how his rule over them had been that year compared with what it had been before* RB. 7, **ry uuassei** seems to express priority relatively to the preceding **buassei.**

B. With the subjunctive.

(a) With the present subjunctive **ry** appears sometimes when it has a perfect sense, e.g. ohonot ti ẏt gaffo ef kanẏs **rẏ gaffo** (=**yr nas kaffo** RB. 101) o arall *from thee he shall get (offspring) though he has not got it from another* WB. 453; **kyt ry wnelych** di sarhaedeu . . . kyn no hynn nys gwney bellach *though thou hast committed outrages before this, thou shalt not commit them further* RB. 99; yno y byd eneideu ry darffo vdunt penydyaw *there are the souls that have ended their penance* LA. 129. But also without **ry,** e.g. a chyn **gwnel** gameu it . . ny buost ti hawlwr tir a dayar eiryoet *and though he has wronged thee, thou hast never been a claimant of land and earth* RB. 44.

(b) With the past subjunctive, when it has the sense of a pluperfect, **ry** not infrequently appears, e.g. mẏnet a oruc serch ẏ uorwŷn ym pob aelawt itaw **kynnẏs rẏ welhei** (=**yr nas gwelsei** RB. 102) eiroet *love for the maiden entered every limb of him though he had never seen her* WB. 454; nẏd oed waeth kẏuarwẏd ẏn ẏ wlad **nẏ rẏ welei** (=**nys ry welsei** RB. 114) eiroet noc ẏn ẏ wlad ehun *he was not a worse guide in a country that he had never seen than in his own country* WB. 471; a chyn lawenet vu a chyt **ry delei** idaw iechyt *and he was as joyous as though health had come to him* RB. II. 183; pei mi **rẏ wascut** (=**a wascut** RB. 116) uellẏ nẏ oruẏdei ar arall uyth rodi serch im *if it had been me whom thou hadst so squeezed, no other one would ever have been able to show me love* WB. 474. But also without **ry,** e.g. pei **ys gwypwn** ny down yma *if I had known it, I would not have come hither* RB. 29, 20.

C. With the infinitive when it has a perfect or pluperfect sense, e.g. adnabot a oruc **ry gaffel** dyrnawt ohonaw *he perceived that he had got a buffet*; gwedy **ry golli** eu kyrn *after their horns had been lost* RB. 194.

97. In early Welsh poetry the use of **ry** is much more common than in prose; there it has also some syntactical uses which have been lost in prose (cf. Eriu II. 215 sq.)

(a) With the indicative preterite, when it has a perfect sense, **ry** is much more frequent than in the prose language. As in the case of Irish **ro,** the general definition of this usage is that the past is viewed from the standpoint of the present. There may be a reference either to the personal experience of the speaker, e.g. **mi rẏth welas** *I have seen thee* BB. 51[a], **rim artuad** *I have been blackened* BB. 12[a], or to an indefinite past, e.g. **ry gadwys** Duw dial ar plwyf Pharaonus *God has kept vengeance on Pharaoh's people* FB. 170.

With respect to this usage, however, the following points have to be noted:—

1. **ry** is not found:—

(α) After a negative, e.g. ni threghis ev hoes *their life has not passed away* BB. 11[a]; contrast **ry treghis** eu hoes FB. 128. There are rare exceptions in the later poetry.

(β) After **mad** *well,* e.g. **mad devthoste** ẏg corffolaeth *happily hast Thou come into the flesh* BB. 44[a].

(γ) After the interrogative **a,** e.g. **a gueleiste** gureic *hast thou seen a woman?* BB. 22[b]. But in prose **a ry fu** *has he been?* WB. 121.

2. **ry** is not preceded by relative **a.** In the later poetry there are very rare exceptions.

3. A pronoun is infixed after **ry**; it is not put before it with **yd** or **a,** e.g. **ry-n gwarawt** *has helped us* FB. 126, os Dofyd **ry-n digones** *if it is the Lord that has made us* FB. 113. In the later poetry there are rare exceptions.

(b) With the subjunctive of wish it is used optionally in positive (but never in negative) sentences, e.g. **ry phrinomne** di gerenhit *may we buy Thy friendship* BB. 44[b]; **rym gwares** dy voli *may Thy praise help me* FB. 109, by **ath uendicco** *may it bless thee* BB. 18[a]; but **nẏ buve** trist *may I not be sad* BB. 17[b].

(c) With the present indicative:—

1. **Ry** may express possibility, e.g. rẏ **seiw** gur ar vn conin *a man can stand on a single reed* BB. 45[a].

NOTE.—In prose there is an instance of **ry** with the present indicative in: ef a **ry eill** ych neckau *he may refuse you* RB. 60. With **gallu, ry** is also found in the potential, e.g. ef **ar allei** vot yn wir a dywedy di *what thou sayest may be true* Hg. I. 81, similarly 224, 267, 272; without **ry**: ef a **allei** llawer mab colli ẏ eneit *many youths might lose their life* WB. 100. From the perfect sense inherent in the verb, **ry** is found with the present and imperfect of **darvot** *to be finished*, e.g. os ẏ uwrw rẏ **derẏw** *if he has been thrown* WB. 125; **neur daroed** idaw diffeithaw traean Iwerdon *he had already laid waste the third part of Ireland* RB. 135.

2. In a subordinate clause of a general sentence it may have the sense of a perfect, e.g. ti a nodyd a **ry geryd** *Thou savest those whom Thou hast loved* FB. 180. The same sense is found in the subjunctive, when that mood is syntactically required, e.g. **ry brynw[y]** nef nyt ef synn *whosoever has purchased heaven will not be confounded* FB. 307; a **ry gotwy** glew gogeled ragtaw *let him who has angered a brave man shun him* MA. 191[a].

(d) In the later poetry it is used with the future, or with the subjunctive in a future sense, without any apparent meaning, e.g. arth o Deheubarth a dirchafuẏ. rẏ **llettaud** ẏ wir ew tra thir mẏnvẏ *a bear from the South will arise. His men will spread over the land of Mynwy* BB. 30[a]; bydinoed Katwaladyr kadyr y deuant. **ry drychafwynt** Kymry, kat a wnant *the hosts of Cadwaladr mightily will they come. The Cymry will rise up, they will give battle* FB. 126.

CONJUGATION OF THE VERB.

Verbal Classes.

98. In Celtic as in Latin there were various types of verbal conjugation. In Old Irish the different types may still to a great extent be distinguished, e.g. 3 sg. **-beir** *carries* from ***beret, -guid** *prays* from ***godit** (cf. Lat. capit), **-cara** *loves* from ***carāt** (cf. Lat. amat), **-lēici** *leaves* from ***lancīt** or the like (cf. Lat. audit or monet; in Celtic ē became ī). In Welsh the several types have become obscured. There remain, however, some traces of an original difference. Such are the different forms of the 3 sg. pres. ind., e.g. **geill** (to **gallu** *to be able*) which would go back to ***gallīt** or the like, **cymmer** *takes* which would correspond to an Ir. con-beir and would go back to **com-beret, car** *loves* = Ir. -cara; further the various forms of the 3 sg. pret. act. in **-as, -es, -is** and of the pret. pass. in **-at, -et, -it.** In particular should be noted such series as **geilw** (to **galw,** *to call*): **gelwis: gelwit; ceidw** (to **cadw** *to preserve*): **cedwis: cedwit; llysg** (to **llosgi** *to burn*): **llosges: llosget; ceiff** (to **caffael** *to get*): **cavas: cavat.** Here there is great need for a collection of material from early texts. In some cases an original radical conjugation is indicated by certain formations peculiar to verbs of the root class, e.g. the **-t** preterites **aeth** = Ir. -acht and **cymmerth** = Ir. con-bert to pres. **a** = Ir. -aig and **cymmer** = Ir. con-beir; the pret. **gwarawt** = Ir. fo-rāith to **gwaret** *to help*; and preterites passive like **llas** = Ir. -slass to **llad** *to kill.*

Voice.

99. There are two voices, the active and the passive. The deponential form which is found in Old-Irish has disappeared in Welsh.

Number.

100. In the active there are two numbers, the singular and the plural. In the passive there is only one form for both numbers.

101. In the concord of a verb with a plural subject Welsh shews certain peculiarities:—

(a) If the subject be unexpressed, or if it be a personal pronoun, the verb is in the plural, e.g. **y doethant, y doethant wy, wynt a doethant** *they came.*

NOTE.—Exceptions are rare, e.g. **os wynteu ae med hi** *if it is they that possess it* RB. 91; **poet wynt athiffero** *let it be they who defend thee* CM. 35; **nyt wy dyweit** geu llyfreu Beda *the books of Beda do not lie* FB. 159; wy a **gynheil** y bit *they support the world* FB. 217; **hwy a orfyt** *they shall prevail* MA. 141[b]. An example with the copula is: **ys hwẏ** yr rei hẏnnẏ (= **sef yw y rei hynny** RB. 121) Nẏnhẏaw a Pheibẏaw *they are Nynnyaw and Peibyaw* WB. 480.

(b) Otherwise in the prose of the Mabinogion the singular is the usual construction, e.g. **y kerdwys y kennadeu** *the messengers set out*; **beth yw y rei racko?** egylyon ynt *what are those yonder? They are angels.* But sometimes the verb is in the plural, particularly in WB. and in the more archaic texts, e.g. **y deu vrenhin a nessayssant** *the two kings drew near* RB. 5; a **meicheit** Matholwch **a oedẏnt** (= **oed** RB. 35) ar lan ẏ weilgi *and the swineherds of Matholwch were by the shore of the sea* WB. 50; **ẏ trywẏr a ganant** eu kẏrn *the three sound their horns* WB. 485 = RB. 125, 18;

naw brenhin coronawc **a oedỳnt** wỳr idaw *nine crowned kings who were his men* RB. 244; **seithwỳr a oỳdỳnt** y danaw *seven men were under him* (by **naw eglwys ereill a vydei** *there were nine other churches*) WB. 385 = RB. 245; **ỳ rei a oedỳnt** (= **oed** RB. 165) ỳn gwassanaethu *those who were serving* WB. 227; bliant **oedỳnt** (= **oed** RB. 165) **ỳ llieinỳeu** y bwrt *the tablecloths were of fine linen* WB. 227; kwt **ỳnt** (= ble **mae** RB. 101) **plant** ỳ gwr *where are the children of the man?* WB. 453. Sometimes the plural is found with a collective noun, e.g. **gwelsant niuer** Otgar eu meint *the people of Odgar saw their number* RB. 136, 3. In the earlier poetry the plural is quite common, and in corresponding constructions in Old Irish the plural is regular. In Welsh there has been an encroachment of the singular upon the plural, as there has been in later Irish.

Person.

102. In the active there are three persons of each number. In the passive there is only a third person, the first and second persons being expressed, as in Irish, by means of pronouns, e.g. **y-m gelwir** *I am called*, **y-th elwir** *thou art called*, **ny-n cerir** *we are not loved*, **ny-ch cerir** *ye are not loved*; **kattwer vi** *let me be kept.*

NOTE.—In the third person there are instances of an infixed pronoun, when the verb is non-relative, e.g. kyt **ys galwer** *though they are called* LA. 88, megys pei **as gossottit** *as if it were placed* Hg. I. 304; but, on the other hand, e.g. **na rodher** *that it be not given* RB. 258, **pan ollyngit** *when it was set free* Hg. I. 315. The matter calls for further observation.

103. The verb regularly agrees in person with the subject, e.g. **mi a welaf** *I see*, **ti a wely** *thou seest*, **ny a dywedwn** *we say*, **mi a thi a ryuelwn** *thou and I will fight*, **mi a Bown a wysgwn** yn arueu ymdanam a **thitheu a wysgy** ymdanat *Bown and I will put on our arms, and thou wilt put on thine.* In the passive, where there is no distinction of person, the third person is used everywhere, e.g. **mi a gerir** *I am loved.* The 3 sg. copula form **ys** is used, like the corresponding Ir. is, with pronouns of the first and second persons, e.g **ys mi** (= Ir. is mē) *it is I.*

Occasionally in a relative clause the verb is in the 3 sg. when the antecedent is in the first or second person, e.g. **mi rỳth welas** *I have seen thee* BB. 51[a]; **ae ti a eirch uỳ merch? ỳs mi ae heirch** *is it thou who askest for my daughter? It is I who ask for her* WB. 479; **mi aỳ had[e]ilỳawd** *I built it* WB. 394.

NOTE.—These last examples represent the original construction, which has in Welsh been replaced by congruence with the pronoun. The 3 sg. is the regular construction in Breton, e.g. **me guelas** *I saw*, in Cornish, e.g. **why a ergh** *ye seek*, and in Old Irish, e.g. **is mē asbeir** *it is I who say.*

The Moods.

104. There are three finite moods, the indicative, the subjunctive and the imperative. The Celtic languages have developed no proper infinitive; the place of the infinitive in Welsh as in the other Celtic languages is taken by a verbal noun, with nominal inflexion and with nominal construction. There is a passive participle in **-edic** and a verbal of necessity in **-adwy** (corresponding to the Irish verbal of necessity in -thi).

The Indicative.

105. The tenses of the indicative are present, imperfect, preterite, and pluperfect. Syntactically the present serves also as a future; in the earlier language, however, there are also special future forms (§ **130**). The imperfect is used both as an imperfect indicative and as a conditional (in the latter usage it corresponds in usage to the Irish secondary future). The preterite is used both as preterite and as perfect; in the latter usage it is often preceded by **ry**, particularly in the earlier language (§§ **96**, **97**). The pluperfect is a new development of the British division of Celtic; it has the same endings as the imperfect, and has been formed to the preterite stem on the analogy of the imperfect to the present. It is used (**a**) as a pluperfect indicative, (**b**) as a pluperfect conditional, in which sense, however, the imperfect continues to be used in Mid.W., (**c**) as a pluperfect subjunctive, in which usage it tends in Mid.W. to replace the past tense of the subjunctive (§ **111**). The following examples will illustrate the uses of the tenses of the indicative.

PRESENT.

106. (a) Actual present, e.g. beth **yw** hwnn? Kyfrwy **yw** *what is this? It is a saddle*; ti a **welỳ** ỳ sawl vorỳnỳon hỳgar **ỳssỳd** ỳn ỳ llỳs hon *thou seest all the amiable maidens who are in this court* WB. 155.

(b) Consuetudinal present, e.g. ef a **wỳl** pawb or a del ỳ mỳwn ac nỳs **gwỳl** neb efo *he sees everyone who enters and no one sees him* WB. 156.

(c) Of an action lasting into the present, e.g. **ys** gwers **yd wyf** yn keissaw a olchei vyg cledyf *I have been seeking for a while some one to burnish my sword* RB. 126; pump mlyned ar ethynt yr pan **yttym** ni yn arueru or ryw seguryt hwnnw *five years have passed away since we have been enjoying that ease* RB. II. 205.

(d) Historic present, e.g. nyt kynt **yd yskynn** ef ar y uarch noc **yd a** hitheu hebdaw ef *no sooner did he mount his horse than she passed him* RB. 11; nachaf gwr du . . . a **welant** *lo! they saw a black man* WB. 486; a phan **daw** (=**doeth** WB. p. 204) hyt lle yd oed Gwenhwyvar kyuarch gwell a oruc idi *and when he came to the place where Gwenhwyvar was he greeted her* RB. 262; gossot a oruc ynteu ar y marchawc . . . yny **hyllt** y daryan ac yny **dyrr** yr aruev *he made an onset on the horseman, till he cleft the shield and broke the arms* RB. 271.

(e) As future, e.g. dywet y Arthur pa le bynnac y bwyf i gwr idaw **vydaf,** ac o **gallaf** lles a gwassanaeth idaw, mi ae **gwnaf.** A dywet na **deuaf** y lys vyth yny ymgaffwyf ar gwr hir *say to Arthur that wherever I am I will be his man, and if I can do him advantage and service, I will do it. And say that I will never come to his court till I encounter the tall man.*

IMPERFECT.

107. (a) Of an action going on or a state existing in past time, e.g. val y **kyrchei** ef y bont ef a **welei** varchawc yn dyuot *as he was making for the bridge, he saw a horseman coming* WB. p. 216; nyt y fford a **gyrchei** y tref or bont a gerdawd Gereint *it was not by the road that went from the bridge to the town that Gereint went*

WB. p. 217; yma **ỳd oedwn** ỳn kerdet ui ar gwr mwỳaf a **garwn.** ac ar hỳnnỳ ỳ doeth tri chawr o gewri attam *we were travelling, I and the man whom I most loved. And thereupon there came to us three giants* WB. 441; pan deuthum i yma gyntaf, eingon gof a **oed** yma, a minneu ederyn ieuanc **oedwn** *when first I came here there was here a smith's anvil, and I was a young bird* RB. 129.

NOTE 1.—Note the use of the imperfect with a negative in such sentences as the following: **nyt eynt** hwy oe bod *they would not go willingly* RB. 32; yr hynny **ny thawei** yny dygwydwys kysgu arnei *for all that she would not be silent, till sleep fell upon her* RB. II. 51.

NOTE 2.—The imperfects of **clybot** *to hear* and of **gwelet** *to see* are frequent in narrative, parallel with the preterite of other verbs, e.g. y dyd yd aeth ef parth a chaer Dathyl, troi o vywn y llys a wnaeth hi; a hi a **glywei** lef corn *the day that he went towards Caer Dathyl, she walked within the court, and she heard the sound of a horn* RB. 74, 6; a dyuot yr brifford ae chanlyn a orugant. A choet mawr a **welynt** y wrthunt. A ffarth ar coet y deuthant. Ac yn dyuot or koet allan **y gwelynt** pedwar marchawc aruawc. Ac edrych a orugant arnunt *and they came to the highway and followed it. And they saw before them a great wood. And they went towards the wood. And they saw four armed horsemen coming out of the wood. And they gazed upon them* RB. 270, 19.

(b) Representing in indirect speech a present indicative of direct speech, e.g. a galw a wnaeth attaw y verch hynaf idaw Goronilla a gofyn idi pa veint **y karei** hi efo. A thygu a wnaeth hitheu y nef a daear bot yn vwy **y karei** hi euo noe heneit ehun. A chredu a wnaeth ynteu idi hynny, a dywedut, kan **oed** kymeint **y karei** hi euo a hynny, y rodei ynteu draean y gyuoeth genti hi y wr a dewissei yn ynys Prydein *and he called to him his eldest daughter Goronilla, and asked her how much she loved him. And she swore by heaven and earth that she loved him more than her own life. And he believed her in that and said that, since she loved him so much as that, he would give the third of his kingdom with her to the man whom she should choose in the island of Britain* RB. II. 65.

(c) Of a repeated or customary action in past time, e.g. a phy beth bynnac a dywetei ar y dauawt, ef ae **kadarnhei** oe weithret ae arueu *and whatever he said with his tongue, he used to make it good by his deeds and his arms* RB. II. 41; kymeint ac a wnelit y dyd or gweith, tranoeth pan gyuotit neur **daruydei** yr dayar y lynku *as much of the work as was done by day, overnight when they arose the earth had swallowed it* RB. II. 141; ar rwym a **wneyit**

yna rwng deu dyn a wnaethpwyt y rwng Gereint ar uorwyn *and the bond that used to be made then between two persons was made between Gereint and the maiden* RB. 262, 25.

(d) As secondary future or conditional.

(α) As a secondary tense to the future, e.g. can gwỳdỳwn i **ỳ dout** ti ym keissyaw i *for I knew that thou wouldst come to seek me* WB. 249; diheu oed genthi na **deuei** Ereint uyth *she was sure that Gereint would never come* WB. 441; ny wydyat hi beth a **wnaei** *she did not know what she should do* RB. 268, 29.

(β) In the apodosis of a future or possible conditional clause, e.g. bei gwnelhit uỳg kỳghor i nỳ **thorrit** kỳfreitheu llỳs ỳrdaw *if my counsel were followed, the laws of the court would not be broken on his account* WB. 458; pei clywhut ti ymdidan y marchogyon racco . . . mwy **vydei** dy oual noc y mae *if thou heard the discourse of yonder horsemen, thy anxiety would be greater than it is.*

(γ) In the apodosis of a past or impossible conditional clause, e.g. py ham vilein, heb ef, y gadut ti efo heb y uenegi imi. Arglwyd, heb ef, ny orchymyneisti euo imi; pei as gorchymynnut nys **gadwn** "*why, villain,*" *said he,* "*didst thou let him go without letting me know?*" "*Lord,*" *said he,* "*thou didst not give me such instructions. If thou hadst instructed me I should not have let him go*" WB. p. 216; pei oet idaw, ef a **ledit** (=**ladyssit** RB. 193, 8) *if he had been of age, he would have been slain* WB. 117.

NOTE 3. To **bot** *to be* the regular conditional is **bydwn.** The imperfect **oed,** however, (like Ir. ba) is used in a modal sense in expressions like the following: **oed well genhỳf** (=Ir. ba ferr limm) noc ỳssỳd ỳm gwlat bei oll ỳt uei val hỳnn *I should prefer to all that is in my kingdom that it should be all like that* WB. 487.

PRETERITE.

108. (a) As preterite (the regular narrative tense), e.g. ac ỳmhoỳ lud a **oruc** ar ỳ marchawc, ac ar ỳ gossot kỳntaf ỳ uwrw ỳr llawr ỳ dan draet ỳ uarch. a thra **barh[a]awd** ỳr un or pedwarugein marchawc, ar ỳ gossot kỳntaf **ỳ bỳrỳawd** pob un onadunt. Ac o oreu ỳ oreu **ỳ doe[t]hont** attaw eithỳr ỳ iarll. Ac ỳn diwethaf oll **ỳ doeth** ỳ iarll attaw *and he turned on the horseman, and at the first onset he threw him to the ground, under the feet of his horse. And while there remained one of the eighty horsemen, at the first onset he overthrew every one of them. And there came to him always one better than the last, except the earl. And last of all the earl came to him* WB. 432; y gysgu yd **aethant** y nos honno. a phan **welas** y meichat lliw y dyd, ef a **deffroes** Wydyon *that night they went to sleep. And when the swineherd saw the hue of day, he aroused Gwydyon* RB. 78, 12.

(b) Corresponding to a perfect in indirect speech, e.g. a thranoeth Agamemnon a wyssywys y bobyl y gyt, ac a diwadawd na **bu** ef eiryoet chwanawc yr amherodraeth honno. ac a dỳwawt nas **kymerth** ef hi onyt o uedwl iawn *and next day Agamemnon summoned the people together, and denied that he had ever been desirous of that sovereignty. And he said that he had not taken it except with just intention* RB. II. 24.

(c) As perfect, e.g. coet **ry welsom** ar y weilgi yn y lle ny **welsam** eiryoet vn prenn *we have seen a wood upon the sea where we have never seen a single tree* RB. 35, 24; pwy a **ganhadwys** itti eisted yna *who has given thee permission to sit there?* WB. p. 225; Bendigeit Uran ar niuer a **dywedassam** ni a hwylyassant parth ac Iwerdon *Bendigeit Vran and those whom we have mentioned set out towards Ireland* RB. 35, 14.

PLUPERFECT.

109. (a) As pluperfect indicative, e.g. or a **welsei** ef o helgwn y byt ny **welsei** cwn un lliw ac wynt *of all the hounds that he had seen anywhere he had never seen dogs of the same colour as them* RB. 1, 21; ual **y gnottayssei** tra uu yn llys Arthur kyrchu twrneimeint a wnaei *he resorted to tournaments as he had been wont to do while he was in Arthur's court* RB. 268, 6; a dyuot kof idaw y dolur yna yn uwy no phan **y cawssei** *and then there came to him the recollection of his sorrow more than when he had received it* WB. p. 218.

(b) As pluperfect conditional, e.g. **buassei** well itti pei rodassut nawd yr mackwy *it would have been better for thee if thou hadst given protection to the lad*; a phei nat ystyriei yr Arglwyd Duw ohonunt

wy, ef a **wnaethoed** oual tra messur udunt *and if the Lord God had not considered them he would have caused anxiety beyond measure to them* Hg. II. 71.

(c) Replacing the subjunctive in a pluperfect sense, e.g. bei **buassut** wrth vy gyghor i, ny chyuaruydei a thi na thrallawt na gofit *if thou hadst followed my counsel, neither affliction nor trouble would have come nigh unto thee* Hg. II. 123; pei **doethoed** ef yn y lle wedy dilyw, wynt a dywedynt y mae vrth Noe ac Effream y dywedassei Duw pob peth or a dywedessynt *if he had come immediately after the Flood they would have said that it was to Noah and Abraham that God had said everything that they had said* LA. 17.

The Subjunctive Mood.

The Formation of the Subjunctive.

110. The sign of the subjunctive is **h**; for the changes that **h** undergoes in conjunction with a preceding sound see § **11g**. Examples:—sg. 3 pres., **coffaho: coffau** *to remember*; **carho: caru** *to love*; **sorho: sorri** *to be angry*; **talho: talu** *pay*; **prynho: prynu** *to buy*; **mynho: mynnu** *to desire*; **bendicco: bendigaw** *to bless*; **cretto: credu** *to believe*; **atteppo: attebu** *to answer*; **llatho: llad** *to slay*; **tyffo: tyvu** *to grow*. After a preceding **h**, **h** is lost by dissimilation, e.g. **parhao: parhau** *to continue*; **amheuo: amheu** *to doubt*. Further **h** does not appear after **ch**, e.g. **archo: erchi** *to ask*, after **ff**, e.g. **caffo: caffael** *to get*, after **ll**, e.g. **gallo: gallu** *to be able*, or after **s**, e.g. **keisser** BB. 26^{b}, **llafassed** BB. 27^{a}, **ỳssỳnt** WB. 467. In the present tense the subjunctive has distinctive endings; in the past tense the endings are the same as in the imperfect indicative, so that here the **h** is the only distinguishing mark, except in the few verbs that have a special subjunctive stem.

Note 1.—In Mid.W. a new **h** subjunctive is formed analogically to the indicative of verbal stems ending in **d**, e.g. **cerdho** RB. 293=**certho** WB. p. 211 : **cerdet** *to go*, **lladho** WB. p. 210 = **llatho** WB. 419 : **llad**, **rodhom** RB. 105=**rothom** WB. 458 : **rodi** *to give*; from stems ending in **v** the regular form is rare, **tyffei : tyvu** WB. 453, but **prouher : provi** *prove* BB. 3^{b}, **safhei : sevyll** *to stand* WB. 466=RB. 110. There are already in Mid.W., particularly in its later period, examples of complete confusion of the subjunctive with the indicative stem, e.g. **clywut** RB. 274=**clỳvut** WB. 423 = **clywhut** WB. p. 212 : **clybot** *to hear*, **clywych** RB. 270 = **clywhych** WB. p. 209, **guelud : gwelet** *to see* BB. 29^{b}, **talo** RB. 268=**talho** WB. 415, **sorro : sorri** BB. 28^{b}, **cenich : canu** *to sing* BB. 42^{b}, **medrei** RB. 76=**metrei** WB. 104 : **medru** *aim at*, **mynnei** RB. 277=**mynhei** WB. p. 214, **cerdo** RB. 273=**certho** WB. p. 211, **llado** RB. 270=**lladho** WB. p. 210=**llatho** WB. 419, **rodo** RB. 286=**rotho** WB. p. 220, **ỳvei : yvet** *to drink* BB. 48^{b}. This confusion has spread analogically from cases like **gallu, erchi**, etc., where the subjunctive stem was in Old Welsh identical with the indicative, and from cases where later the two forms fell together by the operation of phonetic law, e.g. **mynho** to **mynno**, like **minheu** *I* to **minneu**. The old forms are most persistent in stems in **g, d, b.**

Note 2.—The earlier history of the Welsh subjunctive is very obscure. Vendryès, however, in the *Mémoires de la Société de linguistique de Paris*, XI. 258 sq. has made it probable that **h** came from prehistoric **s**, so that the formation would resemble that of the Irish *s*-subjunctive, from which, however, it differs in that in Welsh there must have been a vowel between **s** and the final consonant of the verbal stem. The explanation given by Stern, CZ. III. 383 sq. is untenable. In Early Welsh there are two subjunctives identical in formation with the Irish *s*-subjunctive:—**duch** *may he lead* from ***douc-set : dwyn** *to lead*, and **gwares** *may he help* from ***vo-ret-set : gwaret** *to help*.

The Tenses of the Subjunctive.

111. In early Welsh, as in Irish, the subjunctive had two tenses, a present, which syntactically had the function of a present and of a perfect, and a past, which syntactically had the function of an imperfect and of a pluperfect; in the sense of perfect and pluperfect the subjunctive may be preceded by **ry** (§ **96B.**) In the later Mid.W. period the past subjunctive in a pluperfect sense tended to be replaced by the pluperfect indicative (§ **109c**); sometimes in the same passage one text has the original subjunctive while another has the pluperfect indicative, e.g. **kỳn nỳs rỳ welhei** WB. 454=**yr nas gwelsei** RB. 102, 5 *though he had not seen her*; **pei as gorchymynnut** WB. p. 216=**pei as gorchymynnassut** RB. 280, 7 *if thou hadst commanded it*. The indicative origin of the usage is particularly clear in forms like **pei doethoed** *if he had come* LA. 17.

Note.—This substitution is parallel to the general tendency to replace the subjunctive stem by the indicative; it was noted above that no instances have been found of subjunctive **h** after **s**; thus, if **ysswn** from **yssu** *to eat* might be either indicative or subjunctive, a pluperfect indicative like **carasswn** *I had loved* might easily have come to be used in a subjunctive sense. In **ry wnelsut** WB. p. 223=**gwnelut** WB. 445, RB. 290, a pluperfect has been formed analogically to the past subjunctive **gwnelut** (§ **142**).

The Usages of the Subjunctive.

112. A thorough investigation of the uses of the subjunctive as contrasted with the indicative in Mid.W. is still wanting[a]. The following examples may serve to illustrate the principal types; further instances will be found under the conjunctions. Under the various headings are given, so far as they occur, (α) instances of the present subjunctive, (β) instances of the past subjunctive.

113. A. The subjunctive in main clauses.

(a) Wish.

(α) **an duch** ir gulet *may He bring us to the feast* BB. 20[b]; Duw a **rotho** da itt *may God give good to thee* WB. p. 204; **ny bo** teu dy benn *may not thy head be thine* RB. 103, 6.

Note.—A wish with reference to the past is expressed by the indicative, e.g. Och Iessu **na dẏffv** wẏ nihenit *O Jesus! that my death had come* (lit. *Alas! Jesus, that my death did not come*) BB. 25[b]; och Gindilic **na buost** gureic *would, Cynddilig, that thou hadst been a woman* BB. 46[a].

(b) Command.

(α) **yscẏthrich fort** a delhich ti. a **llunhich** tagneuet *make smooth a road that thou mayest come and cultivate peace* BB. 42[b]; dos . . . ac **erchych** hynny idaw *go and ask that of him* RB. 102, 11; dyuot a **wnelhych** gennyf *come with me* RB. 118, 2; dabre genhiw **nẏm gwatter** *come with me, let me not be refused* BB. 51[a].

(β) In indirect speech a command is transferred to the past subjunctive, e.g. Agamemnon . . . a d[y]wawt y peidei ef ar llywodraeth honno yn llawen . . . a **gossottynt** hwy y neb a vynnynt yn y le ef *Agamemnon said that he would gladly give up that command, and that they should set whomsoever they pleased in his place* RB. II. 24.

(c) Futurity. This usage is common in poetry, but rare in prose.

(α) ohonot ti **ẏt gaffo** ef kanẏs rẏ gaffo o arall *from thee he shall get it, though he has not got it from another* WB. 453; **nẏth atter** ti (=**nyth ellyngir di** RB. 104, 8) ẏ mẏwn *thou shalt not be admitted* WB. 457; **nyt arbettwy** car corff y gilyd *one kinsman will not spare the body of another* FB. 127; cad a uyt ym Mynyt Carn a Thrahaearn a **later** *there will be a battle in Mynydd Carn, and Trahaearn will be slain* MA. 142[a].

[a] A beginning has been made by Atkinson, *On the Use of the Subjunctive Mood in Welsh*, "Transactions of the Royal Irish Academy, 1894," pp. 459 sq., but he deals only with the present subjunctive.

114. B. The subjunctive in subordinate clauses.

(a) Negatively after verbs of thinking, swearing, etc.

(α) ny thybygaf inheu **na wypych** ti haedu ohonaw ef hynny *I do not think that thou dost not know that he has deserved that* RB. II. 157; hyt na bo neb a wypo **na bo** ti **vo** Gwrlois *so that no one may know that thou art not Gwrlois* RB. II. 179; mi a tynghaf dynghet idaw **na chaffo** ef enw yny kaffo gennyf i *I lay this fate on him that he will not get a name till he gets it from me* RB. 69, 21; o rodwch gret **na wneloch** gam idi *if ye pledge yourselves to do her no wrong* RB. 117, 15.

Note 1.—But in indirect speech as such the indicative is the mood used. With the last example contrast: y Duw y dygaf vyg kyffes nae werthu nae ellwng **nas gwnaf** i *I vow to God that I will neither sell it nor let it go* RB. 56, 8; similarly 215, 15.

(β) nyt er tebygu ohonaw ef **na bei** deilwg *it was not because he thought that it was not worthy* RB. II. 26; neb or ae gwelei ny wydyat na **beynt** eur *no one who saw them knew that they were not gold* RB. 62, 1. After a primary tense:—na wn . . . pei kahwn dẏsc **nas gwẏpwn** *I do not know that, if I got instruction, I would not know how to do it* WB. 127.

(b) In indirect interrogation.

(α) aet un y wybot pwy **vo** *let some one go to learn who he may be* RB. 9, 1; manac y mi pa furyf **y gallwyf** hynny *show me how I can do that* RB. 3, 4; yny wyper a **uo** byw *until it be known whether he will live* RB. 261, 4; y edrych a **allwyf** y dial arnaw *to see whether I can avenge him on him* RB. 204, 12; dewis ae ti a **elych** yr llys ae titheu a **delych** gyt a mi y hela ae minneu a **yrro** vn or teulu *choose whether thou wilt go to the court, or whether thou wilt come with me to the chase, or whether I shall send one of the household* RB. 237, 9.

(β) heb wybot pwy **vei** eu gelynyon pwy **vei** eu gwyr ehunein *without knowing who were their enemies, who their own men* RB. II. 105; val yd oed Kynan Meiradawc yn pedrussaw beth a **wnelei** *as Kynan Meiradawg was hesitating as to what he should do*

RB. II. 114; a medylyaw pa ffuruf **y gellynt** ymlad ar deu lu *and they considered how they could fight with the two armies* RB. II. 76; ef a peris y dwyn yw lys y edrych a **uei** vyw *he caused him to be brought to his court to see whether he would live* WB. p. 222.

NOTE 2.—But in dependent interrogation as such the subjunctive is not required, e.g. ny wn i pwy **wyt** ti *I do not know who thou art* RB. 2; govyn a oruc pwy **oedynt** a pha le pan **hanhoedynt** a phy daear **y magyssit** arnei a phy achaws **y dathoedynt** y deyrnas ef *he asked who they were, and whence they came, and in what land they had been reared, and for what reason they had come to his kingdom* RB. II. 131; gouyn a wnaeth ae offeiryat **oed** ef *he asked if he was a priest* Hg. I. 33; edrych yn y chylch a oruc a **yttoed** ef yn deffroi *she looked round about her to see if he was awaking* RB. 274, 30.

(**c**) Concessive clauses:—

(α) a **chyt archo** ef ytti yr eil na dyro *and though he ask thee for a second (blow), do not give it* RB. 3, 19; tydi am gwely i **kany welwyf** i dydi *thou shalt see me, though I do not see thee* RB. 173, 18.

(β) a **chyt bei** lityawc ef wrthi hi ef a gymyrth y rybud *and though he was angry with her, he took her warning* WB. p. 215.

(**d**) Conditional clauses:—

(β) e.g. **pei as gwypwn** mi ae dywedwn *if I knew it, I would tell it* RB. 130, 5; bei **ỏs cuỏpun**...nỏs **gunaun** *if I had known it I would not have done it* BB. 41[a]; **or gwnelei** ef hynny ynteu a rodei y verch idaw ef *if he did that he would give him his daughter* RB. II. 26.

NOTE 3.—In present conditional clauses the present indicative with **o** is used (§ 224[a]).

(**e**) Clauses of comparison:—

(α) gwnaet iawn **mal y barno** goreugwyr y llys *let him give satisfaction as the nobles of the court shall decide* RB. 261, 4.

(β) **mal y dyckei** eu teghetuenneu y ffoassant *they fled as their fortunes led them* RB. II. 73. Of unreal comparison, e.g. llyma yssyd iawnhaf itti . . . dyuot yma auory ym kymryt i **mal na wyppwn** i dim y wrth hynny *that is thy most proper course, to come here to-morrow to take me as if I knew nothing about it* WB. p. 215.

(**f**) Temporal clauses:—

(α) o lladaf i y gwr racco mi ath gaf ti **tra vynhwyf.** a **gwedy** nath **vynhwyf** mi ath yrraf ymdeith *if I slay yonder man, I will take thee as long as I desire; and when I no longer desire thee, I will cast thee forth* WB. p. 215; **pan agorer** y creu beunyd yd a allan *when the sty is opened every day, it goes out* RB. 78, 7; **pan delych** dy hun yth wlat ti a wely a wneuthum yrot ti *when thou thyself comest to thy land, thou wilt see what I have done for thee* RB. 6; ny luniaf i esgydyeu idi **yny welwyf** y throet *I will not shape shoes for her till I see her foot* RB. 70, 24.

(β) a pheri yr kigyd **gwedy y bei** yn dryllyaw kic dyuot idi a tharaw bonclust arnei beunyd *and he made the butcher, after he had been cutting up the flesh, come to her and box her ears every day* RB. 34, 9; a **ffan uei** hỏttraf Gereint ỏ llawenhaei ỏ gwr *and whenever Gereint prevailed, the man rejoiced* WB. 398; **tra uei** y mywn coet ar vric y coet y kerdei *while he was in a wood, he would travel on the top of the wood* RB. 108, 21; y byryw[y]t y kalaned yn y peir **yny uei** yn llawn *the corpses were thrown into the cauldron till it was full* RB. 39, 23.

(**g**) Final clauses, and clauses following verbs of effecting, commanding, desiring, etc.

(α) carchara wynt **hyt nat elont** dracheuyn *imprison them so that they may not go back* RB. 34, 14; mi a wnaf **na chaffo** ef viui vyth *I shall effect that he shall never get me* RB. 13, 16; ny allaf i **na chysgwyf** *I cannot refrain from sleep* RB. 277, 4; sef y harchaf itt **na mynnych** wreic *my request of thee is that thou shalt not seek a wife* RB. 100, 20.

(β) ereill a gyghorei it rodi dy uerch y un o dylyedogyon y deyrnas hon **ual y bei** vrenhin gwedy ti *others counselled thee to give thy daughter to one of the nobles of this kingdom, so that there might be a king after thee* RB. II. 114; Andromacta...a anuones at Briaf y beri idaw wahard Ector **nat elei** y dyd hwnnw yr vrwydyr *Andromache sent to Priam to get him to prevent Hector from going to the battle that day* RB. II. 22; adolwyn a wnaeth Elenus **na wnelit** hynny *Helenus begged that that might not be done* RB. II. 32.

NOTE 4.—But in mere consecution the indicative is used, e.g. ar y llech y mae kawc aryant wrth gadwyn aryant **mal na ellir** eu gwahanu *on the flag there is a silver goblet on a silver chain, so that they cannot be separated* RB. 167; kyscu a wneuthum i **ual na wybuum** pan aeth ef *I slept so that I did not know when he went* RB. 247, 26.

(h) Relative clauses, including similar clauses of a non-relative type.

(α) wely di a **wnelych** *here is what thou must do* RB. 271, 23; kein wlad nef boed ef **yt el** *the fair land of heaven, may it be there that he goes* MA. 263b; a **vo** penn bit bont *let him who is head be bridge* RB. 36; y gymeint a **wypwyf** i mi ae dywedaf *all that I know I will tell* RB. 131; o mynwn nineu arueru o rydit a **vo** hwy *if we wish to enjoy freedom any longer*; pwy bynnac a **vynno** kanlyn Arthur bit heno y Ghernyw gyt ac ef *whoever wishes to accompany Arthur, let him be with him to-night in Cornwall* RB. 160; kymer y march kyntaf a **welych** *take the first horse that thou seest* RB. 9; na uyd...**yr** a **dotter** yndi vyth *however much be put into it it will never be* (*full*) RB. 15; ny cheiff ymwan...y gwr ny **bo** gyt ac ef y wreic vwyhaf a **garho** *no man will be allowed to contend who has not with him the lady whom he most loves* RB. 252; a oes ohonawch chwi a **adnapo** y uarchoges racco *is there any one of you who knows yonder horsewoman?* RB. 8; keis ath **ladho** *seek someone to slay thee* RB. 5; gwna ty...**y geingho** ef *make a house in which he may find room* RB. 37, 21

(β) Sef y gwelei y llew yn y ganlyn . . . ual milgi a **uackei** ehun *he saw the lion following him like a hound that he had reared himself* RB. 187; pedeir meillonen gwŷnnŷon a dŷuei ŷn ŷ hol mŷn **ŷd elhei** *four white blades of clover grew after her wherever she went* WB. 476; digavn oed hŷnnŷ yn tal gwasanaeth a **uei** uwŷ nor un a wneuthum i *that were sufficient as pay for a greater service than that which I have done* WB. 426; a pheth bynnac a **dywettei** Peredur wrthi chwerthin a wnay hitheu yn uchel *and whatever Peredur said to her, she laughed aloud* RB. 237; a chymeint oed eu gwybot ac nat oed ymadrawd . . . yr isset **y dywettit** . . . nys **gwypynt** *and such was their knowledge that there was no conversation, however low it was uttered, that they did not know* RB. 94, 18. After a primary tense: kynhebic yw yr neb a **wasgarei** gemeu mawrweirthyawc dan draet moch *he is like one who should scatter precious stones under the feet of swine* RB. II. 122.

The Imperative.

115. In the active the imperative has two persons in the singular and three in the plural; in the passive it is identical in form with the subjunctive. The negative is **na**. Examples:—**gat** i mi vynet *allow me to go*; **na wiscet** dim ymdanei *let her not put anything on*; kyrchu tref arall a **wnawn** *let us make for another town*; **na rodher** *let there not be given.* The only idiom that calls for special notice is the following:—mi a rodaf vy iarllaeth yth uedyant a **thric** gyt a mi *I will give my earldom into thy possession, if thou wilt stay with me* (lit. *and stay with me*) RB. 278, 14.

The Participle Passive in -edic.

116. Examples:—arueu y gwyr **lladedic** *the arms of the slain men*; ynteu **madeuedic ŷw** ganthaw y godyant ef *as for him, the injury done to him is forgiven by him* WB. 404; Gwawl . . . a doeth parth ar wled a **oed darparedic** idaw *Gwawl went to the feast that was prepared for him* RB. 14, 22.

The Verbal in -adwy.

117. Examples:—nyt **barnadwy** yn volyant *it is not to be judged a praise* Hg. II. 83; nyt **kredadwy** *it is not to be believed* CM. 111; a chanys **credadwy** yw y anedigaeth **credadwy** y varwolyaeth *and since his birth is credible, his death is credible* CM. 21; midwyf bard **moladwy** *I am a poet worthy of praise* FB. 203; odit a uo **molediw** *few are worthy of praise* FB. 272; os da gennyt ti ac or byd **ragadwy** bod it *if thou approvest and if it is pleasing to thee* RB. II. 133; a **phrofadwy** yw ry golli ohonaf i vyn ngolwc *and it is clear that I have lost my sight* Hg. I. 83; vegys bilein **profadwy** *like a proved villain* Hg. II. 129.

The Verbal Noun or Infinitive.

Formation.

118. The following are the chief types of formation of the verbal noun :—

(a) The prehistoric suffix has disappeared, so that the verbal noun is now identical in form with the stem of the verb. Examples:

ammeu *doubt*: **amheu-af** *I doubt*
cyvarch *ask*: **cyvarch-af**
dianc *escape*: **diangh-af**
diodef *suffer*: **diodev-af**
galw *call*: **galw-af**
gellwng *let go*: **gellyng-af**
gwarandaw *listen*: **gwarandaw-af**
llad *slay*: **llad-af**

Further in some denominatives, e.g. **bwytta** *eating*: **bwytta-af**, **cardotta** *begging*, **lledratta** *stealing*, **pyscotta** *fishing*.

119. (b) The verbal noun still shows a suffix.

(α) **-i**, e.g.—

bod-i *drown*: **bod-af**
cyvod-i *rise*: **cyvod-af**
erch-i (O.W. **erchim**) *ask*: **arch-af**
meneg-i *shew*: **manag-af**
mol-i (O.W. **molim**) *praise*: **mol-af**
per-i *cause*: **par-af**
tew-i *be silent*: **taw-af**
torr-i *break*: **torr-af**

(β) **-u**, e.g.—

can-u *sing*: **can-af**
car-u *love*: **car-af**
dysg-u *teach*; **dysg-af**
gall-u *be able*: **gall-af**
gwassanaeth-u *minister*: **gwassanaeth-af**
mynn-u *desire*: **mynn-af**
pryn-u *buy*: **pryn-af**

This is the common form of the verbal noun from denominatives in **-ha-**, e.g. **cennatta-u** *send message*: **cennatta-af**, **dynessa-u** *approach*: **dynessa-af**, **rydha-u** *free*: **rydha-af**.

(γ) **-aw**, e.g.—

gwisg-aw *clothe*: **gwisg-af**
lliw-aw *colour*: **lliw-af**
bedydy-aw *baptize*: **bedydy-af**
medyly-aw *think*: **medyly-af**

(δ) **-at, -et, -ut**, e.g.—

adeil-at *build*: **adeil-af**
cerd-et *go*: **cerd-af**
gwel-et *see*: **gwel-af**
dywed-ut (also **dywedwyt**) *say*: **dywed-af**
gorderch-at *make love*: **gorderch-af**
yv-et *drink*: **yv-af**
ymchoel-ut *turn*; **ymchoel-af**

(ε) Various suffixes found only in a few verbs :—

cymryt *take*: **cymmer-af**
dyffryt *protect*: **differ-af**
edvryd *restore*: **adver-af**
goglyt *shun*: **gogel-af**
dilit *follow*: **dilyn-af**
ymlit *pursue*: **ymlyn-af**
godiwes *overtake*: **godiwed-af**
arhos *await*: **arho-af**

adolwyn *entreat*: **adolyg-af**
amwyn *protect*: **amyg-af**
dwyn *lead*: **dyg-af**

ehed-ec *fly*: **ehed-af**
ered-ic *plough*: **ard-af**
red-ec *run*: **red-af**

caffael, cael *get*: **caff-af**
gadael (by **gadu**) *allow*: **gad-af**
gallel (by **gallu**) *be able*: **gall-af**
sev-yll *stand*: **sav-af**

chwerthin *laugh*: **chward-af**
darllein *read*: **darlle-af**
igian *sob*: **igi-af**
llevain *cry*: **llev-af**

Usage.

120. The infinitive, being merely a verbal noun, has all the constructions of a noun; it has, however, become so far attached to the verbal system that it forms a perfect by prefixing the particle **ry** (§ 96c). Examples :—

(a) nyt oed vynych yt **gaffel** bud *it was not a common thing for you to get profit*; mynneu a ryuedeis **gallu** ohonaw ef **mynet** yn dirybud y mi *I wondered that he could go without informing me*; gwedy **llad** y gwyr hynny *after those men had been slain*; cyn awch **mynet** ymdeith atteb a geffwch *before you depart* (lit. *before your*

going) *you shall get an answer*; heb y **uenegi** imi *without showing it to me*; y eu **gochel** *to avoid them.*

(b) gwedy clybot yn Rufein **ry oresgyn** o Garawn ynys Brydein *after it had been heard in Rome that Carawn had conquered the island of Britain.* Sef a wnaethant llidiaw yn vwy no meint am **ry wneuthur** ac wynt kyfryw dwyll a hwnnw *they were exceeding wroth that such treachery had been done to them* RB. II. 75.

121. The verbal noun has no distinction of voice. If it depends upon **gallu** *to be able* or **dylyu** *to owe*, then, if the sense be passive, **gallu** and **dylyu** are put in the passive, e.g. gwreic **y gellir dywedut** idi y bot yn deckaf or gwraged *a woman of whom it can be said that she is the fairest of women*; ni a atwaenwn y neb a **dylyer** y **kymryt** y gantaw *we know those that ought to be taken from him* RB. 16, 20.

122. The agent with the verbal noun is commonly expressed by the preposition **o** following the noun (cf. the corresponding Irish construction with *do*), e.g. gwedy **gorwed ohonaw ef** ar traws yr auon *after he had lain across the river*; gwedy **ry gyscu ohonaw** *after he had slept*; rac dy **lad ohonaw** *lest thou shouldst be slain by him.* It may also be expressed by the preposition **y,** e.g. **tygu** llyein mawr **udunt wynteu** y vot yn wir *they swore great oaths that it was true* Hg. II. 131; **kymryt** ofyn mawr **y Vradmwnd** *Bradmwnd became sore afraid* Hg. II. 133; gwedy **udunt oresgyn** yr holl wlat *after they had conquered the whole country* RB. II. 116; gwedy **y Amic gaffel** kennyat *after Amic had got permission* Rev. Celt. IV. 218; nyt oed neb o vilwyr y vort gronn heb **idaw eu bwrw** oll yr llawr *there was no one of the warriors of the Round Table that he had not thrown down* Hg. I. 9; yr **y pawb disgynnu** *though everyone else dismounted* RB. 105, 7. Or the verbal noun may be preceded by a possessive adjective, e.g. gwedy **eu dyuot** yr weirglawd *after they came to the meadow* Hg. I. 9.

123. The verbal noun is often used in periphrasis with **gwneuthur** *to do*, e.g. **dysgynnu** ar y pren a **wnant** *they will alight upon the tree*; ac yna **ymlad** a **wnaem** ninneu am y maen *and then we would fight for the stone*; a **cherdet** recdi ỳr coet a

oruc ỳ uorwyn *and the maiden went on to the wood*; **rodi** penn y karw a **wnaethpwyt** y Enid *the head of the stag was given to Enid.*

124. The verbal noun may carry on the construction of a finite verb, e.g. drỳchauel ỳ wỳneb a oruc ynteu ac **ỳdrỳch** arnei ỳn llidiawc *he raised his face and looked on her angrily* WB. 419; kennatau ỳ mab a orucpwyt, ae **dỳuot** ỳnteu ỳr llỳs *and the boy was sent for and came to the court* WB. 454; ac a dywawt na wnaethpwyt oe bleit ef drwc yn y byt y Briaf, namyn **rodi** Esonia idaw ef o achaws y dewret *and he said that on his part no evil in the world had been done to Priam, but that Hesione had been given to him for his valour* RB. II. 5; pan **bebillo** Lloegir in tir Ethlin a **guneuthur** Dỳganhuỳ dinas degin *when the English shall encamp in the land of Ethlin, and make Deganwy a strong fort* BB. 28ᵃ; pan gyfodes y bobyl a **chael** Lawnslot megys yn uarw *when the people rose and found Launcelot like one dead* Hg. I. 155.

125. Without a preceding finite verb the verbal noun may serve as an historical infinitive, e.g. tra yttoed vilwyr Arthur yn ymlad ar gaer, **rwygaw** o Gei y uagwyr a **chymryt** y carcharawr ar y geuyn *while Arthur's warriors were fighting with the city, Kei broke through the wall and took the prisoner on his back* RB. 131, 28; **deuy** yrof a Duw, heb ynteu. ae **dwyn** gyt ac ef yr uort oe hanuod, ac **erchi** idi vwyta yn uynych "*between God and me thou shalt come,*" *said he. And he took her to the table against her will and asked her repeatedly to eat* RB. 289; a gwedy disgynnu Arthur yr tir **dyuot** seint Iwerdon attaw y erchi nawd idaw *and after Arthur landed, the saints of Ireland came to him to ask his protection* RB. 136; **dỳuot** (= **dyuot a oruc** RB. 126) ỳ porthawr ac **agori** ỳ porth *the porter came and opened the gate* WB. 487.

126. The verbal noun has special uses with certain prepositions.

(a) With **yn** the verbal noun has the force of a present participle (cf. the Irish construction with *oc*), e.g. val y gwelas y gwr...Peredur **yn dyuot** *as the man saw Peredur coming*; lleidyr...a geueis **yn lletratta** arnaf *a thief whom I caught stealing from me.* It is often used with the substantive verb to express continuing action; e.g. yr hynny hyt hediw **yd wyf i yn darparu gwled** ytti *from that time*

till to-day I have been preparing a feast for thee RB. 182; canys ar y medwl hwnnw **yd wyt** titheu **yn trigyaw** *since it is on this purpose that thou art fixed* RB. 253; ual **yd oed** y sarff **yn dyuot** or garrec, y tharaw a oruc Owein a chledyf *as the snake was coming from the rock, Owein struck it with a sword.* When the verbal noun precedes the verb **yn** may be added, but it is more commonly omitted, e.g. **yn eisted yd oedynt** ar garrec Hardlech *they were seated on the rock of Harlech* RB. 26, **yn adolwc y mae** y ti arglwyd (=**adolwyn** itti arglwyd **y mae** Erbin WB. p. 205) ellwng Gereint y uab attaw *he entreats thee, Lord, to let go his son Gereint to him* RB. 264; **dywedut** yrydunt ehun **y maent** *they are saying among themselves* WB. p. 211; **medylyaw yd wyf** *I am considering* RB. 75, 26 (but **yd wyf yn medylyaw** RB. 76, 22).

(b) With **gwedy** *after* the verbal noun has the force of a perfect participle (cf. the use of Irish *iar n-*), e.g. ỏ mae **gvedỏ mỏnet** gỏd a Gwenhwỏvar ỏ hỏstavell *he has gone with Gwenhwyvar to her chamber* WB. 408, a phan yttoedynt **gwedy gware** talym, sef y klywynt kynnwryf mawr *when they had played a while, they heard a great din* RB. 157; a ffan welas ỏ gwr...Gereint **gwedỏ caffel** dỏrnawd *and when the man saw that Gereint had received a blow* WB. 398; Enỏt a oed heb gỏscu ỏ mỏwn ỏstauell wỏdrin, ar heul ỏn tỏwỏnnu ar ỏ gwelỏ, ar dillad **gwedỏ rỏ lithraw** ỏ ar ỏ dwỏ uron ef *Enid was sleepless in a chamber of glass, with the sun shining on the bed, while the clothes had slipped from his breast* WB. 416.

(c) With **can** *with* and **tan** *under* the verbal noun is used in sentences like the following: Pascen...a gyffroes y bobyl honno... **gan adaw** udunt anheruynedic amylder o eur ac aryant *Pascen stirred up that people, promising them an unlimited abundance of gold and silver* RB. II. 169; tywyssawc Kernyw ae hymlynawd **gan eu llad** *the prince of Cornwall followed them slaying them* RB. II. 191; dyuot dracheuynt at Wenhwyuar **dan gwynaw** y dolur *she came back to Gwenhwyuar bewailing her anguish* RB. 249; (wynt) a gyrchassant parth a Ruuein **dan anreithaw** a wrthwynepei udunt *they set out towards Rome, plundering all who resisted them* RB. II. 75.

Paradigm of the Regular Verb.

127. Types: **caru** *to love*, and the denominative **rydhaü** *to set free.* Forms in brackets are forms that have not been noted from a verb of the type.

INDICATIVE.

Present and Future.

	sing.	plur.	sing.	plur.
1.	car-af	car-wn	rydha-af	rydha-wn
2.	cer-i, cer-y	cer-wch	rydhe-y	rydhe-wch
3.	car	car-ant	rydha	rydha-ant
pass.	cer-ir		rydhe-ir	

Imperfect and Conditional.

1.	car-wn	car-em	rydha-wn	(rydha-em)
2.	car-ut	car-ewch	rydha-ut	ryda-ewch
3.	car-ei	cer-ynt	rydha-ei	rydhe-ynt
pass.	cer-it		rydhe-it	

Preterite and Perfect.

1.	cereis	carass-am	rydheeis	rydhaass-am
2.	cereis-t	carass-awch	rydheeis-t	rydhaas-awch
3.	caras	carass-ant	rydha-awd	rydhaass-ant
pass.	carat		rydha-wyt	

Pluperfect.

1.	carass-wn	(carass-em)	(rydhaass-wn)	(rydhaass-em)
2.	carass-ut	(carass-ewch)	(rydhaass-ut)	(rydhaass-ewch)
3.	carass-ei	(carass-ynt)	rydhaass-ei	rydhaess-ynt
pass.	carass-it		(rydhaass-it)	

IMPERATIVE.

1.		car-wn		(rydha-wn)
2.	car	cer-wch	rydha	rydhe-wch
3.	car-et	car-ent	rydha-et	(rydha-ent)
pass.	car(h)-er		rydha-er	

SUBJUNCTIVE.

PRESENT.

1.	car(h)-wyf car(h)-oef	car(h)-om	rydha-wyf	rydha-om
2.	cer(h)-ych	car(h)-och	rydhe-ych	(rydha-och)
3.	car(h)-wy car(h)-oe	car(h)-wynt car(h)-oent		
	car(h)-o	car(h)-ont	rydha-o	rydha-wynt rydha-ont
pass.	car(h)-er		rydha-er	

PAST.

1.	car(h)-wn	car(h)-em	rydha-wn	(rydha-em)
2.	car(h)-ut	car(h)-ewch	rydha-ut	rydha-ewch
3.	car(h)-ei	cer(h)-ynt	rydha-ei	rydhe-ynt
pass.	cer(h)-it		rydhe-it	

REMARKS ON THE VERBAL PARADIGM.

Present and Future Indicative.

128. (a) **sg. 3.** Many verbs show vowel infection (§ 5), e.g. **eirch : arch-af** *I ask*, **ceidw : cadw-af** *I preserve*, **ceiff : caff-af** *I get*, **geilw : galw-af** *I call*, **lleinw : llanw-af** *I fill*, **peir : par-af** *I cause*, **peirch : parch-af** *I honour*, **seif : sav-af** *I stand*, **teifl : tafl-af** *I cast*, **etteil : attal-af** *I stop*, **gweheird : gwahard-af** *I forbid*, **lleveir : llavar-af** *I speak*, **edeu, edy : adaw-af** *I leave*, **edeu : adaw-af** *I promise*, **gwerendeu, gwerendy : gwarandaw-af** *I listen*, **teu : taw-af** *I am silent*, **tereu, tery : traw-af** *I strike*, **gwyl : gwel-af** *I see*, **gweryt : gwared-af** *I help*, **cyll : coll-af** *I destroy*, **dyt : dod-af** *I put*, **llysg : llosg-af** *I burn*, **hyllt : hollt-af** *I split*, **ryd : rod-af** *I give*, **tyrr : torr-af** *I break*, **egyr : agor-af** *I open*, **envyn : anvon-af** *I send*, **ervyll : arvoll-af** *I receive*, **erhys : arhos-af** *I await*, **deffry : deffro-af** *I arouse*, **ffy : ffo-af** *I flee*, **try : tro-af** *I turn*. It should be noted that, except in the 3 sg. of the present, no vowel but **a** is subject to infection in the verb, e.g. 2 pl. **gwel-wch, rod-wch, ffo-wch** (cf. § 7 note 1).

NOTE.—Irregular are: **menyc : manag-af** *I shew*; **dyweit : dywed-af** *I say*.

(b) From the denominatives in **-hau, -a** spreads as an ending to other verbs, e.g. **cerda : cerdet** *to go*, **teruyna : tervynu** *to end*. Further, it is added again to the denominatives, e.g. **gnottaa : gnotta-af** *I am wont*. Form **-áa** comes by contraction in Mod.W. **-á**.

129. In the older language some other forms appear.

sg. 1. By **-af, -if** is sometimes found, e.g. **gwneif** *I will make* FB. 62, **cenif** *I will sing* MA. 140ᵃ, **gweinif i** *I will serve* 142ᵃ, **cerif i** *I will love* 147ᵇ.

sg. 2. In this person there is also an ending **-yd** (i.e. **yḋ**, cf. Bret. **-ez**, Corn. **-yth**), e.g. **ceryd** *thou lovest*, **gwesceryd** *thou scatterest*, **dywedyd** *thou sayest*, **nodyd** *thou protectest*, **clywyd** *thou hearest*. Cf. Arch. Cambr. 1873, pp. 143 sq.

sg. 3. In O. Irish there are two forms of the ending, a longer which is found only in simple verbs, and a shorter which is used in compound verbs, and also in simple verbs when a negative or certain other particles precede, e.g. **berid** (from *bhereti) *he carries*, but **ni beir** (from *bheret) *he does not carry*, **do-beir** *he gives*. In Early Welsh there are traces of a similar distinction of ending, e.g. **pereid y rycheu. ny phara ae goreu** *the trenches remain, he who made them remains not* FB. 289; and in the proverb: **trengid golud, ni threing** molud *wealth perishes, fame perishes not*. Further examples of the ending are: **prinit** *buys*, **agit, egit** *goes* (= Mid.W. **eyt** FB. 304) in the O.W. glosses; **llicrid : llygru** *destroy*, **reuhid : rewi** *freeze*, **ottid : odi** *snow*, **gosgupid** *sweeps*, **tohid : toi** *cover* BB. 45ᵃ, **meccid : magu** *nourish* BB. 45ᵇ, **briuhid : briwaw** *break* BB. 46ᵃ, cf. further Arch. Cambr. 1872, pp. 303 sq., 1873, pp. 145 sq. It will be seen that the **h** which appears in the old future (§ 130), and in the subjunctive has also made its way into these presents. In usage Mid.W. agrees with O.Ir. in that the longer ending is not found when the verb is preceded by a negative, it differs from O.Ir. in that the longer ending has spread to compound verbs. In early poetry there seem to be instances of a corresponding present in **-awt** (which would originally belong to ā-stems, cf. O.Bret. **-ot** in **fleriot** gl. ridolet, O.Ir. **caraid**, from *carāti, *loves*, Lat. **amat**): **barẏwhaud** *grows a beard*, **gvẏrhaud** *bends* BB. 45ᵃ, **llewychawt** *shines* FB. 117, **gwisgawt** *clothes* FB. 307.

pl. 3. In the O.W. glosses by the ending **-ant** in **itercludant** gl. subigant there appears also **-int** in **limnint** gl. tondent, **nertheint** gl. armant, **scamnhegint** gl. levant. This ending seems to survive in Mid.W. poetry, e.g. **diurẏssint** *hasten* BB. 45ᵃ, 54ᵇ (cf. pan **vryssyant** FB. 257), **dywedynt** *will say* FB. 223, **torrynt** *will break* FB. 229. It seems probable that this served as a primary ending, but the matter demands further investigation.

Passive.—In the passive there is found in poetry and occasionally in proverbs a variety of forms in **-tor**, e.g. **megittor** *will be nourished* BB. 31ᵇ, **kenhittor** *will be sung* BB. 26ᵇ, **kwynitor** *is lamented* FB. 280; **kymysgetor** *is mixed* FB. 181, **kyrbwylletor** *will be mentioned* FB. 200;

traethattor *will be discoursed* FB. 137, **canhator** *is sung* FB. 209 : **brithottor** *is variegated* BB. 17ᵃ. Cf. Arch. Cambr. 1872 pp. 305 sq., Dottin, *Désinences verbales en R*, 177 sq. These forms, which are clearly based on the longer form of the 3 sg. act., are especially common in the poetry of the twelfth century. Their syntactical function is present or future.

130. In Early Welsh there are also some specially future forms :

sg. 3 (a) **-hawt** (i.e. **-hawd**), e.g. **parahaud** *will continue* BB. 50ᵇ, **briuhaud** *will break* BB. 29ᵇ, **methawd** *will fail* WB. 457, **lletawt** *will spread* FB. 236, **llwyprawd** (: **llwybraw**) *will travel* MA 232ᵇ. Cf. CZ. III. 402.

(b) After a negative, **-haw** : **ny chaffaw** *will not get* BB. 4ᵇ, **nys gwnaw** *will not make* FB. 126 ; but also **a wnaw** *who will make* FB. 150.

Pl. 3. **-hawnt**, e.g. O.W. **cuinhaunt** gl. deflebunt, **gwnahawnt** *will make* FB. 124, **pebyllyawnt** *will encamp* FB. 212.

Pass. **-hawr**, e.g. **agorawr** *will be opened* WB. 456, **ffohawr** *there will be flight* FB. 126, **talhaur** *will be paid* BB. 16ᵃ, **nyn lladawr** *we shall not be killed* WB. 475, **edmyccaur** *will be honoured* BB. 29ᵇ. Cf. Dottin, *op. cit.*, 169 sq., CZ. III. 403.

NOTE.—There also occur forms of the type of **-ettor, -attor** above, e.g. **torredawd** *will break* FB. 236, **llettatawt** *will spread* FB. 129, **dygettaur** *will be led* BB. 13ᵃ, **lloscetawr** *will be burned* FB. 119, **galwetawr** *will be called* FB. 165.

Imperfect Indicative and Conditional.

131. **sg. 3.** (a) In poetry there is also an ending **-i**, infecting a preceding **a**, e.g. **ceri** *loved*, **nodi** *protected*, **torri** *broke*, **clywi** *heard*. Cf. Arch. Cambr. 1874, p. 117, Cymmrod. IX. 54, Rev. Celt. VI. 16.

(b) There is also an ending **-at** (i.e. **-ad**); see the irregular verbs **gwybot** (§ 143), **adnabot** (§ 144), **pieu** (§ 160), and the verb **bot** (§ 152). So in the plup. **ry dywedyssyat** *had said* MA. 485ᵇ.

pl. 3. In this person there is an ending **-eint** :—**achubeint** WB. 466 = pass. **achubit** RB. 110, 28, **caneint** LA. 95 = **cenynt** Hg. II. 447, **deueint, syrthyeint** LA. 97, **traweint** Hg. II. 184, **llauuryeint** ib. 213; cf. the subjunctive ket **ỳvein** *though they drank* FB. 66, wyntwy yn llad gyt as **ledeint** *they slaying though they slew them* FB. 276 = a chin ri llethid ve latỳsseint *and before they were slain they had slain* FB. 38, cf. Cymmrod. IX. 67. This **-eint** is an analogical formation to sg. 3 **-ei.**

NOTE.—More peculiar is **nỳ lesseint** BB. 32ᵃ which seems to mean *they were not slain* (cf. **yt lesseint** FB. 285, **lleseint** MA. 194ᵃ), apparently based on **llas** *was slain* ; cf. further **meithyeint** *was reared?* **lledeseint** *were slain?* **colledeint** *were destroyed?* FB. 264, MA. 94ᵇ.

Preterite and Perfect Indicative Active.

132. **sg. 3.** In this person there is a variety of endings.

(a) **-as**, e.g. **bradas** *betrayed*, **caffas** *got*, **gwelas** *saw*.

(b) **-es**, e.g. **agores** *opened*, **dodes** *put*, **gweles** *saw*.

(c) **-is**, e.g. **erchis** *asked*, **edewis** *left*, **gelwis** *called*.

(d) **-wys**, becoming **-ws**, e.g. **bendigwys** and **bendigws** *blessed*, **cyscwys** and **cyscws** *slept*. In the southern dialect **-ws** became the characteristic ending in this person.

(e) **-awd** (i.e. **awđ**), e.g. **parawd** *caused*, **cerdawd** *journeyed*, **parhaawd** *continued*. This is an encroaching ending, whence comes the Mod. literary Welsh ending **-ođ.**

NOTE.—In early poetry there is an absolute ending **-sit** (corresponding to the present ending **-it** (§ 129), e.g. **kewssit** *got*, **prynessid** *bought*, **delyessid** (: **dala**) *held*. Cf. Arch. Cambr. 1873, pp. 151 sq. It corresponds to the O. Bret. ending in **tinsit** gl. sparsit, **toreusit** gl. attriuit.

1 pl., 3 pl. In these persons by **-sam, -sant,** there appear also **-som, -sont.**

Plur.—In the plural there are three types of formation, (a) **-sam,** etc., (b) **-assam,** etc., (c) **-yssam,** etc., e.g.—

(a) **cawsam, cawsawch, cawsant : caffael** *get*, **kymersam, kymersant : cymryt** *take*, **gwelsam, gwelsant : gwelet** *see*.

(b) **dywedassam : dywedut** *say*, **lladassant : llad** *slay*, **nessaassant : nessaü** *approach*.

(c) **dodyssam, dodyssant : dodi** *place*, **kwplayssam : kwplaü** *complete*, **nessayassant : nessaü** *approach*.

133. In Mid.W., as in Mid.Ir., the **s**-preterite has become the prevalent formation, in which the other types of the preterite tend to merge. But particularly in poetry, and especially in the 3 sg., there are examples of two other types of the preterite.

(a) The **t**-preterite (corresponding to the Irish **t**-preterite, e.g. **asbert** *he said* : **asbeir** *says*).

canu *sing* : sg. 1 **ceint** and **ceintum,** sg. 2 **ceuntost,** sg. 3 **cant.**

gwan *pierce* : sg. 1 **gweint,** sg. 3 **gwant.**

cymryt *take* : sg. 3 **kymerth, kymyrth.**

diffryt *protect* : sg. 3 **differth, diffyrth.**

mynet *go*: **aeth** (=Ir. acht) *went* (§ **140**); in composition **doeth** (§ **141**), and sg. 1 **ymdeith** *went about*, sg. 3 **ymdaeth.**

gwneuthur *make*: **gwnaeth** (§ **142**).

magu *nourish*: sg. 3 **maeth,** pl. 3 **maethant.**

dyrreith *returned* (√reg-).

amwyn *protect*: sg. 3 **amwyth.**

dydwyn *bring*: sg. 3 **dydwyth.**

(b) Forms with reduplication, or unreduplicated forms of the type of O.Ir. **rāith** *ran*: **rethid** *runs.*

clybot *hear*: sg. 1 **kigleu** (=Ir. cūala from *cuklova) and **kiglef,** sg. 3 **kigleu.**

adnabot *recognize*: **atwaen** (§ **144**).

dywedut *say*: sg. 3 **dywawt,** also **dywot, dywat** (cf. Ir. adcuaid *has related* from *ad-co-fāith).

godiwes *overtake*: sg. 3 **godiwawd.**

gwaret *help*: sg. 3 **gwarawt** (=Ir. fo-rāith *helped*).

The same form of inflexion is exhibited by:—

amwyn *defend*: sg. 3 **amuc.**

dwyn *lead*: sg. 1 **dugum,** sg. 2 **dugost,** sg. 3 **duc,** pl. 1 **dugam,** pl. 3 **dugant.**

gwneuthur *make*: **goruc** (§ **142**).

Here seems to belong also **amkawd** *said,* pl. 3 **amkeudant,** frequent in the WB. text of Kulhwch and Olwen.

Preterite and Perfect Indicative Passive.

134. In origin the Welsh like the Irish preterite passive developed out of a past participle passive in **-to-,** identical in formation with Latin participles like captus, amatus, etc.

(a) In **llas** (=Ir. -slass): **llad** *slay* and **gwys** (=Ir. -fess): **gwybot** *know*, the **t** of the suffix together with the dental of the root has become **ss, s** (§ **11a**; cf. Lat. missus: mitto, etc.).

(b) **-at,** e.g. **gwelat: gwelet** *see,* **caffat: caffael** *get.*

(c) **-et,** e.g. **dodet: dodi** *place,* **llosged: llosgi** *burn.*

(d) **-it,** e.g. **edewit: adaw** *promise,* **erchit: erchi** *ask,* **gelwit: galw** *call.*

(e) **-wyt,** liable to become **-wt,** e.g. **cymerwyt: cymryt** *take,* **hewyt; heü** *sow,* **lladwyt: llad** *slay,* **kennatawyt: kennataü** *send.*

(f) Forms in **-pwyt,** e.g. **dywespwyt** and **dywetpwyt: dywedut** *say,* **clywspwyt, clywyspwyt: clybot** *hear,* **dechreuspwyt: dechreu** *begin,* **roespwyt: roi** *give,* **kanpwyt: canu** *sing,* **gwanpwyt: gwanu** *pierce,* **ducpwyt: dwyn** *lead,* **maethpwyt: magu** *nourish,* **gwassanaethpwyt: gwassanaethu** *serve,* **talpwyt: talu** *pay.* Cf. Cymmrod. IX. 75 sq.

Pluperfect Indicative.

135. Corresponding to the three types in the plural of the preterite active, there are in the pluperfect three types (a) **-swn,** (b) **-asswn,** (c) **-ysswn,** e.g.:—

(a) **cawssei: caffael** *get,* **gwelsei, gwelsynt,** pass. **gwelsit: gwelet** *see,* **edewssit: adaw** *leave.*

(b) **mynasswn: mynessynt,** pass. **mynassit; mynnu** *desire,* **cysgassei: cysgu** *sleep,* **lladassant,** pass. **lladessit: llad** *slay,* **gnottaessynt: gnottaü** *be accustomed.*

(c) **archyssei,** pass. **erchyssit, archyssit; erchi** *ask,* **managyssei: menegi** *shew,* **lladyssit: llad** *slay,* **mynnessynt: mynnu** *demand,* **gnottayssei: gnottaü** *be accustomed.*

136. (a) In the active there is a periphrastic pluperfect with **-oed** *was* in **athoed** (§ **140**), **doethoed** (§ **141**), **gwnaethoed** (§ **142**). Forms in **-oed** occur also from **caffael** *get,* e.g., sg. 1 **cawssoedwn,** sg. 2 **cawssoedut,** sg. 3 **cawssoed, cassoed, cawssoedyat,** pl. 3 **cassoedynt,** pass. **cassoedit;** further **mynnassoed: mynnu; planasoed; rodassoed, roessoed; rassoed,** pass. **rossoedit: rodi.** Cf. Cymmrod. IX. 76 sq.

(b) In the passive there are some periphrastic forms with **-oed**:— sg. 3 **archadoed** *had been asked*: **erchi** *ask,* **dysgadoed: dysgu** *teach,* **ganadoed, ganydoed: geni** *be born,* **managadoed: menegi** *shew*; further **cathoed: caffael** *get.* Cf. Cymmrod. IX. 77.

Imperative.

137. sg. 2. From denominatives in **-haü a** spreads as an ending to other verbs, e.g. **prydera : pryderu** *be anxious*, **paratoa : paratoï** *prepare*. Further **a** is added again to the denominatives, e.g. **cwplaä : cwplaü** *complete*, **naccaä : naccaü** *refuse*. From **-áä** comes Mod.W. **-á**.

sg. 3. There appears sometimes an ending **-it**, e.g. **bernit** (v.l. **barned**) : **barnu** *judge* MA. 182[b], **elhid : mynet** *go* WB. 31[a], **gobwyllit : gobwyllaw** *take heed* FB. 199, **gwrthledit : gwrthlad** *repulse* LA. 26, **gwrthottit : gwrthot** *repel* FB. 125, **rwydheyt : rwydhaü** *make easy* RB. 228, **madeuit : maddeu** *forgive* Hg. II. 185, **rothit : rodi** *give* BB. 47[a]. It will be observed that these forms shew the subjunctive stem.

Present Subjunctive.

138. In the 3 sg. and 3 pl. the **o** forms become the regular forms in Mid.W. Sometimes **o** spreads to the 1 sg., e.g. **gwysgof** WB. 97. In the pass. an **wy** form appears in **rothwyr** FB. 109.

NOTE.—For **duch** *may he lead*, **gwares** *may he help*, see § 110, note 2.

Past Subjunctive.

139. In the passive by **-it** there is found sometimes **-et : cladhet** WB. 469 = **cledit** RB. 112 : **cladu** *bury*, **gofynnet** WB. p. 220 = **gouynnit** RB. 286 : **govynnu** *ask*, **llafassed : llavassu** *dare* BB. 27[a].

Irregular Verbs.

140. mynet *go*.

Indicative.

Present and Future.

	sing.	plur.
1.	**af**	**awn**
2.	**ey**	**ewch**
3.	**a**	**ant**
pass.	**eir**	

NOTE 1.—sg. 3 absolute O.W. **agit, egit**, Mid.W. **eyt.**

Imperfect and Conditional.

	sing.	plur.
1.	**awn**	**aem**
2.	**aut**	
3.	**aey**	**eynt**
pass.	**eit**	

Preterite and Perfect.

(a)	1.	**euthum**	**aetham**
	2.	**aethost**	**aethawch**
	3.	**aeth**	**aethant, aethont**
	pass.	**aethpwyt**	

NOTE 2.—sg. 3 absolute **eithyd** FB. 179, 188.

(b)	1.	**athwyf, adwyf, ethwyf, edwyf**	**ethym**
	2.	**athwyt, adwyt**	
	3.	**ethyw, edyw**	**ethynt, edynt**

NOTE 3.—Forms (b) have a perfect sense, cf. § 141, note 4.

Pluperfect.

1.	**athoedwn**	
2.		
3.	**athoed, adoed**	**athoedynt**

Imperative.

1.		**awn**
2.	**dos**	**ewch**
3.	**aet**	**aent**

NOTE 4.—sg. 3 also **elhid** (§ 137).

Subjunctive.

Present.

1.	**el(h)wyf**	**el(h)om**
2.	**el(h)ych**	**el(h)och**
3.	**el**	**el(h)wynt, el(h)ont**
pass.	**el(h)er**	

NOTE 5.—Also, in future sense, sg. 3 **aho** RB. 140, 16, pl. 3 **ahont** FB. 128.

PAST.

	sing.	plur.
1.	el(h)wn	
2.	el(h)ut	
3.	el(h)ei	el(h)ynt
pass.	(el(h)it)	

141. dyvot *come.*

INDICATIVE.

PRESENT AND FUTURE.

1.	deuaf	deuwn, down
2.	deuy, doy	deuwch
3.	daw	deuant, doant

NOTE 1.—sg. 2 doit (i.e. doyđ) BB. 51^{b}1.

NOTE 2.—In poetry there is also another set of forms in a future sense:

1	dybydaf	
3.	dybyd, dyvyd, dybydawt deubyd dypi, dybi, dyvi deupi, deubi	dybydant

NOTE 3.—Preceded by dy-: sg. 3 dydaw, pl. 3 dydeuant, pass. dydeuhawr.

IMPERFECT AND CONDITIONAL.

1.	down	
2.	dout, deuyt	
3.	deuei, deuhei, doey, doi	doynt
pass.	deuit	

PRETERITE AND PERFECT.

(a)	1.	deuthum, doethum	doetham
	2.	deuthost, doethost, daethost	doethawch, doethoch
	3.	doeth, deuth, daeth	deuthant, doethant, dothant, doethont
	pass.	deuthpwyt, doethpwyt	

		sing.	plur.
(b)	1.		
	2.	dyvuost	
	3.	dybu, dyvu, deubu	dybuant, dyvuant
(c)	1.	dothwyf, dodwyf	dodym, deuthym
	2.	dothwyt, dodwyt	dodywch, doethywch
	3.	doethyw, dothyw, dodyw, dedyw	dodynt, dethynt

NOTE 4.—Forms (b) are chiefly poetical, but dyvuost, dyvu, dyvuant occur in the prose of WB. Forms (c) are perfect in sense; in later Mid.W. they are replaced by forms (a), e.g. deuth RB. 126, 9=dodẏw WB. 486, deuthum RB. 105, 21=dothwẏf WB. 459, doeth RB. 115, 25, deuth RB. 126, 9, =dodẏw WB. 473, 486.

PLUPERFECT.

1.	dathoedywn	
2.		
3.	doethoed, daethoed, dathoed, dothoed	doethoedynt, dothoedynt

IMPERATIVE.

1.		down
2.	dyret, dabre	dowch
3.	deuet, doet	deuent, doent

NOTE 5.—There is also a 3 sg. deuit Hg. II. 51, and delit Hg. I. 4, 307.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

PRESENT.

1.	del(h)wyf	del(h)om
2.	del(h)ych	del(h)och
3.	del	del(h)wynt, del(h)ont
pass.	del(h)er	

NOTE 6.—There are also forms sg. 1 dybwyf, sg. 3 dyppo, dyffo, dyvo, deupo, dideuho, pl. 3 dyffont, pass. dyffer.

PAST.

1.	del(h)wn	
2.	del(h)ut	del(h)ewch
3.	del(h)ei	del(h)ynt

NOTE 7.—There is also 3 sg. dybei and dyffei.

142. gwneuthur *to make.*

Present and Future.

	sing.	plur.
1.	gwnaf	gwnawn
2.	gwney	gwnewch
3.	gwna	gwnant
pass.	gwneir	

Note 1.—Fut. sg. 3 gunahaud BB. 27[b], gwnawt FB. 224, gwnaw FB. 126, 150, pl. 3 gwnahawnt FB. 124.

Imperfect and Conditional.

1.	gwnawn	gwnaem
2.	gwnaut	gwnaewch
3.	gwnaei	gwnaent
pass.	gwneit	

Preterite and Perfect.

(a)	1.	gorugum	gorugam
	2.	gorugost	
	3.	goruc	gorugant
	pass.	gorucpwyt	
(b)	1.	gwneuthum	gwnaetham, gwnaethom
	2.	gwnaethost	gwnaethawch
	3.	gwnaeth, gwneuth	gwnaethant, gwnaethont
	pass.	gwnaethpwyt	

Note 2.—In poetry there is also sg. 3 goreu, cf. Mid.Bret. guereu.

Note 3.—The gwnaeth forms encroach at the expense of the goruc forms, e.g. gorucpwyt WB. 452, 477, 487 = gwnaethpwyt RB. 100, 118, 127.

Pluperfect.

1.	gwnathoedwn	
2.	gwnaethodut	
3.	gwnaethoed, gwnathoed, gwnadoed	gwnathoedynt
pass.	gwnathoedit	

Imperative.

	sing.	plur.
1.		gwnawn
2.	gwna	gwnewch
3.	gwnaet	gwnaent
pass.	gwnel(h)er	

Subjunctive.

Present.

1.	gwnel(h)wyf	
2.	gwnel(h)ych	gwnel(h)och
3.	gwnel	gwnel(h)wynt, gwnel(h)ont
pass.	gwnel(h)er	

Note 4.—sg. 3 also gunelwỳ BB. 24[a], gunaho BB. 35[b], gwnaho FB. 119, 235, pl. 3 gvnahont BB. 31[a], gwnahon FB. 155. With fut. ending gwnelawr FB. 213.

Past.

1.	gwnel(h)wn	
2.	gwnel(h)ut	
4.	gwnel(h)ei	gwnel(h)ynt
pass.	gwnel(h)it	

143. gwybot *know.*

Indicative.

Present.

1.	gwnn	gwdam, gwdom
2.	gwydost, gwdost	gwydawch, gwdawch, gwdoch
3.	gwyr	gwydant, gwdant
pass.	gwys	

Imperfect.

1.	gwydwn, gwydywn	gwydem, gwydyem
2.	gwydut, gwydyut	
3.	gwydat, gwydyat	gwydynt
pass.	gwydit	

ITERATIVE PRESENT AND FUTURE.

	sing.	plur.
1.	gwybydaf	
2.	gwybydy	gwybydwch
3.	gwybyd	gwybydant
pass.	gwybydir	

NOTE 1.—In poetry there is also 3 sg. gwybi.

ITERATIVE IMPERFECT AND CONDITIONAL.

1.		gwybydem
2.	gwybydut	gwybydwch
3.	gwybydei	
pass.	gwybydit	

NOTE 2.—This comes to be used for the past subjunctive, e.g. Bei ath wybydem *if we had known thee* FB. 122.

PRETERITE AND PERFECT.

1.	gwybuum	
2.	gwybuost	
3.	gwybu	gwybuant
pass.	gwybuwyt	

PLUPERFECT.

3.		gwybuyssynt
pass.	gwybuassit	

IMPERATIVE.

1.		gwybydwn
2.	gwybyd	gwybydwch
3.	gwybydet, gwypet	gwybydent
pass.	gwybyder	

SUBJUNCTIVE.

PRESENT.

1.	gwypwyf	gwypom
2.	gwypych	gwypoch
3.	gwypwy, gwypo	gwypwynt, gwypont
pass.	gwyper	

PAST.

	sing.	plur.
1.	gwypwn	
2.	gwyput	
3.	gwypei	gwypynt

144. adnabot *recognize.*

INDICATIVE.

PRESENT.

1.	adwaen, adwen, atwen	atwaenwn
2.	atwaenost	etweynwch, atweynwch, etwenwch
9.	edwyn, atwen	atwaenant

IMPERFECT.

1.	atwaenwn	adwaenam
2.	atwaenut	
3.	atwaenat, atwaeniat	atwaenynt
pass.	etweinit	

ITERATIVE PRESENT AND FUTURE.

1.	adnabydaf, etnebydaf	adnabydwn
2.	adnabydy	
3.	adnebyd, ednebyd	adnabydant
pass.	adnabydir	

ITERATIVE IMPERFECT AND CONDITIONAL.

1.		adnabydem
2.		
3.	adnebydei	

PRETERITE AND PERFECT.

1.	adnabuum	adnabuam
2.		
3.	adnabu	adnabuant

IMPERATIVE.

	sing.	plur.
1.		
2.	**ednebyd, adnebyd**	**adnebydwch**
3.		

SUBJUNCTIVE.

PRESENT.

1.		**adnapom**
2.	**adnepych**	
3.	**adnapo**	**adnappoent, adnappont**
pass.	**adnaper**	

PAST.

1.	
2.	
3.	**adnapei**
pass.	**adnepit**

145. caffael, caffel, cahel, cael *get.*

INDICATIVE.

Pres. and Fut.:—**caffaf, ceffy, ceiff,** etc.; also **caf, cehy, cey,** etc.

Imperf. and Cond.:—**caffwn,** etc, also **cawn,** etc.

Pret. and Perf.:—**ceveis, ceis, ceveist, cavas, cawssam, cawssawch, cawssant, cawssont;** pass. **caffat, cavat, cahat, cat.**

Pluperf.:—(*a*) **cawsswn,** etc., (*b*) **cawssoedwn,** etc. (§ 136[a]).

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Pres.:—**caffwyf,** etc.

Past:—**caffwn,** etc., also **cahwn, cawn,** etc.

NOTE.—For an enumeration of forms see Cymmrod. IX. 111 sq.

146. rodi, roi *give.*

The peculiarity of this verb is that it has forms with and without **đ,** e.g. ind. pres. sg. 2 **rody** and **roy,** imper. sg. 2 **ro,** subj. pres. sg. 3 **rotho, rodo** and **ro.** In the ind. pret. by **rodeis, rodeist, rodes** occur **roesum, roesost, roes,** and in the pass. by **rodet,** also **roespwyt.** In the plup. by the regular forms occur sg. 2 **roessut,** sg. 3 **roessei, royssei, roessoed, rasoed,** pl. 3 **rassoedynt.**

147. tawr, dawr.

This verb is used impersonally, e.g. **ny-m-tawr** *it does not concern me* RB. 284, 28, **pathawr** (=**pa-th-đawr**) *what does it concern thee?* RB. 279, 19, **nȳ-m-torei** WB. 172=**ny-m-torei** RB. I. 238, *it would not concern me,* **ni-m-dorbi** BB. 30[b]. In the same sense is found the compound **didawr;** verb. noun **didarbot** Hg. I. 320.

148. moes *give.*

Only as imperative:—sg. 2 **moes,** pl. 2 **moeswch.**

149. hwde *take.*

Used only as imperative.

150. med *says.*

Inflected in the present and imperfect; it is used in quotation, e.g. a wdost di pwy yw? heb hi. gwnn, heb ynteu. Edyrn uab Nud **yw, med** ef *"dost thou know who he is?" says she. "Yes," said he. "He is Edyrn son of Nudd, he says,"* RB. 259; y gouynnei beth yssyd yman. Broch, **medynt** wynteu *he asked what was there. "A badger," said they* RB. 15.

151. heb *says.*

This word, of adverbial origin and uninflected, is used like Ir. **ol** to give the very words of the speaker, **heb ef** *says he,* **heb wynt** *they say,* etc.

Before a proper name **heb** is followed by **y, yr,** e.g. **heb y Goewin, heb y Gwenhwyfar, heb yr Arthur.** The same is not infrequently found before a pronoun, e.g. **heb y mi** RB. 32, 7, **heb yr ynteu** RB. 245, 181=**heb ynteu** WB. 386, p. 217, **heb yr ef** WB. 386=**heb ef** RB. 245, **heb yr wynt** WB. 185=**eb wynt** WB. p. 93[a]; cf. Mod. W. **ebr.** No satisfactory explanation of this has yet been given.

THE SUBSTANTIVE VERB **bot** *to be.*

Paradigm.

INDICATIVE.

152. PRESENT.

	sing.	plur.
1.	**wyf**	**ym**
2.	**wyt**	**ywch**
3.	**iw, yw**	**ynt**
	mae	**maent**
	oes	
	ys	
	neut	
	nyt *is not*	
	nat *is not* (dependent)	
	os *if it is*	
	yssit *there is*	**yssydynt**
	ossit *if there is*	
	yssyd, syd, yssy, sy, rel. *who, which is, are*	
	Impersonal **ys, ydys**	

PAST.

1.	**oedwn**	**oedem**
2.	**oedut, oedyt**	**oedewch**
3.	**oed, oedat, oedyat**	**oedynt**
	Impersonal **oedet**	

NOTE 1.—There are also forms preceded by **ytt, yd: yttwyf, yttiw, ydiw, yttoedwn,** etc.

ITERATIVE PRESENT AND FUTURE.

1.	**bydaf**	**bydwn**
2.	**bydy**	**bydwch**
3.	**byd**	**bydant**

NOTE 2.—Specially future forms: sg. 3 **bythawt, bydhawt, bydawt, biawt, bi**; pl. 3 **bydawnt.**

NOTE 3.—In poetry there seems to be a consuetudinal sg. 3 **bit,** cf. FB. 245, 247, where the imperative sense does not suit.

ITERATIVE IMPERFECT AND CONDITIONAL.

	sing.	plur.
1.	**bydwn**	**bydem**
2.	**bydut**	**bydewch**
3.	**bydei**	**bydynt**
impers.	**bydit**	

NOTE 4.—Poetical forms: sg. 3 **buei, bwyat,** pl. 3 **buyint** (i.e. **bwyynt**).

PRETERITE AND PERFECT.

1.	**buum, bum**	**buam**
2.	**buost**	**buawch**
3.	**bu**	**buant, buont**
impers.	**buwyt**	

PLUPERFECT.

1.	**buasswn**	
2.	**buassut**	
3.	**buassei**	**buassynt, buessynt, buyssynt**

IMPERATIVE.

1.		**bydwn**
2.	**byd**	**bydwch**
3.	**bit, boet, poet**	**bint**

NOTE 5.—**bynt** is clearly imperative BCh. 17, cf. **bint** LA. 81. RB. 105 has **bint** where WB. 457 has the future **bythawd.**

SUBJUNCTIVE.

PRESENT.

1.	**bwyf, bof**	**bom, bwym**
2.	**bych**	**boch**
3.	**bo**	**bwynt, boent, bont**

NOTE 6.—There are, particularly in poetry, analogical subjunctive forms from the indicative stem: sg. 1 **bydwyf,** sg. 2 **bydych,** sg. 3 **bytho,** pl. 3 **bydont.**

PAST.

1.	**bewn**	**beym**
2.	**beut**	
3.	**bei**	**beynt**

NOTE 7.—Both in poetry and in prose the past indicative is often used for the subjunctive, e.g. **kyny bydwn** WB. 172=**kyn ny bewn** RB. 238. The impersonal **pan uythit** WB. 104=**pan vydit** RB. 76 is a subjunctive form based on the indicative.

Remarks on **bot.**

Present and Imperfect.

153. The precise syntactical functions of the various forms of these tenses still require a detailed investigation, particularly their uses in early poetry. From the material to hand the following points of prose usage may be noted, (A) where the forms have the function of a substantive verb predicating existence, (B) where the forms are merely copular.

154. A. Substantive verb.

(a) In the 3 sg. pres. *he is*, etc., is expressed by **mae,** pl. **maent,** unless the verb is preceded by the negative or by other preverbal particles and conjunctions which are not followed by the particle **yd** (§ **93 g** sq.), e.g. yma **y mae** brenhin Iwerdon *here is the king of Ireland*; o ellwng Riannon or poen **y mae** yndaw *from releasing Riannon from the punishment in which she is*; nat gan y vod **y mae** yn dyuot *that it is not with his will that he is coming*; **y mae** y enw yn barawt *his name is ready*; **y maent** yn symudaw enweu *they are changing names.* **Mae** is also used in the sense of *where are?* e.g. **mae** Ynwl iarll . . . ae wreic ae uerch. **maent** (= **y maent** RB. 256) yn ỳ loft racco *where are Ynwl and his wife and his daughter? They are in the chamber yonder* WB. 400. In the sense of *there is, there are* **yssit, yssydynt** are found, e.g. **yssit** nas keffych *there is something that you will not get* RB. 121 sq.; chwedleu porth y gennyt. **ysydynt** gennyf *hast thou tidings of the gate? I have* RB. 126. If the verb is preceded by a negative, etc., then (*α*) if the subject is definite **yttiu, ydyw,** pl. **yttynt, ydynt** are used, (*β*) if the subject is indefinite **oes** is used, e.g.—

(*α*) **nyt yttiu** y clawr y lle kyntaf y kefeist *the board is not where thou didst get it first* RB. 241; **nat ydiw** y uorwyn honno yn y byt *that that maiden is not in the world* RB. 113; **nyt yttynt** namyn pedwar *they are only four* CM. 46; **neut ydynt** yn gynyon boneu vy esgyll *the stumps of my wings are like wedges* RB. 130; **a ỳttiw** Kei ỳn llỳs Arthur. **yttiw** *is Kei in Arthur's court? He is* WB. 143.

(*β*) **nyt oes** yndi neb nyth adnapo *there is no one in it who will not recognize thee* RB. 3; **a oes** borthawr. **oes** *is there a porter? There is* RB. 103. With **o** *if*, the definite form is **ot ydiw,** e.g. **ot ydiw** yg karchar *if he is in prison* RB. 179, the indefinite **ossit,** e.g. **osit** rann y mi oth uab di *if I have any part in thy son* RB. 109; **osid** ay hammehuo *if there is any one who doubts it* BCh. 53. The relative form is **yssyd,** e.g. y gwr hir **yssyd** yno *the tall man who is there*; pa ryw chwedleu **yssyd** gennyt. nyt oes namyn da *what kind of news hast thou? Only good news.*

Note 1.—In poetry **yssit** is found also with a definite subject, e.g. **yssit** imi teir kadeir *I have three seats* FB. 154; **yssit** ym argluyd *I have a lord* MA. 176[a]. It seems to be a disappearing form, cf. **y mae** yni beth a wnelom *we have something to do* Hg. 1. 10, **y mae** ym ..a wnelwyf 69. **Ossit** also seems to be a disappearing form; for **ossit** a uynho *if there is anyone who desires* WB. 122, RB. 197 has: **or byd** neb kyehofnet.

(b) In the first and second persons the subject is always definite, and here after negatives etc., **yttwyf, ydwyf** are usual both in the present and in the imperfect, e.g. **nyt yttwyf** (= **nỳt ydwyf i** WB. 437) yn ansawd *I am not in a condition* WB. p. 219; **nyt yttoedwn** i yn holi dim ytti *I was not claiming anything from thee* RB. 5. In the third persons of the imperfect there is in the Mabinogion a very general distinction after negatives etc., between **(a) yttoed, ydoed** when the subject is definite, **(b) oed** when the subject is indefinite, e.g. (a) ỳdrỳch ỳn ỳ chỳlch a oruc **a ỳttoed** ef ỳn deffroi *she looked about her to see if he was stirring* WB. 424; **pann yttoed** (= **pan ydoed** WB. 99) y dyd yn dyuot *when the day was coming* RB. 72; **tra yttoed** ef yn hynny *while he was in that* RB. 133; **ỳnỳ ỳttoỳd** ỳ chwỳs ar gwaet yn dwyn lleuuer ỳ llỳgeit udunt *until the sweat and the blood were taking the light of their eyes from them* WB. 398; **(b) nyt oed** dim yno *there was nothing there* RB.; Gereint a ofynnnawd y wr y ty **a oed** getymdeithon idaw . . . oes, heb ynteu *Gereint asked the master of the house if he had friends.* "*I have,*" *said he.*

Note 2.—But there are a good many instances of (b for (a): **nat oes** (= **nat ydiw** RB. 113) hi yn y byt *that she is not in the world* WB. 470; kwt ynt plant y gwr *where are the children of the man?* WB. 453; **pan oed** y dyd yn goleuhau *when the day was becoming light* RB. 72; **yny oed** yn y eidaw ef Ardudwy *till Ardudwy was in his possession* RB. 77; yny oed y

gwaet yn lliwaw y llenn *till the blood was colouring the mantle* WB. 391 = RB. 249; **yny oed** (=**hyny yttoed** WB. p. 218) eu llygeit yn colli eu lleuuer *till their eyes were losing their light* WB. 435 = RB. 283.

NOTE 3.—In a number of cases the **ytt-**, **yd-** forms are found not preceded by a negative, etc.; berth **yd ytwyt** (=**yd wyt** RB. 115) *finely thou art* WB. 473; yth ewyllys **yd ydym** *we are at thy will* RB. 66; hyt **yd ydiw** dayar *as long as the earth is* WB. 459 = RB. 105; ar hynny **yd yttoed** yn deffroi *thereupon he was stirring* WB. p. 212; yma **yd yttoedwn** (=**yd oedwn** WB. 441, RB. 287) yn kerdet *there I was journeying* WB. p. 221; ual yd yttoed yn kerdet WB. 170 = RB. 236; ymlodeu dy dewred **yd yttwyt** (=**yt vyt** WB. 413 = **yd wyt** RB. 266) *thou art in the flower of thy might* WB. p. 207; for: o hynny **yd yttoed** RB. 218, WB. 149 has ac hyny **yttoed**, and for ae **yd yttoed** yn troi RB. 215 WB. 145 has y doeth **yd ydoed** yn troi. So in the present impersonal forms occur: vyg karcharu **yd ydys** (**yd ydys** om. WB. 235) *I am imprisoned* RB. 187; yn y gyveistydyaw **yd ydys** (=**yd yttys** WB. 167) *it is being besieged* RB. 233, by **yd ys** yn kadw or enw hwnnw *that name is preserved* RB. 60; **yd ys** yn lluydaw yn an hol *there is a hosting after us* RB. 63, 1.

NOTE 4.—In Hg. I. **yttiw**, etc., are not unfrequently copula forms, e.g. gwell **yttiw** vy marw *it is better that I should die* 145, pa un **ytwyt** *who art thou* 95; cf. hyny **yttoedynt** (=**ynу oedynt** WB. 446, RB. 291) kystal ac y buont oreu eiroet *till they were as good as they had ever been* WB. p. 223.

155. B. Copula.

(a) In the third person of the present there is a variety of forms:—

(α) **ys,** used (like Ir. is) at the beginning of a clause before its predicate, e.g. **is gwell** *it is better;* **is gohelyon** hwnn *he is a remnant;* **ys mi** ae heirch *it is I who ask her.* It is often preceded by the conjunction **can,** e.g. **kanys** gwell yw genyt ti *since thou preferrest*; **kanys** arnam ni y berneist *since it is on us that thou hast passed judgment.*

NOTE 1.—In poetry **ys** is used with an infixed personal pronoun, e.g. **yssim** ediuar *I repent* BB. 51[a], cf. O.Ir. issum ēcen *it is necessary for me.*

(β) **yw,** used when the predicate precedes, e.g. **negessawl yw** wrthyt *he has business with thee;* **pwy yw** hi *who is she?* **miui yw** Llwyt *I am Llwyd;* **y deu lygat yw** y dwy lynn *the two lakes are his two eyes;* nyt **gwr yw** hwnnw *that is not a man;* kanys **mawr yw** *since it is great.* It is also used after the conjunction **pan,** e.g. y dyuedassant wynteu **pan yw** merchet ieirll oedynt *they said that they were daughters of earls* (cf. § 226, 5).

(γ) **ynt** is the plural form, e.g. **bychein ynt** wynteu *they are small*; nyt **ynt iach** *they are not whole.*

(δ) **nyt** is a negative form, e.g. **nyt oet** ymi gwreicka *it is not time for me to wed*; **nyt eg·ylyon** ỏ rei racko *those yonder are not angels*; **nyt wyntwy** bioed yr antur *it is not to them that the adventure belonged.*

(ε) **nat** is the dependent negative, e.g. menegwch . . . **nat hawd** gennyf ynheu nae lad ef nae diuetha *declare that it is not easy for me to slay him or to destroy him.*

(ζ) **os** is the form with **o** *if,* e.g. **os da** gennyt ti *if it seems good to thee*; **os wynteu** ae med hi *if it is they that have it in their power.*

(η) **ae** is the interrogative = *is it?* e.g. **ae gwell** *is it better?* **ae kyscu** yd wyt ti *art thou asleep?*

(θ) **ponyt** is the interrogative = *is it not?* e.g. **ponyt** dros y neb yssyd yna *is it not for one who is there?*

(ι) **neut** is the copula form with the particle **neu** (§ 220), e.g. **neut araf** *he is gentle.*

(κ) The relative form is positively **yssyd,** negatively **nyt,** e.g. kanys mi **yssyd athro** itt *for it is I who am thy teacher*; gwaew **nyt gwaeth** *a spear that is not worse.*

(λ) **mae** seems to be used where according to § **159** the predicate follows, e.g. am hỏnnỏ **ỏ may reit** ỏ titheu uot *therefore it is necessary for thee to be* WB. 396, o achaws hynny **y mae dygassawc** yr adar yr tylluan *because of that the birds are enemies to the owl* RB. 80; ỏn **ỏ mae goreu** y gwyr *where the men are best* WB. 119. **Mae** is used also in indirect speech, e.g. menegi ỏ Arthur **mae** mi ath vỏrỏawd *to declare to Arthur that it is I who have thrown thee* WB.; ereyll a deueyt **e may** hyn eu y naud *others say that this is his protection* BCh. 9.

(μ) Otherwise the forms **wyf,** etc., are used for the copula, e.g. **pwy wyt** *who art thou,* **yd ym** drist ni *we are sad,* nyt **oed ef nes** idi *he was no nearer to her.*

bydaf and bydwn.

156. bydaf is used:—

(a) As an iterative or consuetudinal present, e.g. mi a **uydaf** borthawr y Arthur bop duw kalan Ionawr *I am Arthur's gate-*

keeper every New Year's Day RB. 103, 7; lle ny bo dysc ny **byd** dawn *where there is no learning there is no gift* FB. 244.

(**b**) As an historical present, e.g. ual **y bydant** yn eisted wynt a welynt gwreic *as they were sitting they saw a woman* RB. 8; a chyuaros Gereint a oruc yny **uyd** yn agos idi *and she waited for Gereint till he was near her* RB. 271, 1.

(**c**) As a future, the most common use, e.g. y gyt a mi **y bydy** yn dyscu marchogaeth *thou shalt be with me learning horsemanship*; mi a **vydaf** athro it *I shall be thy teacher.*

157. bydwn is used:—

(**a**) As an iterative or consuetudinal past, e.g. a phei vwyhaf uei y vrys ef pellaf **vydei** hitheu y wrthaw ef *the greater his haste the further she was from him* RB. 9, 5.

(**b**) Describing a single action in past tense: ual **y bydynt** yn eisted wynt a welynt y wreic *as they were sitting they saw the woman* RB. 9, 29.

(**c**) As a secondary future or conditional, e.g. wynt a welsant or kaffei vedic da **y bydei** vyw *they saw that if he got a good leech he would live* RB. 212, 12.

Past Subjunctive.

158. The following forms are to be noted: **pei yt uewn i** (=**bei etuǒni** WB. 71) yn dechreu vy ieuenctit *if I had been in the beginning of my youth* RB. 51, 24; **beyt uei** ar y ffuryf iawn *if she had been in her proper form* RB. 175, 18; ar mul ae kanlynawd megys **pei at uei** milgi *and the mule followed him as if it had been a hound* Hg. I., 336; hi a vynnei **pet vei** hi a Lawnslot yn y fforest *she would that she and Launcelot were in the forest* Hg. I., 368; a **phettut** un wreic di or byt, ny mynnwn i ddim ohonat ti *and if thou wert the only woman in the world, I would desire nothing of thee* Hg. II., 315. Like the modern **pettwn** these forms seem to express unreality.

Position of the Copula.

159. In Middle Welsh prose in positive affirmative sentences (with the exception of **ys** which always precedes the predicate) the normal position of the predicate is before the copula, e.g. **Lunet wyf i** *I am Lunet*, **cennadeu ym ni** *we are messengers*, **llawen vu** *he was glad*, **reit vyd** *it will be necessary*, **trwy gynghor Branwen uu** hynny oll *all that was through the advice of Branwen.* But the predicate follows the copula in the imperative, in negative and interrogative sentences, in subordinate clauses, and very generally when an adverb or an adverbial phrase precedes, e.g. **a vo penn bit bont** *let him who is head be bridge*, **nyt da** dy gyghor *thy advice is not good*, **a wyt uorwyn** *art thou a maiden?* **o byd reit** *if it is necessary*, **tra vu da** *as long as it was good*, **ual y bydynt gadarnach** *so that they would be stronger*, **paham ydwyf trist i** *why am I sad?* **yna y bu marw** *there he died*, **undyd ym penn y vlwydyn y bu barawt** *on the same day at the end of the year it was ready.* But after adverbs and adverbial phrases there are instances where the predicate precedes, e.g. **yna ryued uu** gan Arthur hynny *then Arthur wondered at that* Hg. I., 339; **am hynny reit vyd** *therefore it will be necessary* Hg. I., 311 (by **am hynny y byd reit** 307); **ar eil vlwydyn mab mawr oed** *and the second year he was a big boy* RB. 69. 4.

NOTE 1.—This order seems to have developed from sentences in which a copula form **ys**, etc., preceded, such as, e.g. **canys gwr uuassei** lit. *since it is a man that he had been*, **os byw vyd** lit. *if it is alive that he shall be.* Thus the development would be parallel to that of sentences like **Peredur a oruc** *Peredur did* (§ 85).

NOTE 2.—In the early poetry the copula freely precedes the predicate, as in Irish. And in the more archaic prose there are instances of the same order, e.g. **oed dyhed** (=**ys oed gryssyn** RB. 116) kelu y ryw was hwnn *it were a grievous thing to hide such a lad as that* WB. 475; **oed melynach, oed gwynnach** WB. 476=**melynach oed, gwynnach oed** RB. 117; **oed reit** WB. 487=**asoed reit** RB. 126, 27; **oed glyssyn** WB. 151=**ys oed gryssyn** RB. 220; **oed dyhed mawr, oed iawn** RB. 173; **oed well** RB. 176. As to **as oed, ys oed** the **as, ys** is in origin the infixing particle **a** (§ 94) with an infixed pronoun which has become meaningless, cf. **as bwyf** *may I be!* MA. 142^{b}; this usage has developed from cases like **ys caffo drugared** *may he find mercy!* MA. 224^{b}, where formally **s** may be an anticipation of the object.

Compounds of bot.

160. ar-gan-vot *perceive*, can-vot *perceive*, cyv-ar-vot *encounter*, dar-vot *to be ended*, gor-vot *overcome*, han-vot *to be sprung*.

Indicative.

Present.

	sing.	plur.
1.	canhwyf; handwyf, hanwyf, henwyf	handym, hanym, henym
2.	handwyt, hanwyt, henwyt	
3.	cenyw; deryw, derw; henyw	derynt; henynt

Note 1.—sg. 3 handit RB. 71, 178, and frequently in poetry; cf. *Cymmrod.* IX. 116, CZ. III. 389. hanvit Hg. I. 200.

Imperfect.

	sing.	plur.
2.	handoedut	
3.	canoed; daroed; handoed, hanoed	hannoedynt

Future.

1.	gorvydaf	gorvydwn
2.	gorvydy; henbydy	cyvarvydwch
3.	cyvervyd; dervyd; hanbyd, henbyd	
pass.	gorvydit	

Iterative Imperfect and Conditional.

3.	cyvarvydei; gorvydei; hanbydei	gorvydynt
pass.	gorvydit	

Note 2.—sg. 3 handei RB. 85.

Preterite and Perfect.

1.	arganvum; cyvarvum; gorvum	darvuam; gorvuam
2.	cyvarvuost; gorvuost	gorvuawch, gorvuoch
3.	arganvu; darvu; gorvu,	arganvuant; gorvuant
pass.	arganvuwyt; cyvarvuwyt; gorvuwyt	

Pluperfect.

3.	cyvarvuassei; darvuassei; gorvuassei	
pass.	gorvuessyt	

Imperative.

3.	hanvit

Note 3.—sg. 3 derffit RB. 155.

Subjunctive.

Present.

1.		cyvarffom; gorffom
2.	henpych	
3.	arganffo; cyvarffo; darffo; gorpo, gorffo; hanffo	cyvarvoent
pass.	gorffer	

Past.

3.	cyvarffei; darffei; hanffei	cyverffynt

Pieu.

161. The primary use of **pieu** is in interrogation, direct or indirect, in the sense of *whose is?* e.g. **pieu** y gaer, heb wynt. nyt oes yn y byt ny wypo **pieu** y gaer honn "*whose is the city?*" *said they.* "*There is no one in the world who does not know to whom this city belongs*" RB. 126; Peredur a ovynnawd **pioedynt** gwyr wy *Peredur asked whose men they were* Hg. I. 314. But it is

frequently used with lenation **bieu**, etc., but not preceded by relative **a**, in a non-interrogative sense *to whom belongs*, e.g. Effrawc iarll **bioed** iarllaeth y gogled *to Effrawc the earl belonged the earldom of the north* RB. 193, 1; Duw **bioedynt** *they belonged to God* Hg I. 426. The inflexion follows that of **bot**, e.g.

INDICATIVE.

Pres.:—Sg. 2. **piwyt**; 3. **pieu**; pl. 3. **piewynt.**

Imperf.:—Sg. 3. **pieuoed, pioed, piewed, pieuat**; pl 3. **pioedynt.**

Fut.:—Sg. 3. **pieivyd**: pl. 1. **pieivydwn.**

Condit.:—Sg. 3. **pieivydei.**

Pret.:—Sg. 3. **pieivu, pieuu.**

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Pres.:—Sg. 3. **pieuvo.**

Past:—Sg. 3. **pieiffei, pieuvei.**

NOTE.—cf. Bezz Beitr. XVII. 292 sq. In: ni ae **pieifydwn** *we shall possess them* CM. pieu has developed into a transitive verb *to possess*, as it did in Cornish, cf. Cymmrod. IX. 100.

THE PREPOSITION.

162. ac, a *with*; with the article **ar**; with possessive pronouns **am, ath, ae** etc., e.g. minneu a chwaryaf **a thitheu** *I shall play with thee*; wrth ryuelu **a Gwrtheyrn** *to fight with Vortigern*; yny oedynt **gynefin ac ef** *till they were familiar with him*; taraw a oruc Owein **a chledyf** *he struck Owein with a sword*; llanw crochan **a dwfyr** *to fill a vessel with water*; **taw ath ucheneidaw** *have done with thy sighing*; **peidaw a bwyta** a oruc *he stopped eating*; in **amvin** ev terwin **a guir** Dulin *defending their land from the men of Dublin.* It is often used after verbs compounded with **ym**, e.g. **ymadaw** a oruc Arthur **ar llyn** *Arthur left the lake*; **ymgolli ae gedymdeithon** *to lose his comrades;* a doy y **ymwelet ac Arthur** *wilt thou come to see Arthur?*

163. ach. In the phrase **ach y law** *beside him.*

164. am (Ir. imm) *about, on account of*, e.g. corn canu **am y vynwgl** *a horn about his neck*; gwisc **ymdanat** *dress thyself*; **am y uagwyr ar karcharawr** *on the other side of the wall from the prisoner*; iawn y medreis i **am benn** y carw *rightly did I determine about the head of the stag*; hyt na dywedit **am vn vorwyn** vwy noc **amdanei** *so that there was not more talk about any maiden than about her*; **am hanner bwytta** amofyn a oruc y gwr *about the middle of the meal the man asked*; haelaf oed **am rodyon** *he was most liberal with respect to gifts*; y oual **am y wreic** *his anxiety about his wife*; or sarhaet a wnathoed **am adaw** y llys *for the outrage which he had committed in leaving the court*; dothyw **am Oweyn** *Owein has perished* MA. 252ᵃ; a deryv **am Keduyv** *has K. perished?* BB. 1ᵃ; trist oed **am angeu** y uab *he was grieved because of the death of his son.* In the phrase **am benn**, e.g. yn y del y iarll . . . **am penn** y lle hwnn *until the earl comes to attack this place*; pan yttoedynt pawb yn mynu mynet **am penn** y Saeson *when they were all eager to attack the Saxons.*

ymdan, e.g. **ymdan y varch** *about his horse.*

y am (O.W. **diam**) *from off*, e.g. y dynnu y wisc hela **y amdanaw** *to pull off his hunting dress*; dogyn o arueu **y am hynny** *plenty of arms besides* WB. p. 225; o lu uii nyn **e am e mam ay tat** ae y brodir a chuarit *by the oath of seven people including her mother and her father and her brothers and her sisters* BCh. 36.

165. ar *on*, etc., **ar uarch** *on a horse*; Lawnslot a eistedawd y vwyta **ar y bwrd** *Launcelot sat down at the table to eat*; **edrych** a wnaeth Manawydan **ar y dref** *Manawyddan looked upon his town*; **y dodet ar yr avon** Hafren *the river was called the Severn*; ae geuyn **ar yr heul** *and his back towards the sun*; cymryt cleuyt **arnaw** a oruc *he pretended to be ill*; rac meint karyat y brenhin **arnei** *because of the greatness of the king's love for her*; rac caffael y gaer **arnaw** *lest the city should be taken on him*; **y wassanaethu arnaw** *to wait upon him*; **taerwn arnei** ehun diuetha y mab *let us insist that she herself killed her son*; nyt **gwerth arnaw** ef dim *it is not worth anything*; hitheu . . . a gytsynnywys **ar anvon** y mab y Pwyll *she agreed to send the boy to Pwyll*; dyuot a oruc ef **ar**

(=**att** RB. 287) **Enyd** *he came to Enid* WB. p. 221; a roti ỳ uanec **ar** (=**att** RB. 116) **ỳ kỳmhar** *and he gave the glove to his wife* WB. 473.

In phrases, e.g. **ar y drydyd** *with two others*; **ar y ganuet** *with a hundred men*; sef y key yn nef **ar y ganuet** *thou shalt receive in heaven a hundredfold*; **ar vrys** *in haste*; am eu carcharu **ar gam** *because they were wrongfully imprisoned*; **ar gel** *secretly*; **ar gyhoed** *publicly*; y marchawc y gwnaethpwyt **ar y odeu** *the knight for whom it has been made*; y marchogyon goreu a oed **ar y helw** *the best horsemen that were in his possession*; **ar hynny** *after that*; **ar hyt** y glynn *along the valley*; **ar hyt** y dyd *throughout the day*; **ar eu hol** *after them*; **ar uedwl** mynet *with the intention of going*; **ar uessur** llad y benn *with the purpose of cutting off his head*; **ar tal** y pebyll *before the tent*; **ar tal** y lin *on his knee*; **ar draws** yr avon *across the river*; y tharaw **ar draws** y hwyneb *he struck her across her face.*

NOTE 1.—For the phrase **ar y ganvet** see Rev. Celt. 28, p. 206.

y ar (O.W. **diar**), **odyar** *from*, e.g. y dygwydawd yn varw **y ar y uarch** *he fell dead from his horse;* byrywch awch blinder **y arnawch** *cast your weariness from you.*

NOTE 2.—But **y ar** is used also in the sense of **on**, e.g. y gwelynt wreic **y ar uarch** *they saw a woman on a horse* RB. 248.

NOTE 3.—In O.W. **guar** (=Ir. for), e.g. **guar ir dreb** gl. *edito*, **guar ir henn rit** *above the old ford* Lib. Land. 73. In Lib. Land. is also found **ar**, cf. Ir. ar. In Mid. W. the two prepositions are confused.

166. att *to*, e.g. dyuot a oruc **att y uorwyn** *he came to the maiden;* y chwedyl a doeth **att Uatholwch** *the tidings came to Matholwch;* dyret y gyt a mi **hyt att Arthur** *come with me to Arthur.*

167. can, gan (corresponding in sense to Ir. la) *with, by*, e.g. mynet a oruc Mabon **ganthaw** *Mabon went with him;* ef a edewis **genthi** dwy iarllaeth *he left with her two earldoms*; a **chan gennyat** y ewythyr cychwyn ymeith *and with his uncle's leave he set out;* nawd a geffy . . **gan uynet** dracheuyn y fford y deuthost *thou shalt have mercy on condition that thou returnest by the way by which thou hast come;* hyny yttoed eu llygeit yn colli eu lleuuer **gan y chwys ar gwaet** *till their eyes were losing their light with the sweat and the blood;* atteb nys kauas ef **genthi hi** *he got no answer from her;* ny phrynit dim **ganthunt** *nothing was bought from them;* ny chollet oen eiryoet **ganthaw** *not a lamb had ever been lost by him;* **gan lan** y weilgi *by the shore of the sea;* os da **gan y uorwyn** da yw **gennyf ynneu** *if it pleases the maiden, it pleases me;* drwc vyd **gantunt** *it will be displeasing to them.*

y gan *from*, e.g. cymer gedernit **y ganthaw** *take security from him;* annerch **y genhyf i** ef *greet him from me.*

168. cer, ger *near by*, e.g. **ker tir** Tyssilyaw *by the land of Tyssilyaw* MA. 237[b]; **ger glan** yr avon *by the bank of the river*; ae kymerth **ger y avwyneu** *he took him by his reins* CM. 56; yn ymauael ar ebawl **geir y vwng** *seizing the foal by its mane.* In some phrases:—**ger bronn**, e.g. ae vwrw **ger bronn** Owein *and threw it before Owein*; ar abat . . . a doeth ac ef hyt **geyr bronn** yr allawr *and the abbot took him before the altar*; **ger llaw**, e.g. ae dodi **ger llaw** y gerwyn *and placed it beside the cauldron.*

169. cyvrwng *between*, e.g. **kỳfrwg deu ỳskỳuarn** Twrch Trwỳth *between the ears of Twrch Trwyth*; **cyfrwng mor a glan** *between sea and shore.*

170. cyn *before*, e.g. **kynn y nos** *before night*; **cyn myned** mab Cynan y dan dywawd *before Cynan's son went under the sod* MA. 140[a].

171. cyt *union* serves as a preposition in the phrases **cyt ac, y gyt ac** *together with*, e.g. mynet a orugant **gyt ar mackwy** *they went along with the youth*; yn gorymdeith **y gyt ar amherawdyr** *walking together with the Emperor.*

172. eithyr (=Ir. echtar) *outside of, except, beyond*, e.g. neb rỳw dim nỳ welỳnt **eithyr guydlwdyn** *they saw nothing except wild beasts*; a phan welas Chyarlys hynny ryuedu a oruc **eithyr mod** *and when Charlemagne saw that he was astonished beyond measure.*

dieithyr, e.g. ef a edewis y holl longeu . . . **dyeithyr un llong** *he left all his ships except one ship.*

odieithyr, e.g. gwede mỳnet Arthur **odieithỳr ỳ llỳs** *after Arthur*

went out of the palace; ef . . . ae cassaawd **odieithyr messur** *he hated him beyond measure.*

173. erbyn (prep. **er** + dat. of **penn** *head* = Ir. ar chiunn cf. § 25) *against, before, by*, e.g. mi ae paraf . . . yn gyniachet **erbyn penn y mis** ac y gallo marchogaeth *I will make him so well by the end of the month that he will be able to ride*; ar abat yna **erbyn y law** ae kymmerth *and the abbot then took him by his hand.*

174. gwedy, wedy (O.W. **guetig**) *after*, e.g. **gwedy y gawat** goleuhau a oruc yr awyr *after the shower the sky cleared*; uot y crydyon **wedy duunaw** ar y lad *that the cobblers had conspired to slay him*; **hyd guedy** gosper *till after evening.*

175. heb (= Ir. sech) *past, without, besides*, e.g. nyt kynt yd yskynn ef ar y uarch noc yd a hitheu **hebdaw ef** *no sooner did he mount his horse than she passed him*; **heb dant** yn y phenn *without a tooth in her head*; abréid vu eu hattal **heb torri** eu hamot *they could hardly be kept from breaking their covenant*; y kahat o ynys Prydein ehun trugein mil o varchogyon aruawc **heb deg mil** a adawssei urenhin Llydaw *there was got from the island of Britain itself sixty thousand armed horsemen besides ten thousand that the King of Brittany had promised.* In the phrase **heb law**, e.g. pan yttoed honno yn kerdet **heb law** Breint *when she was going past Breint* RB. II., 246.

176. herwyd *according to, by*, e.g. **herwyd anyan** *according to nature*; **herwyd vyg gallu i** *according to my power*; a chymryt y mab **herwyd y draet** *and he seized the boy by his feet.*

177. hyt (a prepositional use of **hyt** *length*) *as far as, up to*, e.g. o vor Ut **hyd vor** Iwerton *from the English Channel to the Irish Sea* MA. 202[a]; **hyt dyd brawt** *until Doomsday*; **educher** (= **hyt ucher**) *until evening.*

NOTE.—In O.W. there are also prepositional phrases **behet**, e.g. **behet hirmain** *as far as the long stone* Lib. Land., **bet rit ir main** *as far as the ford of the stone* ib., and **cihit**, e.g. **cihit i nant** *to the valley*, **cihitan**, e.g. **cihitan clouuric** Lib. Land., and **cihitun**, e.g. **cihitun ceng ir esceir** Ox. gl.

178. is (= Ir. īs) *below*, e.g. **is nef** *below heaven.* In the phrase **islaw** *below*, e.g. kawc a oed **islaw** y drws *a bowl that was below*

the door; y dodit **islaw** y teulu *he was placed beneath the household*; **odis**, e.g. neur disgynnassei Arthur . . . **odis Kaer Vadon** *Arthur had descended beneath Caer Vaddon* RB. 151, 22; **adhis Guaissav** Lib. Land. 241.

179. ithr (only O.W. = Ir. etir) *between*, e.g. **ithr ir dwy ail** *between the two eyelashes* Mart. Cap.

180. mynn (a nominal preposition = Ir. mind *a holy relic, an oath*) *by* (in oaths), e.g. **myn dy law di** . . . mi a af y gyt a thi *by thy hand I will go with thee*; **myn vyg cret** nyth gredaf *by my faith I do not believe thee.*

181. mywn (nominal preposition) *in*, e.g. wynteu a dywedassant bot adanc **mywn gogof** *they said that there was a monster in a cave*; ryuedu . . . a orugant bot **mywn un dyn** . . . hanner hynny o nerth *they marvelled that half as much strength should be in one man*; neuad a welsant **y mywn** (= **o vewn** WB. p. 93a) **y gaer** *they saw a palace within the city* RB. 87, 17.

182. nes (cf. **nes** *nearer*) *until, unless*, e.g. ny cheffir Mabon vyth . . . **nes caffel** Eidoel *Mabon will never be got till Eidoel is got*; **nes dyuot** Guilenhin urenhin Ffreinc nỳ helir Twrch Trwyth vỳth hebdaw *unless Gwilenhin King of France comes, Twrch Trwyth will never be hunted without him* RB. 124, 28.

183. o, a *of, from, by*; with the article **or**; with possessive pronouns **om, oth, oe** etc.; before pronouns beginning with a vowel there is also a form **oc**: **oc awch** *of your*, **oc eu** *of their*, **oc a** *of what*, e.g., mil **o bunneu** aryant *a thousand pounds of silver*; y rann vwyhaf **or vlwydyn** *the greatest part of the year*; mawr **a beth** yw gwelet dwyawl dial ar y bobyl *a great thing it is to see divine vengeance on the people*; pebyll **o bali** *a tent of satin*; **yn llawn or dwfyr** *full of the water*; kany cheffynt **o ennyt** wiskaw eu harueu *for they got no time to put on their arms*; pei karei Duw wynt **o dim** *if God loved them at all*; aduet **o oet** *ripe in years*; wytt ditawl **o bob chwant** *thou art free from every desire*; o mynwn nineu **arueru o rydit** *if we wish to enjoy freedom*; na naccaa ui **ohonunt** *do not refuse them to me*; ef a gychynnwys **o Arberth** *he set forth from Arberth*; yn dyuot **or coet allan**

coming out of the wood; am lad **ohonat titheu** y gwr priawt *because her husband has been slain by thee*; na ellir kynnal dy gyuoeth di namyn **o vilwryaeth ac arueu** *that thy dominion can be maintained only by valour and arms.* In phrases, e.g. **o achaws** *because of*; **oe vod** *with his will*; **oe hanvod** *against his will*; **or diwed** *at last*; **o hynny allan** *from that time forth*; **o barth** y vam *on his mother's side*; **oc eu plith** *from among them.*

184. parth *part*, in **parth ac, parth ac att** *towards*, e.g. bryssyaw a orugant **parth ar mwc** *they hastened towards the smoke*, yn dyuot ar hyt y dyffryn **parth ac attaf** *coming along the valley towards me.*

185. py (=Ir. co) *to*; with possessive pronoun **pwy, py,** e.g. or mor **pwy gilyd** *from one sea to the other*; ar ffo o le **py gilyd** *in flight from place to place;* ac yna y kymerth Seint Alban Amphibalus yd oedit **awr py awr** yn y dwyn oe verthyru ac y kudywys yn y dy ehun=*quorum Albanus confessorem suum Amphibalum a persecutoribus insectatum et iam iamque comprehendendum primum in domo sua occuluit* RB. II. 107.

186. rac *before, against, on account of*, e.g. mal heu **rac moch** meryerid *like scattering pearls before swine*; kymer di y pedwar meirch a gyrr **rac dy vronn** *take the four horses and drive them before thee*; kerdet a orugant **racdunt** hyt att vwyalch Gilgwri *they went on till they came to the blackbird of Kilgwri*; am notwy **rac auar** *may he protect me against grief*; nys kelaf **ragot** *I will not hide it from thee*; ffo ditheu ymeith **rac dyuot** ohonaw *flee forth lest he should come*; yn keissaw diffryt y deu wr **rac eu bodi** *in seeking to save the two men from drowning*; llidiaw a oruc Arthur **rac hwyret** y gwelei y vudugolyaeth yn dyuot idaw *Arthur was angry because he saw the victory coming to him so slowly*; y kenir efferenneu **rac y eneit** *masses are sung for his soul*; yn aballu **rac newyn** *dying of hunger.*

y rac *from*, e.g. ninheu a dygwn **y racdunt** yr eidunt *we will take their property from them* RB. II. 207.

187. rwng, y rwng *between*, e.g. **rwg nef a dayar** *between heaven and earth*; **y rwng deuglust** Twrch Trwyth *between the ears of Twrch Trwyth*; pany bei ammot **yrof am gwlat** amdanunt *if there were not a covenant between me and my land about them*; **rwng dicter a llit** taraw ym plith y llygot a wnaeth *between rage and anger he struck among the mice*; dywedut **y ryngthunt** ehunein y maent *they are saying among themselves*; **rwg deu** onadunt *between two of them* RB. II. 141; y kerdwys **y ryngtaw a Ruuein** *he set out to Rome* RB. 85, cf. ib. 12, 24.

odyrwng *from between*, e.g. a ducpwyt yn teirnossic **odyrwng y vam** ar paret *who when three nights old was taken from between his mother and the wall* RB. 129, 10.

188. tan, dan, ydan, adan (cf. O.W. **guotan**) *under*, e.g. ffynnawn a welwn **dan y prenn** *I saw a fountain under the tree*; y clywei dygyuor . . . **y dan**(=**dan** WB. 92=**adan** RB. 66) **baret** yr ystauell *he heard a commotion under a wall of the chamber* RB. 67, 15; gobennyd **dan penn y elin** *a cushion under his elbow*; **dan wynt a glaw** *under wind and rain*; y ellwng y gwn **dan y coet** *to let loose his dogs in the wood* RB. 1, 10; awn **adanunt** (=**ydanunt** RB. 48) **a lladwn** *let us attack and slay them* WB. 67; yny uyd y llygot yn gwan **adan y groft** *until the mice were falling upon the field* RB. 53, 27, cf. RB. 28, 29; dyuot a wnaeth Corineus at Locrinus **dan dreiglaw** bwyell *Corineus came to Locrinus brandishing an axe.*

189. trag, tra *beyond, across*, e.g. ton **tra thon** toid tu tir *wave beyond wave covers the side of the land* BB. 45[a]; ac eigyl racdaw draw **dra thonneu** *and angels before him yonder across the waves* MA. 196[a]; maith dy dreisiau **drag Euas** *great are thy deeds of violence across Evas* MA. 145[a]; oes **trag oes** *age beyond age* FB. 230; **tra messur** *beyond measure* FB. 155; rybud **drae gilyd**=*quotidianos rumores* RB. II. 131.

NOTE.—Often in the phrase **drachefyn** *back*, by which there are also forms with possessive adjectives, e.g. **tra-m-kefyn** WB. 232=**drachefen** RB. 169, 16, **tra-th-gefyn** WB. 124=**drachefyn** RB. 198, 25, **dra-e-gefyn** CM. 73, **dra-e-chefyn** RB. 177, 12, **dra-e-kefyn** CM. 45, also forms like **drach eu kevyn** Hg. I. 301.

190. trus, tros, dros *across*, e.g. **trus ir minid** *across the*

mountain Lib. Land; ual yd oed . . . yn kerdet **dros vynyd** *as he was journeying across a mountain*; yny ehedawd y glot **dros wyneb y deyrnas** *until his fame flew over his dominion*; y ymlad **dros y wlat** *to fight for his country*; y rodes Hengyst atteb idaw **dros y gedymdeithyon** *Hengist answered him on behalf of his companions*; pan allassant wy gyntaf talu drwc **dros da** *as soon as they were able to return evil for good.*

191. trwy, drwy (Ir. tre) *through*, e.g. **trwy y koet** *through the wood*; **trwy gynghor Branwen** *through the advice of Branwen*; ar tes oed vawr, ar arueu **trwy y chwys ar gwaet** yn glynu wrth y gnawt *and the heat was great, and the armour by reason of the sweat and blood was sticking to his flesh*; ar dyd hwnnw ar nos honno a treulassant **trwy gerdeu a didanwch** *and that day and that night they spent in songs and entertainment* WB. p. 204; Arthur **drwy amlaf rodyon** ae henrydedei *Arthur honoured him with many gifts.*

192. tu *side* in **tu ac, tu ac att** *towards*, e.g. pan daw **tu ar drws** *when he goes towards the door*; yn dyuot . . . **tu ac attat** *coming towards thee.*

193. uch (Ir. ūas) *above*, e.g. **uch nef** *above heaven*; yn eisted **uch penn** y weilgi *sitting above the sea*; **uch law** y bont . . . y gwelynt kastelltref *above the bridge they saw a fortified town.*

diuch : diuch i lan Lib. Land. 73.

oduch, e.g. **oduch y dwvyr** *above the water* WB. p. 90^{b}; eithyd **oduch gwynt** *he went above the wind* FB. 179; pei delhei ỏ bỏt **oduchti** *if the world should come above it* WB. 481.

194. wrth (O.W. **gurth,** Ir. fri) *against, towards*, etc., e.g. ny ellir dim **wrth a** uynho Duw *nothing can de done contrary to what God wills*; pan ỏuei o wual ỏuei **urth peduar** *when he drank from the horn, he would drink against four* BB. 48^{b}; **wrth y drws** llyma vab bychan *lo! at the door was a little boy*; yn eu pobi **wrth y tan** *being cooked at the fire*; yn dyuot **wrth y diaspat** *coming at the cry*; pob kyfryw aniueileit a ducpwyt yno **wrth eu haberthu** *every kind of animals was led there to be sacrificed*; reit oed ym **wrth gynghor** *I had need of counsel*; y dynu a orugant **wrth raffeu** y mywn *they pulled him in with ropes*; **wrth ych kynghor** y bydaf *I will follow your advice*; llew **wrth aer** a llwfr **wrth eirchyeid** *a lion for battle and a weakling towards suppliants*; cyt bei lityawc ef **wrthi hi** *though he was angry with her*; **wrthyt ti** y mae vy neges *my business is with thee*; yn glynu **wrth y gnawt** *sticking to his flesh*; y dywawt y dat **wrthaw** *his father said to him*; sef a wnaeth gwyr Rufein drychafel Geta yn vrenhin . . . **wrth hanuot** y vam o Rufein *the men of Rome raised Geta to be king because his mother was sprung from Rome*; **wrth hynny** *therefore*; **y wrth** *from*, e.g. yr pan athoed **y wrthunt hwy** *since he had gone from them*; ny ỏy giglef i eirmoet dim **y wrth y uorwyn** *I have never heard anything of the maiden.*

195. y (O.W. **di,** Ir. do) *to.* With the article **yr**; with possessive adjectives **ym, yth, yw,** etc. (§ 58*b*), e.g. dyuot **yw** (=**y** RB. 284) lety *came to his lodging* WB. p. 219; gwyr Troea ae hymlityassant **y eu llogeu** *the men of Troy pursued them to their ships*; y deuynt drannoeth **oc eu hamdiffyn** *they would come on the following day to defend them*; deu uab oed **im** *I had two sons*; keuỏnderw **dỏ** (=**y** RB. 100, 13) Arthur oed *he was a cousin of Arthur* WB. 452; or tu draw **yr bont** *on the further side of the bridge*; heb wybot **yr kawr** *without the knowledge of the giant*; mi ae talaf **ywch** *I will pay it to you*; ni ae dywedwn **itti** *we will tell it to thee*; gouyn a oruc Gwrhyr **idi** *Gwrhyr asked her*; na hawl ef **ynni** *do not demand him of us*; pan daruu **udunt** darllein *when they had finished reading.*

NOTE.—In Irish **do**=*to* (cf. Bret. **da**), **di**=*from*. Already in Old Welsh **di** has the sense of Ir. **do**, e.g. **map di Iob**=Ir. **macc do Iob** *a son of Jupiter*, **anu di Iuno**=Ir. **ainm do Iuno** *a name of Juno*, **di erchim** *to ask*. The sense of *from* is kept before other prepositions, e.g. **di am** later **y am** *from off*, **y wrth** *from*, and in some phrases, e.g. **blwydyn y hediw** *a year from to-day*, **y dreis** *by violence*, **y werth** WB. p. 214=**ar werth** RB. 277, 21 *for a price.*

196. yn (Ir. i n-) *into, in.* With possessive pronouns **ym, yth,** e.g. kyllell a edỏw **y mwyt** a llỏnn **y mual** (*the*) *knife has gone into* (*the*) *food and* (*the*) *drink into the horn*; dyuot a orugant **hyt yn lle** yd oed karw Redynure *they came to where the stag of*

Redynvre was; nẏ chlẏweist **yth wlat** dẏ hun eirẏoet kerd kẏstal ac a ganant hwẏ *thou hast never heard in thy own country such song as they will sing*; ny byd vy eneit **ym korff** *my life will not be in my body*; pa rẏw weith ẏd wẏti **yndaw** *in what manner of work art thou engaged?* **ym penn** y seith mlyned *at the end of the seven years*; gormod vyd agheu gwas kystal ac Edern **yn sarhaet** morwyn *the death of so excellent a youth as Edern will be too much for an insult to a maiden.* In many phrases:—dwy (ẏstondard) yssyd **yn y vlaen** a dwy **yn y ol** *two standards are before it and two after it*; **yn ol** y twryf y daw kawat *after the noise will come a shower*; **ym bron** *close by*; **yg kylch** y tan *round about the fire*; edrych a orugant **yn eu kylch** *they looked around them*; **yg gwyd** Arthur *in the presence of Arthur*; nat elych **ym herbyn** *that thou shalt not go against me*; **yn herwyd** gweledigaeth *according to appearance*; **y mywn** cadeir *in a chair*; ef a chwbwl or a gollassei **hyt yn oet** y tlws lleihaf a gafas *he got all that he had lost even to the smallest treasure*; ef a welei bebyll **ym plith** y pebylleu ereill *he saw a tent among the other tents*; y vrenhines a eistedawd **yn ymyl** Galaath *the queen sat beside Galahad.*

197. yr, er *for, on account of, since,* e.g. oes obeith gennyt ti ar gaffel dy ellwng ae **yr aur** ae **yr aryant** *hast thou any hope of obtaining thy liberation either for gold or for silver?* py glot a geffy ti **yr llad** gwr marw *what fame wilt thou get for slaying a dead man?* nyt **yr drwc** itti y deuthum *I have not come to thee for evil*; pei tebygwn y wneuthur ohonat ti **yrof i** beth *if I thought that thou wouldst do something for me*; **yr y byt** na wnewch hynny *for the world do not do that*; **yr Duw** a wdost ti dim y wrth Uabon *for God's sake, dost thou know anything of Mabon?* **yr mwyn** y gwr mwyhaf a gery arho vi *for the sake of the man whom thou most lovest, wait for me*; pa hustyng bynnac **yr y vychanet** a uo y rwng dynyon *whatever whisper, however low, there is between men*; **yr a** uyrit yndi ny bydei lawnach no chynt *however much was thrown into it, it was not fuller than before*; oed llesach yr march pei ass archut **yr meittyn** *it would have been better for the horse if thou hadst asked it a while ago*; y gwr y buost **yr ys talym** o amser yn y geissaw *the man whom thou hast been seeking for a long time* (lit. *since it is a while of time*).

NOTE.—This preposition is frequent with **oet** *time*, together with a possessive adjective, e.g. ny ry giglef i **eirmoet** *I have never heard*; na welsei **eiryoet** *that he had never seen.* The form **eiryoet** becomes petrified into a phrase used of all persons, e.g. ny chiglef i **eiryoet** *I have never heard*; ny chlyweist **eiryoet** *thou hast never seen.*

THE CONJUNCTION.

198. a *and*; **ac** before vowels and the negative particles **ny, na,** and sometimes before other consonants; with the article, **ar**; with possessive adjectives: **am, ath, ae** etc., e.g. vyg kewilyd **am** llit *my disgrace and my anger*; **a** phryderu a oruc yn uawr *and she was very anxious.* **a—a** *both and*, e.g. y gwassanaeth goreu a allwyf i mi ae gwnaf **ac** idaw **ac** y uarch *the best service that I can I will render both to him and to his horse*; **a** hediw **a** pheunyd *both to-day and every day.* After the comparative of equality (§ 39), e.g. vn **kyndecket a** hi *one so fair as she*; similarly, a honno a aei trwy gallonneu y dynyon ae hofnockaei **yn gymeint ac** y collei y gwyr eu lliw ac eu nerth *and that went through the hearts of the people and terrified them so that the men lost their hue and their strength.* Introducing an accompanying or qualifying circumstance, e.g. gwelem . . . mynyd mawr geir llaw y coet **a hwnnw ar gerdet** *we saw a great mountain beside the wood, and it walking* RB. 35, 26; goueilęint a delis yndaw o gamhet idaw attal y mab gantaw **ac ef yn gwybot y vot yn vab y wr arall** *he was seized with great sadness because of the wrong that he did in keeping the boy with him though he knew that he was the son of another man* RB. 22, 20; nyt **a mi yn uyw** yd aho ef y Gernyw *he shall not while I live go to Cornwall* RB. 140, 16. Adversatively, e.g. mi a rodaf y carcharawr itti **ac** ny darparysswn y rodi y neb *I will give thee the prisoner, although I had not intended to give him to anyone* RB. 128, 26.

199. achaws (nominal conjunction) *because*, e.g. galw Gwrhyr Gwalltawt (leg. Gwalstawt) Ieithoed, **achaws** (om. WB. 471) yr holl ieithoed a wydyat *he summoned Gwrhyr, the interpreter of*

tongues, because he knew all languages RB. 114, 14; **o achaws na chaffant** gennyt *because they do not get from thee* RB. 85, 26.

200. am na *because not*, e.g. tristuart uytaf **am na daw** *I shall be a sorrowful bard because he will not come* MA. 183^{b}; **am na weles** ef yno na gwr na gwreic ryued vu ganthaw *he was astonished because he saw there neither man nor woman* Hg. I., 154.

201. yr awr (nominal conjunction) *when*, e.g. **ỳr awr ỳ kenỳch** ef a a y nỳwl ỳmdeith *when thou soundest it the cloud will vanish* WB. 451 : **ỳr awr ỳ rodes** un llef arnaw ỳd aeth ỳ nỳwl ỳmdeith *when he blew a single blast on it the cloud vanished*, ib.

202. can *for, since*; neg. **can ny**; with the present of the copula, **canys**, e.g. ỳr hỳnnỳ hỳt hediw ỳd wỳf i ỳn darparu gwled ỳtti, **can gwỳdỳwn** i ỳ dout ti ỳm keissyaw i *from that time till to-day I have been preparing a feast for thee, for I knew that thou wouldst come to seek me* WB. 249; **kanỳs gollỳngy** ỳr hỳnnỳ mi a rodaf it pedeir punt ar ugeint o arỳant *since thou wilt not let it go for that, I will give thee twenty-four pounds of silver* WB. 78; a **chanys** vy lles i yd oedut ti yn y uenegi im, manac pa fford vei hynny *and since thou wert shewing me my advantage, shew how that might be* RB. 177, 15.

NOTE.—The copula form **canys** comes to be used simply in the sense of **can**, e.g. a **chanys nys gwnn** (=a **chanys gwnn** WB. 76) *since I do not know it* RB. 54, 30.

203. cwt, cw *where*, e.g. **kwt ynt** plant ỳ gwr *where are the children of the man?* WB. 453; mỳnet a oruc ỳ brenhin ỳg kỳghor **kwt gaffei** wreic *the king took counsel where he could get a wife* ib.; a wdosti **cwd uyd** nos yn arhos dyd *knowest thou where is night waiting for day?* FB. 146; a thrỳdit rỳuet ỳv merwerit moṛ, **cv threia, cud echwit, cvd a, cvd ymda, cv treigil, cv threwna** *and the third wonder is the tumult of the sea where it ebbs, where it swells, where it goes, where it moves about, where it rolls, where it settles* BB. 44^{b}.

204. cyn *before*, (*a*) with indicative, e.g. gwr a rodei gad **kyn dybu** i dyt *a man who used to give battle before his day came* MA. 141^{a}; (*b*) with subjunctive, e.g. gweinif i hagen ym Reen ri

cyn bwyf deierin *I yet will serve my Lord King before I am of the earth* MA. 142^{a}, a **chin ri llethid** ve llatỳsseint *and before they were slain they had slain* BB. 36^{b}.

205. cyt, cyn, *though*; negative **cyn ny, cyny, cany.**

(a) With indicative, e.g. **kid y lleinv** keudaud nis beirv calon *though it fills the body, it does not stir the heart* BB. 51^{a}; **cyd doeth** ef nid aeth yn warthegawc *though he came, he did not go with spoil of cattle* MA. 140^{b}.

(b) With subjunctive, e.g. **kỳn nỳ buỳf** arglwỳdes, heb i, mi a wnn beth ỳw hỳnnỳ "*though I am not a lady*," *said she*, "*I know what that is*" WB. 51; **ked archwyf** ym llyw y lloergant ỳn rot, ef am ryt yn geugant *though I ask of my sovereign the moon's orb as a gift, he will assuredly give it me* MA. 212^{a}; a thydi am gwely i **kany welwyf** i dydi *and thou wilt see me, though I see thee not* RB. 173; a **chyt bei** lityawc ef wrthi hi, ef a gymyrth y rybud *and though he was angry with her, he took the warning* WB. p. 215; nyt oed ef nes idi yna no **chyn bei** ar y gam *he was no nearer to her there than though he had been at a walking pace*; neur daruỳdei yr dayar y lynku heb wybot dim y wrthaw mwy no **chyn ny ry fei** eiryoet vch y dayar *the earth had swallowed it so that nothing more was known of it than though it had never been above the earth* RB. II., 141; annoc y Brytanyeit **megys kyt** bei un onadunt *he incited the Britons as though he had been one of them* RB. II., 94.

NOTE.—In the verb "to be" after **cyt** the 3 sg. imper. regularly takes the place of the 3 sg. pres. subj., e.g. ar mab a geiff enw **kyt boet** drwc gennyt ti *and the boy shall get a name though it displease thee* RB. 69, 23.

206. cyt *union* in the phrase **y gyt ac,** e.g. **y gyt ac y doethant** rac bron Kynan y hannerchassant o bleit amherawdyr Rufein *as they came before Cynan they greeted him on behalf of the Emperor of Rome* RB. II. 113; **y gyt ac nat** oes *since there is not* BCh. 81.

207. delw (nominal conjunction) *as*, e.g. **delw yt wytt** pen rieu pen reith yt wyf pen prifueirt om prifyeith *as thou art head of princes, head of law, I am head of chief bards from my most excellent speech* MA. 157a.

208. eissoes *however, nevertheless*, e.g. a dic vu wreic y melinyd wrth Peredur, ac **eissoes** y melinyd a rodes aryant yn echwyn idaw *and the miller's wife was wroth with Peredur; nevertheless the miller gave him a loan of money* RB. 229.

209. eithyr na *except that not*, e.g. ac erbyn auory y vot yn gystal ac y bu oreu, **eithyr na byd** llyueryd gantaw *and by the morrow he will be as good as he ever was, except that he will not have the power of speech* RB. 31.

210. gwedy *after*; negative **gwedy na**:—(a) with indicative, e.g. keugant kỳwraghaun (MS. -um) **wide kywisscarun** (MS. -an) *verily we shall meet after we part* BB. 12[b]; a **gwedy na allwys** Kaswallawn kael y gwr . . . gogyuadaw Auarwy a oruc *and after Kaswallawn could not get the man, he threatened Avarwy.*

(b) With subjunctive, e.g. a **gwedy byryer** llawer yndi, ef a ovyn itt *and after a quantity has been thrown into it, he will ask thee* RB. 14; mwy boen yw koffau kyuoeth **gwedy coller** *it is a greater torment to remember power after it is lost* RB. II. 67; kanys ymdiret a wnaei ef caffel clot . . . **gwedy y gorffei** ar y alon *for he trusted that he would get fame after he had conquered his enemies* RB. II. 7; kanys **gwedy darffei** idaw ef llad Galogryuant diogel oed ganthaw y lledit ynteu gwedy hynny *for after he had slain Galogryvant he was sure that he would be slain after that* Hg. I. 114; a **gwedy na chaffei** dagneued o neb ryw ford y gantaw, sef a wnaeth anuon y geissaw nerth a chanorthwy y gan Ulkesar *and after he could not get peace from him in any way, he sent to seek support and help from Julius Caesar* RB. II. 89.

211. hagen *yet, however*, e.g. a phan deuthant yno tybygu rylad Kei. wynt a welsant **hagen,** or kaffei vedic da y bydei vyw *and when they came there, they thought that Kei had been killed. They saw, however, that if he got a good leech he would live* RB. 212, 11.

212. herwyd, yn herwyd (nominal conjunction) *according as*, e.g. a **herwỳd ỳ dyweit** ỳ kỳuarwỳdỳt ef a uu arglwỳd wedỳ hỳnnỳ ar Wyned *and as the story says, he was lord over Gwynedd after that* WB. 111; a gwedy eu hannoc uelly **yn herwyd y gallei,** erchi a wnaeth dineu delw efydeit drwy danawl geluydyt *and after he had thus exhorted them to the best of his power, he asked that a bronze effigy should be cast through the art of fire* RB. II. 138.

213. hevyt *further, also, likewise*, e.g. ỳ Duv ỳ harchaw arch **hewid** *of God I will ask a request still* BB. 36[a], ac enryuedodeu ereill **heuyt** a weleist yno *and other wonders likewise thou sawest there* RB. 233, 2.

214. hyt (nominal conjunction).

1. *as long as, as far as.*

(a) With the indicative, e.g. ti a geffy y kyfarws a notto dy benn ath dauawt, **hyt y sych** gwynt, **hyt y gwlych** glaw, **hyt y treigyl** heul *thou shalt have the gift that thy mouth and thy tongue indicate, as long as wind dries, as long as rain wets, as long as the sun revolves* RB. 105, 25; **hyt y gwelir** ymi gwlat ffrwythlawn yw hon *as far as appears to me, this is a fruitful land* RB. II. 116; nyt aeth neb is nef **hyt yd aeth** ef *no one under heaven went as far as he* FB. 197.

(b) With the subjunctive, e.g. taw **hyt y mynnych** *be silent as long as thou wilt* RB. 13, 8.

2. **hyt na** *so that not.*

(a) With indicative (of consequence), e.g. drycyruerth a wnaeth **hyt nat oed** well genti y byw noe marw *she made lamentation so that she did not deem her life better than her death* RB. 51, 18.

(b) With subjunctive (of purpose), e.g. carchara wynt **hyt nat elont** dracheuyn *imprison them so that they may not go back* RB. 34, 14.

215. lle (nominal conjunction) *where*; negative **lle ny,** e.g. **lle** y gwelych eglwys kan dy pader wrthi *wherever thou seest a church, recite thy pater to it* RB. 195; am uenegi ohonaf i ytti dy les **lle** nys metrut dy hun *because I shewed thee thy advantage where thou didst not think of it thyself* RB. 177.

216. mal, val (O.W. **amal** = Ir. amail).

1. **as,** *when.*

(a) With indicative, e.g. sef **mal yd eistedassant** *that is how they sat* WB. p. 224; pei gwypwn vot yn da gennyt ti **mal y mae** da gennyf i *if I knew that it pleased thee as it pleases me* RB. 213; **ual y daw** y mywn arganuot yr adanc a wnaeth *as he came in, he perceived the monster* RB. 226, 5; ỳd adnabu ỳr amherawdyr ỳ wlat

mal ỳ gwelas *the emperor recognised the country when he saw it* WB. 186.

(b) With subjunctive, e.g. mi wnaf **ual y dywettych** di *I shall act as thou mayest direct* RB. 276; hwỳnt ae torrỳnt **ual ỹ dyckid** attunt *they broke them as they were brought to them.*

2. *as if* (with past subjunctive), e.g. **mal pei** teu uei *as if it were thine* RB. 127; dyuot yma auory ym kymryt i **mal na** wyppwn i dim y wrth hynny *to come here to-morrow to take me as if I knew nothing about it* WB. p. 215.

3. *so that.*

(a) With indicative (of consequence), e.g. kyscu a wneuthum i **ual na wybuum** pan aeth ef *I slept so that I did not know when he went* RB. 247, 27.

(b) With subjunctive (of purpose), e.g. par weithon wahard y llongeu . . . **ual nat** el neb y Gymry *issue now a prohibition to the ships so that no one may go to Wales* RB. 34, 12; ereill a gyghorei itt rodi dy uerch y un o dylyedogyon y deyrnas hon **ual y bei** vrenhin gwedy ti *others advised thee to give thy daughter to one of the nobles of this kingdom so that he might be king after thee* RB. II. 114.

217. megys; megys na.

1. *as*, e.g. y gwledychwys Peredur gyt ar amherodres pedeir blyned ar dec, **megys y dyweit** yr ystoria *Peredur ruled with the empress for fourteen years, as the story tells* RB. 232; **megys y gallwys gyntaf** ef a aeth parth a Chaerwynt *as soon as he could he went towards Caerwynt* RB. II. 173; **megys y del** y coelbrenn udunt y deholir *as the lot falls to them they are banished* RB. II. 131.

2. *as if*, e.g. ymgaru a orugant **megys na ry ymwelynt** drwy lawer o yspeit kyn no hynny *they embraced one another, as if they had not seen one another for a long time before that* RB. II. 186.

3. *so that*, e.g. pa achaws na ladwn ni y mynach hwnn **megys y kaffo** Gwrtheyrn gwedy hynny y deyrnas *why do we not slay this monk, that Vortigern may thereafter get the kingdom?* RB. II. 129.

218. myn *where*, e.g. dyuot a orugant **myn yd oed** yr heussawr *they came to where the herdsman was* RB. 115, 13; **mỳn ỳd vo** truin ỳd uit trev *wherever there is a nose, there will be a sneeze* BB. 42a.

219. namyn, namwyn *except, but.*

e.g. nỳt edewis uỳnet **namyn** hỳt yd elhut titheu *I did not promise to go except so far as thou shouldst go* WB. 472; paham y kymerwn ninneu hynny y gan y taeogeu lladron . . . **namyn** eu llad hwy oll *why do we take this from these thievish churls and not rather slay them all?* RB. 49; y prenn a dyfawd yn dec . . . **namyn na** thyfawd neb ryw ffrwyth arnaw *the tree grew fairly, except that no manner of fruit grew upon it* Hg. I. 130.

220. 1. **neu** = (Ir. nō) *or*, e.g. nỳt oed un llestỳr . . . namỳn eur **neu** aryant **neu** uuelỳn *there was not a single vessel...except gold or silver or horn* WB. 227.

221. 2. **neu,** before vowels **neut;** with the present of the copula **neut;** with **ry, neur** (§ 95 note), with infixed pronoun: **neu-m,** etc. The original meaning may have been *now,* but the precise force of the particle is not altogether clear.

e.g. pan douthume attad oeth bichan vi anuad. **neu rimartuad** oth laur kiueithad *when I came to thee, my ill was small; now I have been blackened through thy...co-operation* BB. 11^{b}; och, heb y Riannon, paham y rody di atteb uelly; **neus rodes** uelly arglwydes yg gwyd gwyrda, heb y mackwy *"Alas!" said Riannon, "why dost thou answer so?" "I have so answered, lady, before nobles," said the youth* RB. 13; **neus gwarchae** mynwent y mynwes daear, **neud** gwar gwawr trydar *now the graveyard imprisons him in the bosom of the earth, now the light of battle is gentle* MA. 160^{a}; **neu** chwitheu pan doethawch. **neur doetham** y erchi Olwen *whence have ye come? We have come to ask for Olwen* RB. 118. Many examples will be found in MA. 275^{b}.

222. no, noc *than*; with the article, **nor;** with possessive adjectives **nom, noth, noe** etc., e.g. oed melỳnach ỳ fenn **no** blodeu ỳ banadỳl *her head was yellower than the blossom of the broom* WB. 476; **noc** amws naw gaỳaf oed mwy *he was bigger than a stallion of nine years* WB. 472; nachaf ỳ twrỳf ỳn dỳfot yn vwy . . . **noc** y dywedassei ỳ gwr du *behold the din became greater than the black man had said* WB. 231; a llawenach uuwyt wrthyf y nos

hono **nor** nos gynt *I had greater welcome that night than the night before* WB. 233.

With the particle **et, nocet, nocyt, nogyt,** e.g. dial Duw arnaf onyt dewissaf (*leg.* dewissach) genhyf uy agheu oe law ef **nocet** o law arall *God's vengeance on me if I would not rather die by his hand than by the hand of another* WB. p. 210; pa beth yssyd iawnach weithon **nocyt** na chretter idaw *what is more proper now than that he should not be believed?* CM. 76.

NOTE.—For **et** see Rev. Celt. VI. 57.

223. nu, *now*, e.g. **nu** nym car i Guendit *now Gwendydd loves me not* BB. 25^b; yth law di **nu** y rodaf i *into thy hand now I will give it* RB. 266; beth bynnac **nu** a dylyych, kymer yr un march ar dec *whatever then thou art entitled to, take the eleven horses* RB. 279.

NOTE.—In the usual Mid.W. orthography the word should be written **nw** (=Ir. nu); it had gone out of use, and so the scribes retained the spelling of an earlier period. Cf. Loth Mab. II. 195.

224. o, before vowels **ot** *if*; also **or, os**; negative **ony,** before vowels **onyt**; with the present of the copula **os,** negative **onyt.**

(a) With present indicative, e.g. **ot ey** yr hon (sc. fford) issot ny deuy trachefyn vyth *if thou goest by the lower one, thou wilt never return* WB. p. 223; **os** bỳw uỳdaf i . . . ti a glỳwỳ chwetleu **o diangẁhaf** *if I live, thou shalt hear tidings, if I escape* WB. 392; **or diangẁhaf** i . . . uỳg kỳwirdeb am cariat a uyd ar ỳ uorwỳn . . . **onỳ diangẁhaf** uinheu kỳndiweiret uỳd ỳ uorwỳn a chỳnt *if I escape, the maiden shall have my loyalty and my love; if I do not escape, she will be as pure as before* WB. 396; mi ath amdiffỳnaf **os gallaf** *I will defend thee if I can*; nỳ mwynha ỳ gwaet **onỳt** ỳn dwỳm ỳ keffir *the blood is of no use unless it is got warm.*

NOTE 1.—A negative clause continuing a clause introduced by **o** has **ae na** with the subjunctive (§ 236, note 1).

NOTE 2.—**onyt** sinks to the sense of *except, but* (Mod.W. **ond**), e.g. ny mynnaf i dim **onyt** mynet yr gware *I desire nothing but to go to the play* WB. p. 224; ny mynnaf i neb **onyt** Duw *I desire no one but God* Hg. I. 178.

(b) With the preterite and pluperfect, e.g. **or bu** (=**os** RB. 104) ar dy gam ỳ dỳuuost ỳ mỳwn, dos ar dỳ redec allan *if thou camest in at a walk, go out at a run* WB. 458; **o ry dywedyssei** hitheu

dim a uei wrthwyneb ganthaw ef, hi a wnaei iawn idaw *if she had said anything to displease him, she would give him satisfaction.* Hg. II. 130.

(c) With the past subjunctive, e.g. **o bei** orderch itt goreu gorderch oedut *if thou hadst a mistress, thou wouldst be a matchless lover* WB. 237; **or bei** eisseu dim arnaw nỳ adei ef hun uỳth ar legat dỳn *if he lacked anything, he would never allow sleep on any man's eye* WB. 465; dywedut na bydei vy eneit ym corff **ony delei** =**deuhei** WB. 256) ef ym amdiffyn i *they said that my life would not be in my body, unless she came to defend me* RB. 187.

NOTE 4.—It will be observed that in the last example corresponding to what in direct speech would be **o daw** the older text has the imperfect indicative, the later the past subjunctive.

NOTE 5.—**os** contains the infixed pronoun of the third person singular, **os gallaf** *if I am able (to do) it*; from such cases **os** developes into a special form of the conjunction. **or** comes from **o**+**ry** as **neur** from **neu**+**ry** (§ 95 note), so that originally it would have been used before those tenses with which **ry** was used. But it tended to spread beyond its proper bounds, cf. **or clywy, or gwely** RB. 195=**o chlywy, o gwely** WB. 119, 120.

225. 1. **pan** *whence?* e.g. **pan iv** dỳ echen *whence is thy lineage?* BB. 49^b; guaur llv pỳ dv **pan doit. Ban deuaw** o kad "*hero of a host, whence comest thou?*" "*I come from battle*" BB. ib.; pa le **pan deuy** di . . . **pan deuaf** o lys Arthur "*whence comest thou?*" "*I come from Arthur's court*" RB. 200, 1. Note the repetition of **pan** in the answer.

226. 2. **pan** *when.*

(a) With present (or future) indicative, e.g. kỳntaw geir a dỳwedaw ỳ bore **ban kyuodaw** *the first word that I will say in the morning when I arise* BB. 41^b; **ban wanha** ỳ gnaud *when his flesh becomes feeble* BB. 10^a; **pan agorawr** (=**agerer** RB. 103, 24) ỳ porth . . . bỳdhawt ragot ti gỳntaf ỳd agorawr ỳ porth *when the gate is opened, it will be opened for thee first* WB. 456.

NOTE.—This construction gives place to **pan** with the subjunctive.

(b) With a past tense of the indicative, e.g. a **phan yt oed** yn mynet yr llog ac **na welei** neb y gyt ac ef namyn ar y drydyd . . . y dywawt *and when he was going to the ship and saw no one with him save his two companions, he said* RB. II. 67; a **ffan deuthum**

ỳno hoffach oed genhỳf *and when I came there it pleased me more* WB. 229; **pan glywssynt** hwy y uarwolyaeth ef yd ymgynullyssynt *when they had heard of his death, they had assembled* RB. II. 173.

(c) With the subjunctive, e.g. **pan delych** dy hun yth wlat ti a wely *when thou thyself comest to thy land thou wilt see* RB. 6, 10; **pan agorer** y creu beunyd yd a allan *when the pen is opened every day, it goes forth* RB. 78; **pan elhei** y teulu y yvet y gwin . . . nyt aey ef y gyt a neb onadunt wy *whenever his household went to drink the wine he would not go with any of them* RB. 85.

3. In some phrases.

(a) **hyt pan** *until*, e.g. ar pump meib hynny a uagassant **hyt pan uuant** weisson mawr *and those four boys they reared till they were big lads* RB. 43; Duw a wyr nat ymchoelwn **hyt pann welhom** y uorwyn *God knows that we will not return till we see the maiden* RB. 117.

(b) **or pan** *from the time that*, e.g. **or pan gauas** y tir ny allwys na chi na dyn na march y ganhymdeith *from the time that it reached the land neither dog nor man nor horse could keep up with it* RB. 141; **or pann agoroch** y drws hwnnw ny ellwch uot yno *after ye open that door ye will not be able to be there* RB. 40.

(c) **yr pan** *since the time that*, e.g. kyvriuwch awch treul **yr pan doethawch** yma *reckon up your expenditure since ye came hither* RB. 228; gwedy dwyn ar gof onadunt eu collet **yr pan gollyssynt** arglwydiaeth ynys Brydein *after they called to mind their losses since they had lost the lordship of Britain* RB. II. 108.

4. *since*, e.g. gwae ni **pann** yn trewit o delli *woe to us that we have been struck by blindness* LA. 84; pa gyfryw wr yw awch tat chwi **pan allo** lleassu pawb uelly *what kind of a man is your father that he can kill everyone in this way?* RB. 221; pa drwc a digoneis i ỳtti **pan wnelut** titheu ỳmi . . . a wnaethost hediw *what evil have I done to thee that thou shouldst do to me what thou hast done to-day?* WB. 232.

5. *that*, e.g. ny wydyem **pan** oed ti a grogem *we knew not that it was thou whom we were crucifying* FB. 122. In prose it is

common in the phrase **pan yw** *that it is*, e.g. y dywawt y gwr . . . **pan yw** Peredur ae goruuassei *the man said that Peredur had overcome him* RB.

227. pei *if*, negative **pei na**; followed by the past subjunctive or by the pluperfect indicative which takes its place (§ 109c), e.g. **pei as gwypwn** mi ae dywedwn *if I knew it, I would tell it* RB. 130; nyt oed gyfyg gennyf ymlad a thidi **bei na bei** yr anifeil gyt a thi *I should not think it difficult to fight with thee if the beast were not with thee* RB. 189; a **phei na ry bylei** y cledyf ar vodrwyeu y benffestin ef a vuassei agheuawl or dyrnawt honnw *et nisi collisione cassidis mucronem hebetasset, mortiferum vulnus forsitan intulisset* RB. II. 198; buassei well itti **pei rodassut** nawd yr mackwy *it would have been better for thee if thou hadst given protection to the youth* RB. 216.

NOTE.—**pei, bei** is in origin sg. 3 past subjunctive of **bot**. By itself it has the sense of *if it were*, e.g. pei oet idaw ef a ladyssit *if he had been of age, he would have been slain* RB. 193.

228. pryt na (nominal conjunction) *since not.*

(a) with the indicative, e.g. py holy di y mi **pryt nam gedy** yn y tarren honn *what dost thou seek of me that thou dost not leave me in peace on this stony height?* RB. 128; a **phryt na thygyawd** idaw geissyaw mynet y mywn trist vu ganthaw *and since he did not succeed in getting in he was sad* Hg. I. 39.

(b) With the subjunctive, e.g. pa uedwl yw dy teu di unben **pryt na bwyttehych** *what is in thy mind, sir, that thou dost not eat? (that keeps thee from eating)* RB. 292; py wyneb yssyd arnat ti **pryt na delut** y edrych y gofut a uu arnaf i *what face hast thou that thou didst not come to see the grief that was upon me?* RB. 176.

229. pyr (**py** + **yr** *for what?*).

1. *Why?* e.g. **pyr** (= **py rac** RB. 126) **y kyuerchy dy** *why dost thou call?* WB. 486.

2. *Since, that*, e.g. gvae vi **pir imteith** genhide in kỳueith *woe to me that I walked in associateship with thee* BB. 11[b].

230. tra *while*; often preceded by **hyt.**

(a) With the past indicative, e.g. ny omedwyt neb **tra barhaawd** *no one met with refusal while it lasted* RB. 17; y

tyuawd heint yndaw a nychtawt **hyt tra uu** uyw *there developed in him a sickness and a wasting as long as he lived* RB. 108.

(b) With the subjunctive, e.g. **tra vych** ti yn kyscu mi a af y ymwelet ar iarll *while thou art sleeping, I will go to see the earl* WB. p. 214; **hyt tra ym gatter** yn vyw hanbyd gwaeth drem vy llygeit *while I am left alive my eyesight will be worse* RB. 119; **tra uei** y mywn coet ar vric y coet y kerdei *while he was in a wood he would walk on the tops of the trees* RB. 108; pei nam goganewch . . . mi a gysgwn **tra uewn** yn aros vy mwyt *if you would not laugh at me, I would sleep while I wait for my food* RB. 162; **hyt tra uei** yn gorffywys yd archei eu blygaw yn vyw rac y vron *while he was resting he asked that they should be flayed alive before him* RB. II. 79.

231. wrth *because*; negative **wrth na,** e.g. adolwyn yw genhyf itt y gadw yn da, **wrth nas rodwn** i ef iti yr y seith dinas goreu yth gyuoeth, ac **wrth** hefyt **y lledir** dy benn etwa ac ef *I entreat thee to guard it well, because I would not give it thee for the seven best towns in thy kingdom, and because too I will yet cut off thy head with it* CM. 31; **guerth na buost** vffil *because thou hast not been submissive* BB. 11^{b}.

232. yn 1. *where*, e.g. dos ragot ẏ lys Arthur **yn y** (=**yn lle** RB. 195) **mae** goreu y gwyr *go to Arthur's court where the men are best* WB. 119; **yn** (=**lle** RB. 195) **y gwelych** eglwys can dẏ pater wrthi *where thou seest a church, recite thy pater to it* WB. 119.

2. *when*, e.g. **yn** y bo canmoledig Gruffudd . . . cerddwn weithon ar ddarogan Merddin *when Gruffudd has been praised, let us now pass to the prophecy of Merlin* MA. 723^{a}; **yn** y bei orchyuygedic angheu a gyuodes y trydyd dyd *who, when death had been overcome, arose on the third day* Hg. II. 76.

NOTE.—See Rev. Celt. 28, p. 198.

233. yny *until.*

(a) With a past indicative (or historic present), e.g. wynt a drigyassant **yny daruu** idaw ef hynny *they stayed until he had finished that* RB. 267; dyuot a orugant yr holl niferoed **hyny vydant** yn emyl y kae *the whole multitude came till they were beside the enclosure* WB. p 224.

(b) With the subjunctive, e.g. arhowch y gyt a mi **yny darffo** ym gymryt gwrogaeth vyg goreugwyr *wait with me till I have received the homage of my nobles* RB. 267; y byryw[y]t y kalaned yn y peir **yny uei** yn llawn *the corpses were cast into the cauldron till it should be full* RB. 39.

234. yr na *since not, though not.*

(a) With indicative, e.g. am ernyw **yr na daw** *it afflicted me since he will not come* MA. 183^{b}.

(b) With subjunctive, e.g. darogan yw idaw kaffel etiued ohonat ti **yr nas kaffo** o arall *it is his fate that he shall have offspring of thee though he has had none of another* RB. 101; ny chyffroes un aelawt ar Gopart yr y uedru mwy noc **yr na metrit** *not one limb of Copart was affected, though it was hit more than though it had not been hit* Hg. II. 149.

NEGATIVE PARTICLES.

235. ny, before a vowel **nyt**; infixed pronouns **ny-m-, ny-th-, ny-s-,** etc.

(a) Except before the imperative, **ny** is the regular negative in main clauses, e.g. **ny chelaf** *I will not conceal*; **ny lyuassei** neb *no one dared*; **nyt oed** da gennyf ynneu hynny *that did not please me*; **ny bo** teu dy benn *may not thy head be thine.*

(b) **ny** introduces relative clauses (where Bret. and Corn. like Ir. have **na**), e.g. ẏn ẏ wlad **nẏ rẏ welei** eiroet *in a country that he had never seen.*

NOTE.—In such clauses **na** is exceptional in Welsh, e.g. yssit **nas keffych** (by yssyd **ny cheffych** 120) *there is something that thou wilt not get* RB. 121—123.

236. na, before a vowel **nat**; with infixed pronouns **na-m-** etc. This is the regular negative in dependent clauses, e.g. ryued yw gennyf i **nam atwaenost** *I wonder that thou dost not know me*; ef a gadarnhaei y gwennwynei y dwfyr hwnnw genedyl y Corannyeit

ac **na ladei** ac **nat eidigauei** neb oe genedyl ehun *he gave assurance that that water would poison the race of the Corannyeit, and would not kill and would not harm anyone of his own race* RB. 96; breid vu **na syrthyawd** yr llawr *she almost fell to the ground* Hg. I. 308; mi a wnaf itt **na bo** reit itt uot yn trist *I will bring it about for thee that there will be no need for thee to be sad*; golychaf y wledic pendefic mawr **na bwyf** trist *I will entreat the king, the great Prince, that I may not be sad* FB. 182. Further examples will be found under the conjunctions (but **can ny, cyn ny, ony**).

NOTE 1.—**na** is found in the second member of a conditional sentence introduced by **o** (of which the negative is **ony**), e.g. o gwely vwyt a diawt, or byd reit itt wrthaw ac **na bo** o wybot a dayoni y rodi itt, kymer dy hun ef *if thou seest food and drink, if thou hast need of it, and no one has the courtesy and kindness to give it thee, take it thyself* RB. 195.

NOTE 2.—The use of **na** may be noted in sentences like the following: kanys estrawn genedyl a phaganyeit ywch ac **nat atwen** inheu etwa nach moes nach deuodeu *for ye are foreigners and pagans, and I do not yet know your character or your customs* RB. II. 134; a gwedy menegi y bawp o tywyssogyon Freinc ar neilltu ac **na chauas** na phorth na nerth *after he had set forth the case to each of the chiefs of France separately and got neither help nor support* RB. II. 74.

237. na, before vowel **nac** (cf. Ir. nāch-); with infixed pronouns **na-m-** etc. **na(c)** is used:—

(a) As the negative with the imperative, e.g. **na dos** *do not go*; **nac amouyn** amdanaw *do not ask about it.* **na** is also sometimes found with the subjunctive used in an imperative sense, e.g. **na discȳnnȳch** *do not dismount* WB. 399.

(b) In negative answers to questions (§ 241).

(c) Not preceded by a question, in vivid negation, e.g. dyret y uwytta, heb ef. **nac af** yrof a Duw, heb hi "*come to eat*," *said he.* "*I will not go, between God and me*," *said she* RB. 289; eres yw gennyf na uedrut gymedroli ar wneuthur esgidyeu wrth uessur. **na uedreis,** heb ynteu. mi ae metraf weithon "*I am surprised that thou couldst not succeed in making shoes by measurement.*" "*I could not*," *said he;* "*I shall be able to do it now*" RB. 70; erchi a oruc y iarll y Enit ymdiarchenu a chymryt gwisc arall ymdanei. **na uynnaf** yrof a Duw, heb hi *the earl asked Enid to unrobe herself and put on another dress.* "*I will not, between God and me*," *said she.*

NOTE.—For a similar usage in the other British languages and in Irish see the "Transactions of the London Philological Society" 1898-9, page 54, note.

238. na, disjunctive particle; before vowels **nac**; with the article **nar**; with infixed possessive adjectives **nam, nath, nae** etc., e.g. tegach oed noc y gallei neb y gredu **nae** dywedut *he was fairer than anyone could believe or tell* CM. 1; heb wybot dim or vrat **nae** thybyaw *without knowing or suspecting anything of the treachery* RB. II. 218; **na—na,** e.g. ny byd reit itt torri **na** gwaew **na** chledyf *there will be no need for thee to break either spear or sword*; y Duw y dygaf vyg kyffes **nae** werthu **nae** ellwng nas gwnaf i *I vow to God that I will neither sell it nor let it go* RB. 56; beth bynnac a uo y marchawc racco **na** byw **na** marw *whatever becomes of yonder knight, whether he lives or dies* RB. 289; py beth bynhac a gaffer drwy **na** thwyll **na** chedernit *whatever is got through treachery or force* RB. II. 206; pan dycko beich **na** mawr **na** bychan uo *when he brings a load whether it be great or small* RB. 109.

INTERROGATIVE AND RESPONSIVE PARTICLES.

INTERROGATIVE PARTICLES.

239. a; with the present of the copula **ae** (§ 155η).

(a) In direct questions, e.g. **a** weleist di varchawc *hast thou seen a horseman?* **ae** amser ynni vynet yr byrdeu *is it time for us to go to table?*

(b) In indirect questions, e.g. govyn a oruc y gwr y Peredur **a** wydyat llad a chledyf *the man asked Peredur whether he knew to smite with a sword*; edrych a oruc **a** yttoed ef yn deffroi *she looked to see if he was stirring.*

(c) ae—ae *whether—or,* e.g. yn amheu beth a dywedei **ae** gwir **ae** geu *doubting whether what he said was true or false* RB. II. 47; e kefreyth a deueyt bod en yaun provy **ae** moruyn **ae** nyt

moruyn *the law says it is right to try whether she is a maiden or whether she is not a maiden* BCh. p. 40; ny wydyat hitheu beth a wnaei . . . **ae** dywedut hynny **ae** tewi *she did not know what she should do, whether she should tell that or keep silent* R.B. 270; *either—or*, e.g. a uynny di **ae** diawt **ae** dim *dost thou desire drink or anything?* RB. 276; a thebic yw genhyf i na doeth y wrthunt heb lad **ae** rei onadunt **ae** cwbyl *and I think that he did not leave them without slaying either some or all of them* WB. p 221.

240. pony (=Ir. cani), before vowels **ponyt**; with the present of the copula **ponyt** = *nonne?* e.g. **pony** chlywy di *dost thou not hear?* RB. 272; **ponyt** oed iawn y titheu *would it not be right for thee?* RB. 246.

Responsive Particles.

241. In answers to questions the verb or the predicate noun is often repeated, e.g. a gaffaf i letty gennyt ti, heb y Peredur. **keffy,** heb ynteu, yn llawen "*shall I get a lodging with thee?*" *said Peredur.* "*Yes,*" *said he,* "*gladly*"; a yttiw Kei yn llys Arthur. Yttiw "*is Kei in Arthur's court?*" "*Yes*"; ae amser ynni vynet yr byrdeu. **amser** "*is it time for us to go to table?*" "*Yes.*" In negative answers **na(c)** is used, e.g. a atwaenost di y marchawc racco mawr. **nac atwen** "*knowest thou yonder great horseman?*" "*No*"; dywet, heb ef, a vu ef gennyt ti a gwneuthur anuod arnat. **na vu,** myn vyg cret, heb hi, na cham nys goruc ym "*tell me,*" *said he,* "*was he with thee and did he do violence to thee?*" "*No,*" *said she,* "*and he did me no wrong*"; ae byw. **na vyw** "*is he alive?*" "*No.*" In answer to **ae, nac ef** (=Mod.W. **nage**) is found, e.g. dywet unbenn, heb ef, ae o anwybot ae o ryfyc y keissut ti colli ohonof i vy mreint . . . **nac ef,** heb y Gereint, ny wydywn i kaethu fford y neb "*tell me, sir, is it through ignorance or arrogance that thou didst seek to make me lose my privilege?*" "*No,*" *said Gereint,* "*I did not know that the road was debarred to any one*" WB. p. 217.

NOTE.—**nac ef** is also found without a preceding question, e.g. arhowch vi yma, heb y Peredur, mi a af y ymwelet ar pryf. **nac ef,** arglwyd, heb wynt, awn y gyt y ymlad ar pryf "*wait for me here,*" *said Peredur,* "*I will go to visit the worm.*" "*Nay, lord,*" *said they,* "*let us go together to fight with the worm.*"

242. Certain particles are used in answer.

ie, ieu, affirmatively, e.g. ae gwr y Arthur wyt ti. **Ie** myn vyg kret, heb y Peredur "*art thou one of Arthur's men?*" "*Yes, by my faith,*" *said Peredur*; gouyn a wnaeth ef yr gwr . . . ae offeiryat oed ef. **Ieu** arglwyd, heb ynteu *he asked the man if he was a priest.* "*Yes, Lord,*" *said he.*

do (cf. Ir. tō) affirmative, **nado** (Ir. nā thō) negatively, in answer to a preterite (or pluperfect of indirect question), e.g. a unben, heb ef, a leweist ti dy ginnyaw. **do,** heb ef "*Sir,*" *said he,* "*hast thou eaten thy dinner?*" "*Yes,*" *said he*; deffroi a oruc Arthur a gofyn a gysgassei hayach. **do** arglwyd, heb yr Owein, dalym *Arthur awoke and asked if he had slept for some time.* "*Yes,*" *said Owein,* "*for a while.*" a vwyteeist di dim hediw. **nado,** heb ynteu "*hast thou eaten anything to-day?*" "*No,*" *said he.*

NOTE.—Both **ie, ieu** and **nado** are found without a preceding question, e.g. ar hynny llyma hitheu ỳr iarlles ỳn datlewygu. **ie,** heb hi, ae kychwyn a uynnỳ ti. ie, heb ef *thereupon lo the countess recovered from her swoon.* "*Really,*" *said she* "*dost thou desire to set forth?*" "*Yes,*" *said he* WB. 119; **ie** (=**ieu** RB. 210), heb y Peredur, ỳma y bỳdwn heno "*truly,*" *said Peredur, we will remain here to-night*" WB. 139; mi a debygaf...na cheueist na bwyt na diawt. **nado** yrof a Duw, heb ynteu "*I think that thou hast got neither food nor drink.*" "*No, between God and me,*" *said he* RB. 275.

THE INTERJECTION.

243. Interjections proper are :—

a, ha (=Ir. ā), in address, e.g. **a vorwỳn,** heb y Peredur, a doỳ ti ỳ dangos imi ỳr aniueil hwnnw "*maiden,*" *said Peredur,* "*wilt thou come to shew me that beast?*" **ha** (=**a** WB. 169) **unbenn,** heb y uorwyn, pei gwnelut vyg kyghor . . . ti a gaeut y drws "*Lord,*" *said the maiden,* "*if thou wouldst follow my advice, thou wouldst shut the door*" RB. 235.

oi a, e.g. **oi a uorwyn dec** a bery di bot vym march i am arueu yn vn lletty a mi heno *hark! my fair maid, wilt thou see that my horse and my arms are in the same lodging with me to-night?* RB. 217; dyhed a beth bot gwr kystal a thi heb gedymdeith;

oi a wrda y mae y mi gedymdeith *"it is a strange thing that a man like thee should have no companion." "But, my lord, I have a companion"* RB. 127.

oian a, e.g. **oian a parchellan** a parchell dedwit *ho! little pig, happy pig* BB. 26[b].

och, e.g. **och Iessu** na dŷffv wŷ nihenit kŷn dŷffod ar wi llave lleith mab Guendit *O Jesus that my end had come before the death of Gwendydd's son came upon my hand* BB. 25[b]; **och,** heb y Riannon, paham y rody di atteb uelly *"alas!" said Riannon, "why dost thou answer thus?"* RB. 13; erchi y vendyth a wnaeth; **och a truan,** heb ef, ny dylyy gaffel bendyth *he asked him for his blessing. "Unhappy wretch," said he, "thou dost not deserve a blessing"* RB. 236.

ub, e.g. neu chwitheu pwŷ ŷwch. kenhadeu Arthur ŷssŷd ŷma yn erchi Olwenn; **vb wyr** nawd dŷw ragoch, ŷr ŷ bŷt na wnewch hŷnnŷ *"and who are you?" "Messengers of Arthur that are here seeking Olwen." "Alack! men, God preserve you. For the world do not do that"* WB. 473.

244. Of an interjectional character are the following:—**llyma** *lo here!* (like Fr. **voici**), e.g. **llŷma** weithon ual ŷd hellawd Arthur ŷ carw *Lo now! this is how Arthur hunted the stag* WB. 402; **llŷma** ŷ uorwŷn ŷ kefeist ti dy warthrud oe achaws *See here is the maiden on whose account thou didst get thy shame* WB. 407. Also **llyman** RB. 87, WB. 185, p. 92[b]; **llŷna** *lo there!* (like Fr. **voilà**), e.g. **llyna** ŷssŷd iawnaf am hŷnnŷ *Lo! that is the fairest course with reference to that* WB. 406; ie vorwŷn, heb y Kei, **llyna** vedru ŷn drwc *"Indeed, woman," said Kei, "that is ill behaviour"* WB. 123; **nachaf** *lo! behold!* e.g. **nachaf** uarchawc yn dyuot yr porth *behold a horseman coming to the gate* RB. 233; **wely dy** (lit. *dost thou see?*) *lo! behold!* e.g. **welŷ dŷ** racco (= **weluch chwi** racw WB. p. 94[a]) ŷ gaer *Lo! yonder is the city* WB. 185.

A Middle-Welsh Reader

I. LEAR AND HIS DAUGHTERS.[a]

From the Red Book of Hergest.

1. Ac yna gɷedy marɷ Bleiddut y drychafwyt[1] Lyr y vab ynteu yn vrenhin. A thrugein[2] mlyned y bu yn llywyaɷ y vrenhinyaeth[3] yn wraɷl, ac a adeilɷys dinas ar auon Soram, ac ae gelɷis Kaer Lyr; ac yn Saesnec y gelɷir Leissestyr. Ac ny bu idaɷ un mab namyn teir merchet. Sef oed enɷeu y verchet:[4] Goronilla, Ragaɷ,[5] Cordeilla. A diruaɷr y karei eu tat ɷynt, a mɷyaf eissoes y karei y verch jeuaf idaɷ Cordeilla.

2. A phan yttoed yn llithraɷ parth ae henein,[1] medylyaɷ a wnaeth pa ɷed y gadawei[2] y gyuoeth gɷedy ef y[3] verchet. Sef a ɷnaeth profi pɷy vɷyaf oe verchet ae karei, ɷrth rodi idi y ran oreu or kyuoeth gan wr. A galɷ a ɷn[a]eth[4] attaɷ y verch hynaf idaɷ Goronilla, a gofyn idi pa veint y karei hi efo.[5] A thygu a ɷnaeth hitheu y[6] nef a[7] daear[8] bot yn vɷy y karei hi euo noe heneit ehun. A chredu a ɷnaeth ynteu idi[9] hynny, a dyɷedut,[10] kan oed kymeint[11] y karei hi euo a hynny, y rodei ynteu draean[12] y gyuoeth genti hi y ɷr[13] a deɷissei yn ynys Prydein.

3. Ac yn ol honno galɷ attaɷ Ragua[1] y verch eil hynaf idaɷ, a gofyn idi pa veint y karei hi euo. A thygu a ɷnaeth hitheu y gyuoetheu y nef ar daear[2] na allei hi[3] dyɷedut ar y thauaɷtleueryd pa veint y karei hi euo.[4] A chredu a ɷnaeth ynteu hynny, ac adaɷ idi hitheu y rodi[5] yr gɷr a deɷissei, a thraean[6] y gyuoeth[7] genti.

[a] Letters enclosed in square brackets [ ] are wanting in the MS.

Variants from British Museum, Additional 19,707.

Ch. 1.—1 drycheuit 2 thrugeint 3 yn y llywaɷ hi 4 eu henweu 5 ragau

Ch. 2.—1 a heneint 2 yd adaɷei 3 yɷ 4 wnaeth 5 ef 6 yr 7 ar 8 dayaer 9 idi hi 10 dywedut ɷrthi 11 gymeint 12 drayan 13 yr gɷr

Ch. 3.—1 ragau 2 dayar 3 *om.* 4 y karhei 5 y rodei hi (hi *over line*) 6 thrayan 7 kyfoeth

4. Ac yna y gelƕis[1] y verch jeuaf idaƕ attaƕ, a gouyn idi pa veint y karei hi euo.[2] A dyƕedut a ƕnaeth hitheu y rygaru[3] ef eiryoet[4] megys y dylyei uerch garu y that, ac nat ytoed etƕa[5] yn peidaƕ ar karyant hƕnnƕ[a] ac erchi idaƕ gƕarandaƕ yn graff pa veint oed hynny. A sef[6] oed hynny, y[7] veint y bei y gyuoeth ae jechyt ae deƕred. A blyghau a llidiaƕ[8] a oruc ynteu, a dyƕedut ƕrthi, kan oed kymeint y tremygassei euo[9] a hynny, val na charei[10] hi euo megys y karei y chwioryd ereill,[11] y diuarnei ynteu hi hyt naƕ chaffei neb ryƕ ran or ynys y gyt ac ƕynteu. Ny dyƕat[12] ynteu nas rodei hi[13] y wr ny hanffei[c] or ynys, o damƕeinei yr kyfryƕ ƕr hƕnnƕ y herchi heb argyfreu genti. Hyn heuyt a gadarnhaei hyt na lauuryei y geissaƕ gƕr idi megys yr rei ereill.[14] Kanys mƕy y karyssei ef hi nor rei ereill eiryoet,[15] a hitheu yn y dremygu ynteu[16] yn vƕy nor rei ereill.[17]

5. A heb ohir o gytgyghor y wyrda y rodes y dƕy verchet hynaf idaƕ y dywyssogyon[1] yr Alban a Chernyƕ, a hanner y gyuoeth[2] gantunt hyt tra [vei][3] vyƕ ef, a gƕedy bei varƕ, y kyoueth gantunt[4] yn deu haner. Ac yna gƕedy clybot o Aganipus vrenhin Freinc clot a phryt a thegƕch Cordeilla, anuon kenadeu a ƕnaeth oe herchi yn wreic idaƕ, a dyƕedut ƕrth y that y genadƕri.[a] Ac ynteu a dyƕaƕt[5] y rodei y verch idaƕ ef heb argyfreu genti,[6] kan daroed idaƕ rodi y gyuoeth ae eur ae aryant y[7] dƕy verchet ereill.[8] A phan gigleu Aganipus tecket y vorƕyn,[9] kyflaƕn vu oe charyat. A dy[ƕ]edut[10] a wnaeth bot idaƕ ef digaƕn o eur ac aryant, ac nat oed reit idaƕ ef ƕrth dim namyn gƕreic deledƕ[11] dylyedaƕc y kaffei blant

Ch. 4.—1 y gelwis ynteu 2 y karei ef 3 ac y dywavt hitheu y karei 4 eiroet 5 *om.* [a]karyat hƕnƕ 6 ac ysef 7 yny 8 a llidiaƕ *om.* 9 hi euo 10 ual y karei 11 megys y chƕioryd y lleill [b]dyuarnei ynteu hi na 12 dywaƕt 13 na rodei ef hi [c]hanfei 14 megys y lleill 15 hihi nor lleill 16 tremygu ef 17 nor lleill

Ch. 5.—1 tywyssogyon 2 y kyfoeth idaƕ 3 tra uei 4 yn gƕbyl udunt ƕynteu [a]genatƕri 5 ac y dywaƕt ynteu 6 *om.* 7 gan y 8 y lleill 9 ae thelediwet *add.* 10 dywedut 11 teledƕ

ohanei[12] yn etiued ar y kyuoeth. Ac yn diannot[13] y kadarnhaƕyt y briodas y rygtunt.[14]

6. Ac ym pen yspeit yg kylch dƕed oes Lyr y goresgynnƕys y dofyon y ran or kyuoeth[1] a ganhalassei[2] ef yn ƕraƕl drƕy hir o[3] amser; ac y rannassant y rygtunt yn deu hanner. Ac o gymodloned y kymerth Maglaƕn tyƕyssaƕc yr Alban Lyr attaƕ a deugein marchaƕc y gyt ac ef, rac bot yn geƕilid gantaƕ bot heb varchogyon yn[4] y osgord. A gƕedy bot Lyr yn y wed honno gyt a Maglaƕn, blyghau a oruc Cordeilla[5] rac meint oed[6] o varchogyon gyt ae that,[7] ac rac eu gƕasanaethƕyr ƕynteu yn teruysgu y llys. A dyƕedut a ƕnaeth ƕrth y gƕr bot yn[8] digaƕn deg marchaƕc ar hugeint gyt ae that, a gellƕg y rei ereill ymdeith. A gƕedy dyƕedut hynny ƕrth Lyr, llidiaƕ a oruc, ac ymadaƕ a Maglaƕn, a mynet hyt at arll Kernyƕ y daƕ y llall; ae erbynyeit o hƕnnƕ yn anrydedus.

7. Ac ny bu benn y vlƕydyn yny daruu teruysc y rwg eu gƕasanaethwyr. Ac ƕrth hynny y sorres Ragua y verch ƕrthaƕ, ac erchi idaƕ ellƕg y varchogyon y ƕrthaƕ eithyr pump marchaƕc ae gƕasanaethei. A thristaƕ a ƕnaeth Lyr yna yn vaƕr, a chychƕyn odyna elchƕyl hyt at y verch yr hynaf idaƕ, o dybygu trugarhau ohonaei ƕrthaƕ oe gynnal ae varchogyon y gyt ac ef. Sef a ƕnaeth hitheu drƕy y llit tygu y gyuoetheu nef a dayar na chaffei ohir, ony ellygei y holl varchogyon y ƕrthaƕ eithyr vn y gyt ac ef ae gƕasanaethei; a dy[ƕ]edut nat oed reit y wr kyuoet ac euo vn lluossogrƕyd y gyt ac ef, na theulu namyn vn gƕr ae goassanaethei. A gƕedy na chaffei dim or a geissei gan y verchet, ellƕg y varchogyon a ƕnaeth eithir vn y gyt ac ef.

Ch. 5.—12 ohonei 12 dianot 13 y rydunt

Ch. 6.—1 ŷ dofyon arnaƕ y gyfoeth 2 gynhalassei 3 *om.* 4 ƕrth 5 Goronilla *recte* 6 a oed 7 gyt ac ef 8 *from here to* odyno (ch. 10, l. 7) *om.*

8. A gŏedy bot vellỳ rynaŏd, dŏyn ar gof a oruc y gyuoeth ae deilygdaŏt ae anrydet ae vedyant, a thristau yn vaŏr, a medylyaŏ gofŏy y verch a athoed y Freinc idaŏ. Ac ovynhau hynny heuyt a ŏnaeth rac mor digaryat y gellygassei ef hi y ŏrthaŏ; ac eissoes ny allŏys diodef y dianrydedu mal y daroed. A chychŏyn tu a Ffreinc a ŏnaeth.

9. A phan ytoed yn mynet yr llog ac na ŏelei neb y gyt ac ef namyn ar y drydyd, gan ŏylaŏ y dyŏaŏt yr ymadraŏd hŏnn: "Ae chŏichŏi tyghetuenneu! pa le y kerdŏch chŏi dros aŏch gnotaedic hynt? Pa achaŏs y kyffroassaŏch chŏi vivi eiryoet y ar vyg gŏastat detwydỳt? Kanys mŏy boen yŏ koffau kyuoeth gŏedy coller, no chytdiodef achenoctit heb ordyfneit kyuoeth kyn no hynny. Mŏy boen yŏ genyf i yr aŏr hon goffav uyg kyuoeth am anryded yn yr amser hŏnnŏ, yn yr hŏn yd oed y saŏl gan mil o varchogyon ym damgylchynu yn kerdet y gyt a mi, pan vydŏn yn ymlad ar kestyll ac ar dinassoed ac yn anreithaŏ kyvoeth vyg gelynyon, no diodef y poen ar achenoctit a ŏnaeth y gŏyr hynn y mi, y rei a uydynt yna dan vyn traen.[a] Och vi, a dŏyweu nef a dayar! pa bryt y daŏ yr amser y gallŏyf y talu elchŏyl yn y gŏrthŏyneb yr gŏyr hynn? Och Cordeilla vyg karedic verch! mor wir yŏ dy ymadraŏd teu di, pan dyŏedeist panyŏ val y bei vyg gallu am medyant am kyuoeth am jeuegtit, panyŏ vellỳ y karut ti vyui! Ac ŏrth hynny, tra vu vyg kyuoeth i yn gallu rodi rodyon, paŏb am karei; ac nyt mi a gerynt namyn vy rodyon am deuodeu am donyeu. Ac ŏrth hynny, pan gilyŏys y rodyon, y foes y karyat. Ac ŏrth hynny pa ffuruf y gallaf rac keŏilyd adolŏyn nerth na chanhorthŏy y genyt ti, ŏrth rysorri yg kam ohonaf i ŏrthyt ti am dy doethineb

[a] *leg.* traet.

di, ath rodi yn dremygedic gan debygu bot yn waeth dy diŏed noth whioryd ereill, a thitheu yn well ac yn doethach noc ŏyntŏy? Kanys gŏedy a rodeis i o da a chyuoeth udunt hŏy, y gŏnaethant hŏy vyui yn allŏtut ac yn echenaŏc om gŏlat am kyuoeth."

10. Ac y dan gŏynaŏ y aghyfnerth ofut yn y wed honno ef a doeth hyt ym Paris, y dinas yd oed y verch yndaŏ. Ac anuon amylder o annercheu at y verch a ŏnaeth y dyŏedut y ryŏ agkyfreith a gyuaruu ac ef. A gŏedy dyŏedut or gennat nat oed namy[n] ef ae [y]swein, sef a wnaeth hit[h]eu anuon amylder o eur ac aryant, ac erchi mynet ae that odyno hyt y myŏn[1] dinas arall, a chymryt arnaŏ y vot yn glaf, a gŏneuthur enneint idaw, ac ardymheru y gorff a symudaŏ[2] dillat, a chymryt attaŏ deugein marchaŏc ac eu kŏeiraŏ[3] yn hard ac yn syberŏ[4] o veirch[5] a dillat ac arueu; a gŏedy darffei hynny, anuon oe ulaen at[6] Aganipus vrenhin ac at[6] y uerch y dyŏedut y vot yn dyuot. A gŏedy daruot gŏneuthur kymeint ac a archyssei,[7] anuon a ŏnaeth llythyreu[8] at y brenhin[a] ac at y verch ynteu y dyŏedut[9] y uot[10] yn dyuot[11] ar y deugeinuet o varchogyon[12] gŏedy y[13] rydehol oe dofyon o ynys Prydein, yn dyuot y geissaŏ porth gantunt ŏynteu[13] y oresgyn y gyfoeth dracheuen.[14] A phan gigleu y brenhin hynny, kychŏyn a ŏnaeth ef ae wreic ae deulu[15] yn y erbyn[16] yn anrydedus, mal yd oed deilŏg[17] erbynyeit[18] gŏr a uei yn gyhyt ac euo[19] yn vrenhin ar ynys Prydein. A hyt tra uu yn Freinc, y rodes y brenhin lywodraeth[20] y gyuoeth[21] idaŏ, mal[22] y bei haŏs idaŏ caffel porth a nerth y oresgyn y gyuoeth drachefyn.[23]

11. Ac yna yd anuonet gŏys dros ŏyneb teyrnas Freinc

Ch. 10.—1 hyt yn 2 y *add.* 3 kyweiraŏ 4 yn hard syberŏ 5 veirych 6 ar 7 kymeint a hynnỳ 8 llyr [a]brenhin 9 ynteu y dywedut *om.* 10 ef *add.* 11 yn dyuot *om.* 12 deugeinuet marchaŏc 13 *om.* 14 kyuoeth drachefyn 15 teulu 16 yn erbyn llyr 17 teilŏg 18 erbyneit 19 ef 20 llywodraeth 21 kyuoeth 22 val 23 idaŏ ef *add.*

y gynullaȣ[1] holl deȣred y uynet[2] gyt a Lyr y oresgyn y gyuoeth[3] drachefyn idaȣ. A gȣedy bot pob peth yn baraȣt, kychȣyn a oruc Lyr a Chordeilla y verch ar lu hȣnnȣ gantunt, a cherdet yny doethant y ynys Prydein, ac yn diannot ymlad ae dofyon a chael[4] y fudugolyaeth. A gȣedy gȣedu pob peth or ynys idaȣ ef[5] i[6] bu varȣ Lyr yn y dryded vlȣydyn; ac y bu [varȣ][7] Aganipus vrenhin Freinc. Ac yna y kymerth Cordeilla llyȣodraeth y deyrnas[8] yn y llaȣ ehun. Ac y cladȣyt Lyr y myȣn dayardy[a] a ȣnaeth ehun y dan auon Sorram. Ar demyl[b] honno ry ȣnathoed[9] yn anryded yr duȣ a elȣit yna[10] Bifrontisiani. A phan delei wylua y demyl[11] honno, y deuei holl grefydȣyr y dinas ar wlat oe anrydedu. Ac y dechreuit[c] pob gȣeith or a dechreuit hyt ym pen y vlȣydyn. A gȣedy gȣledychu pump[12] mlyned o Gordeilla yn dagnouedus,[13] y kyuodes y deu nyeint yn y herbyn, Morgan[14] vab Maglaȣn tyȣyssaȣc yr Alban, a Chuneda[15] vab Henwyn tyȣyssaȣc Kernyw, a llu aruaȣc gantunt. A daly Cordeilla a ȣnaethant ae charcharu.[16] Ac yn y carchar hȣnnȣ[17] o dolur kolli y kyuoeth[18] y gȣnaeth ehun y lleith.

Ch. 11.—1 y *add.* 2 ȣrth eu hellȣg y 3 kyfoeth 4 chaffel 5 *om.* 6 y 7 varȣ 8 teyrnas [a]dayarty [b]temyl 9 a wnathoed ehun 10 ena 11 demhyl [c]dechrewit 12 pvm (*but a stroke has been added below as if to change* v *to* y) 13 dagneuedus 14 Margan 15 Chueda 16 A—charcharu: ae daly ae charcharu 17 hvnv 18 chyfoeth

II. THE STORY OF ARTHUR.

From the Red Book of Hergest.

1. A gȣedy marȣ Uthur Pendragon yd ymgynullassant holl wyrda ynys Prydein, jeirll a barȣneit[1] a marchogyon vrdaȣl ac escyb ac abadeu ac athraȣon hyt yg Kaer Vudei. Ac o gytsynyedigaeth paȣb yd archyssant y Dyfric archescob Kaer Lion ar Wysc vrdaȣ Arthur y vab ynteu[2] yn vrenhin. Ac eu hagen ae kymhellei y hynny. Kanys pan gigleu y Saeson marȣolyaeth[3] Vthur Pendragon,[4] yd ellygyssynt ȣynteu genadeu hyt yn Germania y geissaȣ porth. Ac neur dathoed[5] llyghes vaȣr attunt, a Cholgrim yn tyȣyssaȣc[6] arnadunt. Ac neur daroed udunt goreskyn[7] o Humyr hyt y mor a Chatyneis[8] yn y gogled. Sef oed hynny y dryded rann y ynys Prydein. A gȣedy gȣelet o Dyfric archescob drueni y bobyl ae hymdiuedi, ef a gymerth escyb y gyt ac ef, ac a dodes coron y teyrnas am ben Arthur. A phymthegmlȣyd oed Arthur yna, ac ny chlyȣsit ar neb arall eiryoet[9] y deuodeu o deȣred a haelder a oed arnaȣ ef. Idaȣ ef hefyt yd enillyssei y dayoni anyanaȣl a oed arnaȣ y veint rat honno, hyt pan oed garedic ef gan baȣb or a glyȣei[10] dyȣetut amdanaȣ.[11] Ac ȣrth hynny gȣedy y arderchockau ef or vrenhinaȣl enryded hȣnnȣ, gan gadȣ ohonaȣ y gnotaedic[12] defaȣt a[13] ymrodes y haelder. Ac odyna kymeint o amylder marchogyon a lithrei attaȣ, a megys y dyffygyei idaȣ da y rodi[14] udunt yn vynych. Ac eissoes

Variants from British Museum, Additional 19,707.

(Ch. 1). 1 barvnyeit, 2 arth*ur* ap vthyr, 3 marwolaeth, 4 bendragon, 5 dothoed, 6 dywyasavc, 7 gverescyn, 8 mor kateneis, 9 eiroet, 10 glyȣhei, 11 ymdanav anwaethach or ae gȣelei, 12 nottaedic, 13 ef a, 14 rodei,

py dıȣ bynhac y bo haelder anyanaȣl y gyt a phrofedic[15] volyant, kyt bo eisseu arnaȣ ar dalym,[16] yr hynny ny at Duȣ wastat aghenoctit y argyȣedu idaȣ.

2. Ac ȣrth hynny Arthur, kanys molyant a getymdeithockaei[1] haelder a dayoni, Ilunyaethu ryfel a oruc ar y Saeson, hyt pan vei oc eu golut hȣy[2] y kyfoethogei ynteu y teulu ae varchogyon. Kanys iaȣnder a dyskei hynny idaȣ; kanys ef a dylyei o dreftataȣl dylyet holl lywodraeth ynys Prydein. A chynnullaȣ a oruc ef yr holl ieuenctit a oed darystygedic idaȣ ef, a chyrchu parth a Chaer Effraȣc.[3] A gȣedy gȣybot o Golgrim hynny, kynullaȣ a oruc ynteu y Saeson ar Yscotteit ar Ffichteit, ac y gyt ac[4] aneiryf luossogrȣyd nifer gantaȣ dyuot yn erbyn Arthur hyt yg glan Dulas. A gȣedy ymgyfaruot yna o bop[5] parth y dygȣydassant llaȣer or deu lu. Ac or diwed Arthur a gafas y vudugolyaeth. A ffo a oruc Colgrim[6] y dinas Kaer Efraȣc. Arthur ae lu a gychwynȣys[7] ac a werchetwis[8] arnaȣ.

3. A gȣedy clybot o Baldȣf[1] y vraȣt ynteu[2] hynny,[3] ef a gyrchaȣd tu ar lle yd oed y vraȣt yg gȣarchae,[4] a chȣe mil o wyr gantaȣ y geissaȣ y rydhau odyno. Kanys yr amser yd ymladyssei[5] Arthur ae vraȣt ef, yd oed Baldȣf[6] yna ar lan y mor yn aros[7] dyuot Chledric[8] o Germania, a oed yn dyuot a phorth gantaȣ udunt. Ac ȣrth hynny gȣedy y dyuot ar[9] dec milltir y ȣrth y gaer, darparu a oruc dȣyn kyrch nos am ben Arthur ae lu. Ac eissoes nyt ymgelaȣd[10] hynny rac Arthur. Yna[11] yd erchis ynteu y Gadȣr[12] tyȣyssaȣc[13] Kernyȣ kymryt whe chant marchaȣc a their mil o bedyt[14] y gyt ac ef a mynet yn

(Ch.) 1. 15 phrouygedic, 16 talym
(Ch. 2). 1 gytymdeithoccaei, 2 ȣy, 3 efraȣc, 4 *om.*, 5 pop, 6 golgrim, 7 gylchynȣys y dinas, 8 ae gȣarchetwis
(Ch. 3). 1 baldvlf, 2 *om.*, 3 y warchae, 4 yg gvarchae *om.*, 5 ymladyssei, 6 valdvlf, 7 arhos, 8 cheldric, 9 hyt ar, 10 ymgelvys, 11 *om.*, 12 kadvr, 13 iarll, 14 pedyd

eu herbyn, ac eu ragot y nos honno y fford y doynt. A gȣedy kaffel o Gadȣr gȣybot y fford y doynt y gelynyon, eu kyrchu a oruc Kadȣr yn deissyfyt. A gȣedy briȣaȣ eu bydinoed ac eu hyssigaȣ a llad llaȣer onadunt, kymell y Saeson a oruc ar ffo.

4. Ac ȣrth hynny diruaȣr dristyt a gofal a gymerth Baldȣf[1] yndaȣ,[2] ȣrth na allȣys ellȣg[3] y vraȣt or gȣarchae yd oed yndaȣ. A medylyaȣ a oruc py wed y gallei gaffel[4] kyffur[5] y[6] ymdidan ae vraȣt; kanys ef a dybygei y kaffei bop[7] un onadunt[8] ell deu rydit a gȣaret yn hollaȣl, pei[9] keffynt ymdidan y gyt. A gȣedy na chaffei fford arall yn y byt, eillaȣ y wallt[10] ae varyf a oruc, a chymryt telyn yn y laȣ, ac yn rith erestyn a gȣaryyd dyuot ym plith y llu ar lluesteu. Ar clymeu[11] a ganei ef a dangossynt y vot yn telynyaȣr.[12] Ac or diwed gȣedy na thybygei neb y uot ef yn tywyssaȣc falst mal yd oed, nessau a oruc parth a muroed y gaer dan ganu y telyn. A gȣedy y adnabot or gȣyr o vyȣn, y dynu[13] a orugant ȣrth raffeu y myȣn. A gȣedy gȣelet ohonaȣ y vraȣt, ymgaru a orugant megys na ry ymwelynt[14] drȣy laȣer o yspeit kyn no hynny. Ac val yd oedynt uelly yn medylyaȣ ac yn keissaȣ ystryȣ py wed y gellynt ymrydhau odyno, ac yn annobeithaȣ oe rydit, nachaf eu kenadeu yn dyuot o Germania, a whe chan llog yn llaȣn o varchogyon aruaȣc gantunt, a Cheldric yn dywyssaȣc arnadunt, ac yn disgynu yn yr Alban.

5. A gȣedy clybot hynny o Arthur, ymadaȣ a oruc ynteu ar dinas rac petruster ymlad ar veint nifer honno,[1] a mynet odyno hyt yn Lundein. Ac yno galȣ attaȣ a oruc holl wyrda y deyrnas yscolheigon a lleygyon, ac

(Ch. 4). 1 baldvlf, 2 ac ynda, 3 gellȣg, 4 kaffel, 5 kyfrȣch 6 *om.*, 7 kanys ef a tybygei pop, 8 ohonunt, 9 bei, 10 ben? 11 ar crychyadeu *add.*,
12 telynaȣr 13 tynnu, 14 nar ymwelynt
(Ch. 5). 1 hvnnv

ymgyghor ac ỽynt beth a wnelynt[2] am hynny. Sef a gaỽssant o gyghor y kỽnsli hỽnnỽ; anuon kenadeu a orugant hyt ar Hoỽel[3] vab Emyr Llydaỽ, brenhin Brytaen Vechan, y uenegi idaỽ yr ormes a dathoed gan y Paganyeit ar[4] ynys Prydein. Kanys nei uab y[5] chỽaer oed Howel[3] y Arthur. A gỽedy clybot o Howel[3] y ryfel ar aflonydỽch a oed ar y ewythyr, erchi parattoi llyges a oruc,[6] a chynullaỽ pymtheg mil o uarchogyon aruaỽc. Ac ar y gỽynt kyntaf a gafas yn y ol, y deuth y borth Hamỽnt yr tir y[7] ynys Prydein. Ac Arthur ae haruolles ynteu or enryded y gỽedei aruoll gỽr kyfurd a hỽnnỽ; ac yn vynych ymgaru[8] bop eilwers.

6. Ac odyna gỽedy llithraỽ ychydic o dieuoed,[1] ỽynt a gyrchassant parth a Chaer Lỽytcoet, yr hon [a elwir][2] Lincol yr aỽr honn, ac yssyd ossodedic yn y wlat a elwir Lindysei ar benn mynyd rỽg dỽy auon. Ac ỽrth y gaer honno yd oed y Paganyeit yn eisted. A gỽedy eu dyuot yno y gyt ac eu holl niferoed, ymlad a orugant ar Saeson. Ac aglywedic aerua a ỽnaethant o honunt.[3] Kanys chwe mil onadunt a dygỽydassant yn yr un dyd hỽnnỽ. Rei oc eu llad, ereill oc eu bodi[4] a gollassant eu heneideu. Ac ỽrth hynny rei[5] ereill yn gyflaỽn o ofyn adaỽ y dinas a orugant, a chymryt eu ffo[6] yn lle diogelỽch udunt. Ac ny orffoỽysỽys Arthur oc eu hymlit hyt[7] yn llỽyn Kelydon. Ac yno ymgynull o bop lle a orugant oc eu fo,[8] a medylyaỽ[9] gỽrthỽynebu y Arthur. Ac odyna gỽedy dechreu ymlad, aerua a ỽnaethant or Brytanyeit gan eu hamdiffyn ehunein yn wraỽl; kanys o wascaỽt y gỽyd yn eu kanhorthỽy yd oedynt yn aruer o daflu ergytyeu,[10] ac y gochelynt ỽynteu[11] ergytyeu y Brytanyeit.

(Ch. 5). 2 wnelhynt, 3 hvel, 4 y, 5 *om.*, 6 a oruc *om.*, 7 *om.*, 8 yd amblygu y ymgaru

(Ch. 6). 1 dydyeu, 2 a elwir, 3 ohonu, 4 yn yr afonoed *add.*, 5 y rei, 6 fo yn y lle, 7 hyt pan deuthant hyt, 8 oc eu fo a orugant, 9 odyno *add.*, 10 kanys o wasgavt ỏ gvỏd yn eu kanhorthvy yd aruerynt, 11 *om.*

A phan welas Arthur hynny, yd erchis ynteu trychu y coet or parth hỽnnỽ yr llỽyn, a chymryt y kyffyon hynny ar traỽsprenneu[12] ac eu gossot yn eu kylch, ac eu gỽarchae yno megys na cheffynt vynet odyno, yny ymrodynt idaỽ, neu yny vydynt veirỽ o newyn. A gỽedy daruot gỽneuthur y kae, y dodes Arthur y varchogyon yn vydinoed yg kylch y llỽyn. Ac yno y buant uelly tri dieu a their nos. A phan welas y Saeson nat oed dim bỽyt gantunt, rac eu marỽ oll o newyn ỽynt a odologyssant[13] y Arthur y[14] gellỽg yn ryd y eu llogeu y uynet y eu gỽlat; ac adaỽ idaỽ ynteu eu heur ac eu haryant ac eu holl sỽllt, a theyrnget idaỽ bop[15] blỽydyn o Germania; a chadarnhau hynny gan rodi gỽystlon. Ac Arthur a gauas yn y gyghor kymryt hynny y gantunt, ac eu gellỽg[16] y eu llogeu.

7. Ac ual[1] yd oedynt[2] yn rỽygaỽ moroed yn mynet tu ae gỽlat, y bu ediuar gantunt gỽneuthur[3] yr amot hỽnnỽ ac Arthur; a throssi eu hỽyleu drachefyn parth ac ynys Prydein, a dyuot y draeth Totneis[4] yr tir, a dechreu anreithaỽ y gỽladoed hyt yn Hafren, a llad y tir-diwollodron a orugant. Ac odyna y kymerassant eu hynt hyt yg Kaer Vadon, ac eisted ỽrth y gaer, ac ymlad a hi. A gỽedy menegi hynny[5] y Arthur, ryfedu a oruc meint eu tỽyll ac eu hyskymundaỽt,[6] ac yn diannot crogi eu gỽystlon. Ac ymadaỽ a oruc ar Yscoteit ac ar Ffichteit yd oed yn y[7] kywarsagu. A bryssyaỽ a oruc y distryỽ y Saeson. Goualus oed am adaỽ Howel ap[8] Emyr Llydaỽ yn glaf yg Kaer Alclut o ỽrthrỽm heint. Ac or diỽed gỽedy dyuot hyt y lle y gỽelei y Saeson, y dywaỽt ef ual hyn: "Kany[9] bo teilỽg gan yr ysgymunedigyon Saeson[10] cadỽ ffyd ỽrthyf i,[11] miui

(Ch. 6). 12 travs, 13 adologyssant, 14 eu, 15 heuỳt pop, 16 gollvg

(Ch. 7). 1 mal, 2 oedyn, 3 wneuthur, 4 traeth tutneis, 5 hyn, 6 hyscumyndaỽt, 7 yny eu, 8 hvel mab, 9 kyny, 10 tvyllwyr anudonavl *add.*, 11 vrthym ni?

a gadȣaf ffyd ȣrth Duȣ; ac y gyt a hynny oe nerth[12] ynteu a dialaf hediȣ waet vyg kiȣtaȣtwyr arnadunt.[13] Gȣisgȣch aȣch arueu, wyr, gȣisgȣch, ac yn ȣraȣl kyrchȣn y bratwyr hynn. Heb petruster[14] gan ganhorthȣy Crist ni a orfydȣn.'

8. A gȣedy dywedut o Arthur hynny, Dyfric archescob Kaer Lion ar Wysc a safaȣd ar ben bryn goruchel, a dywedut ual hynn a oruc: "Ha wyrda," heb ef, "y rei yssyd arderchaȣc o gristonogaȣl ffyd ohonaȣch, kyuodȣch; koffeȣch waet aȣch kiȣtawtȣyr, yr hȣnn yssyd ellygedic drȣy urat y Paganyeit racco; kanys tragyȣydaȣl waratwyd yȣ yȣch, onyt ymrodȣch y amdiffyn aȣch gȣlat ach rydit. Ac ȣrth hynny ymledȣch dros aȣch gȣlat, ac or byd reit ywch, diodefȣch ageu drosti. Kanys yr agheu honno a vyd budugolyaeth a buched yr eneit. Pȣy bynhac hediȣ a el y agheu, ef ehunan a ymryd yn wiraberth y Duȣ, y gȣr a vu teilȣg gantaȣ rodi y eneit dros y vrodyr. Ac ȣrth hynny pȣy bynhac ohanaȣch a lader yn yr ymlad hȣnn, bit yr agheu honno yn benyt idaȣ ac yn vadeueint oe bechodeu, y dan amot nas gochelo, or damȣeina y dyuot."

9. A gȣedy kymryt bendyth y gȣr hȣnnȣ, bryssyaȣ a oruc paȣb y wisgaȣ eu harueu ymdanunt, ac ufudhau y gymenediweu yr archescob. Ac yna Arthur a wiscaȣd ymdanaȣ Iuruc a oed teilȣg y vrenhin. Penffestin eureit yskythredic ac arȣyd dreic a adassȣyt oe benn. Taryan a gymerth ar y ysgȣyd, yr honn a elȣit Gȣenn, yn yr hon yd oed delȣ yr arglȣydes Veir yn yskythredic; kanys ym pop yg a reit y galȣei ef arnei ac y coffei. Ac a rȣymȣyt a Chaletuȣlch y gledyf goreu, yr hȣnn a wnathoedit yn ynys Avallach. Gleif a deck[a]aȣd y deheu ef, yr hȣnn a elȣit Ron; vchel oed hȣnnȣ a Iydan ac adas y aerua.

(Ch. 7). 12 ae y gyt ac nerth, 13 arnadunt vy, 14 a heb petrus

Ac odyna gȣedy Iunyaethu y bydinoed o bop parth, y Saeson yn herȣyd eu deuaȣt kyrchu yn leȣ a ȣnaethant, ac ar hyt y dyd yn ȣraȣl gȣrthȣynebu yr Brytanyeit. Ac or diwed gȣedy trossi yr heul ar y dygȣydedigaeth, achub mynyd maȣr, a oed yn agos udunt, a ȣnaeth y Saeson, a chynal hȣnnȣ yn Ile castell udunt; a chan ymdiret yn amylder eu nifer tybygu bot yn digaȣn vdunt o gedernit y mynyd. A gȣedy dȣyn or heul y dyd arall rac ȣyneb, Arthur ae lu a eskynnaȣd pen y mynyd. Ac eissoes IIaȣer o wyr a golles ef; kanys haȣs oed yr Saeson o penn y mynyd argywedu yr Brytanyeit [noc yr Brytanyeit] yg gȣrthȣyneb y mynyd argywedu yr Saeson. Ac or diwed gan vȣyhau grym a Ilafur, gȣedy caffel or Brytanyeit penn y mynyd, yn y Ile ȣynt a dangossassant eu deheuoed yr Saeson. Ac yn erbyn hynny y Saeson yn ȣraȣl a ossodassant eu bronoed yn eu gȣrthȣyneb ȣynteu, ac oc eu holl angerd ymgynhal yn eu herbyn. A gȣedy treulaȣ IIaȣer or dyd uelly, Iidiaȣ a oruc Arthur rac hȣyret y gȣelei y vudugolyaeth yn dyuot idaȣ. Ac ar hynny noethi Caletuȣlch a oruc, a galȣ enȣ yr arglȣydes Ueir; ac o vuan ruthur kyrchu y Ile teȣaf y gȣelei vydinoed y Saeson. A phȣy bynhac a gyfarffei ac ef, gan alȣ enȣ Duȣ[a] o vn dyrnaȣt y Iladei. Ac ny orffoȣyssaȣd ar vn ruthur honno, hyt pan ladaȣd a Chaletfȣlch ehun trugein wyr a phetȣar can ȣr. A gȣedy gȣelet or Brytanyeit hynny, teȣhau eu toruoed a wnaethant ȣynteu ae ymlit ynteu, ac o bop parth udunt gȣneuthur aerua. Ac yn y Ile y dygȣydassant Golgrim a Baldȣlf y vraȣt a IIaȣer o vilyoed y gyt ac ȣynt. A phan welas Cheldric perigyl y gedymdeithon, yn y Ile heb annot ymchoelut a oruc y gyt ar rei ereill ar ffo.

10. A gȣedy caffel o Arthur y uudugolyaeth honno,

[a] enȣ duȣ: MS. duȣ duȣ.

ef a erchis y Gadȯr iarll Kernyȯ erlit y Saeson, hyt tra vryssyei ynteu yr Alban. Kanys menegi ar daroed idaȯ ry dyuot yr Yscotteit ar Ffichteit y ymlad a Chaer Alclut, y lle yd adaȯssei ef Howel y nei yn glaf. Ac ȯrth hynny y bryssyei ynteu yno rac caffel y gaer arnaȯ. Ac odyna Kadȯr tyȯyssaȯc Kernyȯ a deg mil y gyt ac ef a ymlynaȯd y Saeson. Ac nyt yn eu hol yd aeth, namyn achubeit eu llogeu yn gyntaf a oruc, rac caffel onadunt diogelȯch nac amdiffyn or llogeu. A gȯedy caffel eu llogeu ohonaȯ, dodi a oruc y marchogyon aruaȯc goreu a oed ar y helȯ yndunt, rac caffel or Saeson ford udunt, os yno y kyrchynt. A gȯedy daruot cadarnhau y llogeu arnunt uelly, ar vrys ymchoelut a oruc ar y elynyon ac eu llad heb drugared, gan eilenȯi gorchymynneu Arthur amdanunt. Rei o deudyblic boen a gyȯarsegit, a rei onadunt o oergrynedic callonneu a ffoynt yr coedyd ac yr llȯyneu, ereill yr mynyded ar gogofeu y geissaȯ yspeit y achȯanegu eu hoedel. Ac ordiwed gȯedy nat oed udunt neb ryȯ diogelȯch, yr hyn a dihegis onadunt yn vriȯedic, ȯynt a ymgynullassant[a] hyt yn ynys Danet. A hyt yno tyȯyssaȯc Kernyȯ ae hymlynaȯd gan eu llad. Ac ny orffoȯyssaȯd hyt pan las Cheldric; ac eu kymell ȯynteu oll y laȯ gan rodi gȯystlon.

11. Ac yna gȯedy kadarnhau tagnefed ar Saeson, yn y lle mynet a oruc yn ol Arthur hyt yg Kaer Alclut, yr hon ry daroed y Arthur y rydhau y gan yr Yscotteit ar Fichteit. Ac odyna y kyrchaȯd Arthur ae lu hyt y Mureif, y wlat a elȯir o enȯ arall Reget. Ac yno y gȯarchaeaȯd ef yr Yscotteit ar Fichteit, y rei kyn no hynny a ymladyssynt yn erbyn Arthur. A gȯedy eu dyuot ar ffo hyt y wlat honno, ȯynt a aethant hyt yn Lyn

[a] MS. ymgymullassant.

Lumonȯy, a chymryt yr ynysed a oedynt yn y llyn yn gedernit udunt. Kanys tri ugein ynys a oedynt yn y llyn, a thri ugein karrec, a nyth eryr ym pop karrec. A rei hynny pop Kalan Mei a doynt y gyt. Ac ar y lleis a genynt yna dynyon y wlat honno a adnebydei y damȯeineu a delei yn y vlȯydyn rac ȯyneb. Ac y gyt a hynny tri ugein auon a redei yr llyn. Ac ny redei or llyn namyn vn avon yr mor. Ac yr ynyssed hynny y foyssynt y gelynyon y geissaȯ amdiffyn o gedernit y llyn. Ac ny dygrynoes udunt namyn ychydic. Kanys kynullaȯ llogeu a wnaeth Arthur, a chylchynu yr avonoed ar llyn, hyt na chaffei neb vynet odyno. A phymtheg ni[w]arnaȯt y bu yn eu gȯarchae uelly, hyt pan vuant veirȯ hyt ar vilyoed.

12. Ac mal yd oed Arthur yn eu gȯarchae uelly, nachaf vrenhin Iȯerdon yn dyuot a llyghes gantaȯ ac amylder o bobloed achyfyeithydyon yn borth yr Yscotteit ar Freinc. Ac ȯrth hynny ymadaȯ a oruc Arthur ar llyn, ac ymchoelut y arueu yn y Gȯydyl, ar rei hynny gan eu llad heb drugared a gymhellȯys ar ffo y eu gȯlat. A gȯedy y uudugolyaeth honno ymchoylut draegefyn elchȯyl y vynnu dileu kenedyl yr Yscotteit ar Fichteit hyt ar dim. A gȯedy nat arbedei neb megys y keffit, ymgynnullaȯ y gyt a ȯnaethant escyb y druan wlat honno y gyt ae hyscolheigon or a oed darystygedic udunt, y gyt ac escyrn y seint ac eu creireu. Ac yn troet noethon y deuthant hyt rac bron Arthur, ac erchi y drugared dros atlibin y bobyl honno, ac ar eu glinyeu y wediaȯ hyt pan drugarhaei ȯrthunt. Kanys digaȯn o berigyl a drȯc ry ȯnadoed udunt; kanyt oed reit idaȯ dilit hyt ar dim yr hyn a dihagyssei onadunt. A gȯedy erchi trugared onadunt ar y wed honno, wylaȯ o warder a oruc Arthur, a rodi yr gȯyrda seint hynny eu harch.

13. A gŏedy daruot[a] hynny, syllu a oruc Hoŏel uab Emyr Llydaŏ ac enryfedu ansaŏd y llyn, y saŏl avonoed ar saŏl ynyssed ar saŏl gerric ar saŏl nythot eryrot a oed yn y llyn. Ac ual yd oed yn ryfedu hynny, Arthur a dyŏaŏt ŏrthaŏ bot llyn arall yny ŏlat honno oed ryfedach no honno. Ac nyt oed bell odyno, ac ugeint troetued yn y hyt, a vgeint yn y llet, a hynny yn bedrogyl; a phedeir kenedyl o byscaŏt amryŏ yndi; ac ny cheffit byth un or rei hynny yn ran y gilyd. "Ac y mae llyn arall," heb ef, "yg Kymry ar lan Hafren, a dynyon y wlat honno ae geilŏ Llyn Liaŏn. Ar llyn honno, pan vo y mor yn llaŏn, y kymer y dŏfŏr yndaŏ ac y llŏnc megys morgerŏyn, hyt na chudyo y glanneu. Ac y gyt ac yd ymchoelo y mor draegefyn y dreiaŏ, y gŏrthyt y llyn y dŏfŏr a gymerei yndi, ac y bŏrŏ ohonei megys mynyd, hyt pan el dros y glanneu. Ac o damweinei yna vot neb yn sefyll ae wyneb att y llyn, o chyuarffei dim o asgellwrych hŏnnŏ ae dillat,[b] anaŏd vydei idaŏ ymdianc, hyt nas sucknei y llyn ef yndaŏ. Ac o bydei ynteu ae gefyn attaŏ, yr nesset vei idi yn sefyll, nyt argyŏedei idaŏ dim."

14. A gŏedy hedychu ar Yscotteit y brenhin a aeth hyt yg Kaer Efraŏc, y anrydedu gŏylua y Nadolic a oed yn agos. A phan welas ef yr eglŏysseu gŏedy eu distryŏ hyt y llaŏr, doluryaŏ yn uaŏr a oruc. Kanys gŏedy dehol Sansŏn[c] archescob ar gŏyrda maŏr enrydedus ereill y gyt ac ef, llosci yr eglŏysseu ar temleu a ŏnathoed y Saeson, a distryŏ gŏassanaeth Duŏ ym pop lle. Kanys pan deuthant yr anreithwyr hynny, y foes Samsŏn archescob a seith escyb y gyt ac ef hyt yn Llydaŏ. Ac yno yn enrydedus yd erbynyŏyt hyt y dyd diŏethaf oe

[a] MS. daruaŏt. [b] MS. dillan. [c] *leg.* Samsŏn.

vuched. Ac yno gŏedy galŏ paŏb y gyt or yscolheigon ac or bobyl o gyt gyghor paŏb yg kyt ef a ossodes Priaf y gaplan ehunan yn archescob yg Kaer Efraŏc. Ar eglŏysseu diŏreidedic hyt y llaŏr ef ae hatnewydŏys, ac ae hadurnaŏd[a] o grevydusson genveinoed o wyr a gŏraged. Ar gŏyrda bonhedigyon dylyedaŏc a ry deholassei y Saeson ac a ducsynt tref eu tat, ef a rodes y baŏp eu dylyet ac eu hanryded.

15. Ac ym plith y rei hynny yd oedynt tri broder, a hanhoedynt vrenhinaŏl dylyet, nyt amgen, Leu uab Kynuarch ac Vryen uab Kynuarch ac Araŏn uab Kynuarch. A chyn dyuot gormes y Saeson, y rei hynny a dylyynt tyŏyssogaeth y gŏledi hynny. Ac yr gŏyr hynny, megys y baŏp or dylyedogyon ereill, ef a vynnaŏd talu eu dylyet. Ac ŏrth hynny ef a rodes y Araŏn vab Kynuarch Yscotlont. Ac y Vryen y rodes Reget dan y tervyneu. Ac y Leu uab Kynuarch (y gŏr yd oed y chwaer gantaŏ yr yn oes Emrys Wledic, ac yd oed idaŏ deu vab ohonei, Gwalchmei a Medraŏt), y hŏnnŏ y rodes tyw[y]ssogaeth Lodoneis a gŏledi ereill a berthynei attei. Ac or diŏed gŏedy dŏyn yr ynys ar y theruyneu yn hollaŏl ar y[b] hen teilygdaŏt ae hedychu, ef a gymerth gŏreic. Sef oed y henŏ Gŏenhŏyfar, yr honn a oed o uonhedickaf genedyl gŏyr Rufein, ac a uagyssit yn llys Kadŏr iarll Kernyŏ. Pryt honno ae thegŏch a orchyfygei ynys Prydein.

16. A phan deuth y gŏanŏyn araf rac ŏyneb, ef a barattoes llyges ac a [a]eth hyt yn Iŏerdon. Kanys honno a vynei y goreskyn idaŏ ehun. Ac ual y deuth yr tir, nachaf Gillamŏri vrenhin Iŏerdon ac amylder [o] bobyl gantaŏ yn dyuot yn erbyn Arthur wrth ymlad ac ef.

[a] MS. hardurnaŏd. [b] ar y: ae MS.

A gỽedy dechreu ymlad, yn y lle y bobyl noeth diarueu a ymchoelyssant drachefyn ar ffo yr lle y keffynt wascaỽt ac amdiffyn. Ac ny bu vn gohir yn dala Gillamỽri ae gymell ỽrth ewyllys Arthur. Ac ỽrth hynny holl tywyssogyon Iỽerdon rac ofyn a doethant, ac o agreifft a ymrodassant oc eu bod yn wyr y Arthur.

17. A gỽedy daruot idaỽ oresgyn holl Iỽerdon ae hedychu, Arthur a aeth hyt yn Islont yn y lyges. A gỽedy ymlad ar bobyl honno, ef ae goresgynnỽys. Ac odyna dros yr ynyssed ereill yd aeth y glot ef, ac na allei vn teyrnas gỽrthỽynebu idaỽ. Doldan brenhin Godlont a Gỽinwas vrenhin Orch oc eu bod a deuthant y ỽrhau idaỽ gan dalu teyrnget idaỽ bop blỽydyn. Ac odyna gỽedy llithraỽ y gayaf hỽnnỽ heibaỽ, Arthur a ymchoelaỽd drachefyn hyt yn ynys Prydein, y atneỽydu ansaỽd y deyrnas ac y gadarnhau tagnefed yndi. Ac yno y bu deudeg mlyned ar vntu.

18. Ac yna [y] gỽahaỽd attaỽ marchogyon deỽr clotuaỽr o arall wladoed a phell teyrnassoed ac amylhau y deulu, megys yd oed kyghoruynt gan teyrnassoed pell y wrthaỽ meint clot y lys, a ryodres[a] y teulu ae molyant. A cheissaỽ a wnaei baỽp kyffelybu a discyblu y wrth lys Arthur, ac y ỽrth y varchogyon ae deulu. Kanyt oed dim gan vn dylyedaỽc yn y teyrnassoed pell y ỽrthunt, ony ellynt ymgeffelybu a marchogyon Arthur oc eu gỽiscoed ac oc eu harueu ac oc eu marchogaeth. A gỽedy ehedec y glot ae volyant ae haelder dros eithafoed y byt, ofyn a gymerassant brenhined tramor teyrnassoed racdaỽ, rac y dyuot y oresgyn eu kyfoetheu ac eu gỽladoed. Ac ỽrth hynny rac gofeilon a phrydereu, sef a ỽnaei paỽb ohonunt atnewydu y keyryd ar dinassoed ar tyreu ar kestyll, ac adeilat ereill o neỽyd yn lleoed cryno.

[a] MS. rootdres.

Sef achaỽs oed hynny, o delei Arthur am eu penn, megys y keffynt y lleoed kadarn hynny yn amdiffyn, or bei reit.

19. A gỽedy gỽybot o Arthur bot y ofyn velly ar baỽp, ymardyrchauel a oruc ynteu a medylyaỽ goresgyn yr holl Europpa. Sef oed hynny, trayan y byt. Ac odyna parattoi llyges a oruc. Ac yn gyntaf kyrchu Lychlyn a oruc, hyt pan vei Leu uab Kynuarch y daỽ gan y chwaer a ỽnelei yn vrenhin yno. Kanys nei [v]ab whaer oed Leu uab Kynuarch y vrenhin Lychlyn a uuassei uarỽ yna. Ac ef a gymynassei y urenhinyaeth y Leu y nei; ac ny buassei teilỽg gan y Lychlynwyr hynny, namyn gỽneuthur Ricỽlf yn vrenhin arnadunt a chadarnhau eu kestyll ac eu dinassoed, gan dybygu gallu gỽrthỽynebu y Arthur. Ac yn yr amser hỽnnỽ yd oed Walchmei uab Leu yn deudegmlỽyd, gỽedy y rodi oe ewythyr ef yg gwassanaeth Suplius bab Rufein. Ac y gan Suplius y kymerth ef arueu yn gyntaf. A gỽedy dyfot Arthur, megys y dyỽespỽyt uchot, y traeth Lychlyn, Ricỽlff a holl uarchogyon y wlat y gyt ac ef a deuth yn erbyn Arthur, a dechreu ymlad ac ef. A gỽedy gellỽg llaỽer o greu a gwaet o bop part[h], or diwed y Brytanyeit a oruuant gan lad Ricỽlf a llaỽer oe wyr y gyt ac ef. A gỽedy caffel or Brytanyeit y uudugolyaeth, kyrchu y dinassoed a orugant ac eu llosci, a gỽascaru eu pobloed. Ac ny orfoyssassant hyt pan daruu udunt goreskyn holl Lychlyn a Denmarc. A gỽedy daruot hynny, ef a urdaỽd Leu uab Kynuarch yn vrenhin yn Lychlyn.

20. Ac odyna yd hỽylaỽd ynteu ae lyges hyt yn Freinc. A gỽedy kyweiraỽ y toruoed, dechreu anreithaỽ y wlat o bop parth a orugant. Ac yn yr amser hỽnnỽ yd oed Frollo yn tywyssaỽc yn Freinc y dan Les amheraỽdỽr Rufein yn [y] llywyaỽ. A gỽedy clybot o Frollo dyuotedigaeth Arthur, ef a gynullaỽd holl uarchogyon Freinc, ac a deuth y ymlad ac Arthur; ac

ny allŏys gŏrthŏynebu idaŏ. Kanys gyt ac Arthur yd oed holl ieuenctit yr ynyssed a oresgynassei. Ac ŏrth hynny kymeint o lu a dywedit y uot gantaŏ ac yd oed anaŏd y vn tywyssaŏc neu y neb y erbynyaŏ na goruot arnaŏ. Ac y gyt ac ef hefyt yd oed y ran oreu o Freinc, yr honn a ry ŏnathoed y haelder yn rŏymedic oe garyat ynteu. A gŏedy gŏelet o Frollo y dygŏydaŏ ef yn y ran waethaf or ymlad, yn y lle adaŏ y maes a oruc y gyt ac ychydic o nifer, a ffo hyt ym Paris; ac yno kynullaŏ y wasgaredic bobyl attaŏ a chadarnhau y gaer, a mynu elchŏyl ymlad yn erbyn Arthur o ganhorthŏ[y] y gymodogyon. Yn dirybud y deuth Arthur ae lu y warchae ynteu yn y dinas. A gŏedy llithraŏ mis heibaŏ, doluryaŏ a oruc Frollo o welet y bobyl yn aballu rac newyn. A gofyn a oruc y Arthur a vynnei eu dyuot ell teu y ymlad; ar hŏn a orfei onadunt, kymerei gyfoeth y llall heb lad neb or deu lu. Sef achaŏs y kynnigyei ef hynny. Gŏr maŏr hydŏf oed Frollo, ac anueitraŏl y leŏder ae gedernyt. Ac o achaŏs ymdiret yn y nerthoed yd archei ef y Arthur dyuot yn neillduedic y ymlad ac ef, o tybygu kaffel ford ŷ iechyt o hynny. A llaŏen uu Arthur wrth y genadŏri honno. Ac yn y lle anuon at Frollo y dywedut y vot yn dyuot, ac yn baraŏt y wneuthur yr amot hŏnnŏ ac ef ae gadŏ.

21. A gŏedy kadarnhau yr amot hŏnnŏ o bop parth, ŏynt a deuthant ell teu hyt y myŏn ynys odieithŷr y dinas; ar pobloed o bop parth yn aros y syllu py damwein a darffei y rydunt. Ac yno y deuthant yn hard wedus gyweir ar deu uarch enryfed y meint ae buanet, hyt nat oed paraŏt y neb adnabot y bŏy y delei y uudugolyaeth onadunt. A gŏedy sefyll onadunt a drychafel y harŏydon o bop parth, dangos[a] yr

[a] MS. A dangos.

ysparduneu yr meirych a orugant, a gossot o bop vn ar y gilyd y dyrnodeu mŏyhaf a ellynt. Ac eissoes kywreinach yd arwedŏys Arthur y leif gan ochel dyrnaŏt Frollo. Arthur ae gŏant ym pen y vron, ac yn herŏyd y nerth ef ae byryaŏd hyt y daear. Ac yn y lle noethi y gledyf a oruc, a mynu llad y ben. A Frollo a gyfodes yn gyflym, ac a gleif gossot ar varch Arthur yn y dŏyvron dyrnaŏt agheuaŏl, hyt pan dygŏydassant Arthur ae varch yr llaŏr. A phan welsant y brenhin yn syrthaw, abreid vu eu hattal heb torri eu hamot, ac o un vryt kyrchu y Freinc. Ac mal yd oedynt yn torri eu kygreir, nachaf Arthur yn kyuodi yn gyflym wychyr, ac yn drychafel y taryan ac yn kyrchu Frollo. A sefyll yn gyfagos a wnaethant, a neŏidyaŏ dyrnodeu, a llafuryaŏ pob un ageu[a] y gilyd. Ac or diŏed Frollo a gauas kyfle; a tharaŏ Arthur yn y tal a ŏnaeth. A phei na ry bylei y cledyf ar vodrŏyeu y benffestin, ef a vuassei agheuaŏl or dyrnaŏt hŏnnŏ.[b] A gŏedy gŏelet o Arthur y waet yn cochi y taryan ae arueu, ennynu o flamychedic lit ac o ŏychyr irlloned a oruc. A drycha[fel] Caletfŏlch ac oe holl nerthoed gossot a oruc, ar helym ar penffestin a phen Frollo a hollŏes yn deu hanner hyt y dŏy yscŏyd. Ac or dyrnaŏt hŏnnŏ dygŏydaŏ a wnaeth Frollo, ac ae sodleu maedu y daear,[c] a gellŏg y eneit gan yr ŏybyr. A gŏedy honni hynny dros y lluoed, bryssyaŏ a oruc y kiŏtaŏtwyr, ac agori porth y dinas ae rodi y Arthur.

22. A gŏedy caffel y uudugolyaeth honno o Arthur, ranu y lu a oruc yn deu hanner. Y neill ran oe lu a rodes y Hoŏel uab Emyr Llydaŏ, ŏrth vynet y darestŏg Gŏitart tyŏyssaŏc Peitaŏ. Ac ynteu ehun a[r] ran arall gantaŏ y oresgyn y gŏlatoed ereill yn eu kylch. Ac yn y

[a] MS. ogeu [b] MS. honnŏ. [c] MS. daeayar.

Ile y deuth Howel vab Emyr Lydaw yr wlat. Ef a gyrchwys y keyryd ar dinassoed; a Gwittart wedy Iawer o ymladeu yn ofalus a gymhellwys y wrhau y Arthur; ac odyna Gwasgwin o flam a hayarn a anreithwys; ac ae tywyssogyon a darestygwys y Arthur.

23. A wedy Iithraw naw mlyned heibaw, a daruot y Arthur oresgyn holl wladoed Freinc wrth y vedyant ehun, ef a deuth elchwyl y Baris. Ac yno y dellis lys. Ac yno wedy galw pawb or yscolheigon ar leygyon, kadarnhau a wnaeth ansawd y teyrnas, a gossot kyfreitheu, a chadarnhau hedwch dros yr holl teyrnas. Ac yna y rodes ef y Vedwyr y bentrullyat Normandi a Fflandrys. Ac y Gei y benswydwr y rodes ef yr Angiw a Pheittaw, a Iawer o wladoed ereill yr dylyedogyon ereill a oedynt yn y wassanaethu. Ac odyna wedy hedychu a thagnefedu pob Ile or dinassoed ar pobloed uelly, pan yttoed y wanwyn yn dyuot, Arthur a ymhoeles y ynys Prydein.

24. Ac ual yd oed wylua y Sulgwyn yn dyuot, wedy y veint uudugolyaetheu hynny o bop Ile, y gyt a diruawr lewenyd ef a vedylywys dala Ilys yn ynys Prydein, a wisgaw y goron am y ben, a wahawd attaw y brenhined ar tywyssogyon a oedynt wyr idaw o bop Ile a orescynnyssei, wrth enrydedu wylua y Sulgwyn yn vrenhinawl enrydedus, ac y atnewydu kadarnaf tagnefed y rydunt. A wedy menegi ohonaw y vedwl y gyghorwyr ae anwylyt, ef a gauas yn y gyghor dala y lys yg Kaer Lion ar Wysc. Kanys or dinassoed kyvoethockaf oed ac adassaf yr ueint wylua honno. Sef achaws oed. Or neill parth yr dinas y redei yr auon uonhedic honno Wysc. Ac ar hyt honno y doynt y brenhined, a delhynt dros y moroed, yn y Ilogeu hyt y dinas. Ac or parth arall weirglodyeu a foresti yn y theckau. Ac y gyt a hynny adeiladeu a Ilyssoed brenhinawl a oedynt yndi oe mywn,

a thei eureit, megys nat oed yn y teyrnassoed tref a gynhebyckyt y Rufein o ryodres namyn hi. Ac y gyt a hynny arderchawc oed o dwy eglwys arbenhic; vn o honunt yn ardyrchafedic yn enryded y Vyl verthyr, a chwfeint o werydon yn talu molyant y Duw yndi yn wastat dyd a nos yn enrydedus urdasseid; arall a oed yn enryded y Aaron kedymdeith y merthyr hwnw, a chwfent yn honno a ganonwyr reolawdyr. Ac y gyt a hynny y dryded archescobawt a phenaf yn ynys Prydein oed. Ac y gyt a hynny arderchawc oed o deu cant yscol o athrawon a doethon, a ed[ne]bydynt kerdetyat y syr ac amryfaelon gelfydodeu ereill. Kanys yn yr amser hwnw y keffit yndi y seith gelfydyt; a[r] rei hynny drwy gerdetyat y syr a venegynt y Arthur Iawer or damweineu a delhynt rac Iaw. Or achwysson [hynny] oll y mynnwys Arthur yno dala Ilys. Ac odyna gellwg kenadeu drwy amryfaelon teyrnassoed a wahawd pawb a orucpwyt o deyrnassoed Ffreinc ac o amryfaelon ynyssed yr eigaw, o[r] a dylyynt dyuot yr Ilys.

25. Ac wrth y wys honno y deuthant yno: Arawn uab Kynuarch brenhin Yscotlont, Vryen y vrawt brenhin Reget, Katwallawn Iaw[h]ir brenhin Wyned, Kadwr Iemenic tywyssawc Kernyw. Tri archescob ynys Prydein: archescob Lundein, ac archescob Kaer Efrawc, a Dyfric archescop Kaer Lion ar Wysc; a phenaf onadunt oed dan bab Rufein, ac y gyt a hynny eglur oed oe wassanaeth ae uuched; kanys pob kyfryw glefyt or a uei ar dyn, ef ae wareteir drwy y wedi. Ac y gyt a hynny wynt a deuthant y tywyssogyon or dinassoed bonhedic, nyt amgen, Morud iarll Kaer Loyw, Meuruc o Gaer Wyragon, Anarawt o Amwythic, Kynuarch iarll Kaer Geint, Arthal o Warwic, Owein o Gaer Leon, Ionathal o Gaer Idor, Cursalem o Gaer Lyr, Gwallawc ap Leenawc o Salsbri, Boso o Ryt Ychen. Ac odieithyr

hynny ỻaϭer o wyrda, nyt oed lei eu boned nac eu teilygdaϭt nor rei hynny, nyt amgen, Dunaϭt Vϭr uab Pabo post Prydein, Keneu uab Coel, Peredur uab Elidyr, Grufud uab Vogoet, Rein uab Elaϭt, Edelin vab Keledaϭc, Kyngar uab Bangaϭ, Kynnar Gorbanyon, Miscoet Cloffaϭc, Run uab Nϭython, Kynuelyn [uab] Trunyaϭ, Kadell uab Vryen, Kyndelic uab Nϭython. Ac y gyt a hynny ỻaϭer o wyrda a oed ryhir eu henϭi. Ac y gyt a hynny or ynyssed yn eu kylch: Gillamϭri brenhin Iwerdon, Melwas brenhin Islont, Doldan brenhin Gotlont Gϭynw brenhin Orc, Ỻeu uab Kynuarch brenhin Ỻychlyn, Echel brenhin Denmarc. Ac o Ffreinc y deuthant: Hodlyn tywyssaϭc Ruthyn, Leodgar iarll Bϭlϭyn, Bedϭyr pentrullyat duc Normandi, Borel o Cenomaϭs, Kei pensϭydϭr duc yr Angiϭ, Gϭittart o Beittaϭ, ar deudec gogyfarch o Freinc, a Gerein Garannϭys oc eu blaen yn dywyssaϭc arnadunt, Howel uab Emyr Ỻydaϭ brenhin Brytaen Vechan, a ỻaϭer o ϭyrda a oed darestygedic idaϭ y gyt ar ueint darmerth a chyniret mulyoed a meirych, megys yd oed dyrys eu datkanu a ryhir eu hyscriuenu. Ac odieithyr hynny ny thrigywys un tywyssaϭc y tu hϭn yr Yspaen ny delei ϭrth y wys honno. Py ryfed oed hynny? Haelder Arthur ae glot ae volyant yn ehedec dros y byt a dynassei baϭp yn rϭ[y]medic oe garyat.

26. Ac or diϭed gϭedy ymgynullaϭ paϭb yr gaer ar ϭylua yn dyuot, yr archescyb a elwit yr ỻys ϭrth wiscaϭ y goron am ben y brenhin. Ac odyna Dyfric archescob a gant yr offeren. Kanys yn y archescobty yd oedit yn dala ỻys. Ac or diwed gϭedy gϭisgaϭ y vrenhinaϭl wisc am y brenhin a theckau y ben o goron y teyrnas ae deheu or deyrnwialen, ef a ducpϭyt yr eglϭys benaf, ac or tu deheu ac or tu asseu idaϭ y deu archescob yny gynhal. Ac y gyt a hynny petϭar brenhin, nyt amgen,

brenhin yr Alban, a brenhin Dyuet, a brenhin Gϭyned, a brenhin Kernyϭ, yn herϭyd eu breint ac eu dylyet, yn arϭein petϭar cledyf eureit noethon yn y vlaen. Ac y gyt a hynny ỻaϭer o gϭfenoed amryfaelon vrdassoed yn eu processio o pop parth yn ol ac ym blaen yn kanu amryfaelon gyϭydolaetheu ac organ. Ac or parth arall yd oed y vrenhines yn y brenhinwisc, ac escyb o bop parth[1] yn y dϭyn hitheu y eglϭys y mynachesseu,[2] a phedeir gϭraged y petwar brenhin, a dywedassam ni uchot, yn arϭein pedeir clomen[3] purwen[4] yn y blaen yn herϭyd eu breint ϭynteu, ar gϭraged yn enrydedus gan diruaϭr leϭenyd yn kerdet yn y hol.[5] Ac or diϭed gϭedy daruot y processio[6] ym pob vn or dϭy eglϭys, kyndecket a chyndigrifet y kenit y kywydolaetheu[7] ar organ ac na ϭydynt y marchogyon py le gyntaf y kyrchynt;[8] namyn yn torfoed pob eilwers y kerdynt y honn yr aϭr hon ac yr ỻall gϭedy hynny. A phei treulit y dyd yn gϭbϭl yn dϭywaϭl wassanaeth, ny magei dim blinder y neb. Ac or diϭed gϭedy daruot yr offereneu ym pob vn or dϭy eglϭys, y brenhin ar vrenhines a diodassant eu brenhinwisgoed y amdanunt.[9]

27. Ac odyna y brenhin a aeth yr neuad ar gϭyr oll y gyt ac ef. Ar vrenhines ar gϭraged oll y gyt a hi[1] y neuad y vrenhines, gan gadϭ hen gynefaϭt Tro, pan enrydedynt y gϭyluaeu maϭr, y gϭyr y gyt ar gϭyr yn bϭyta, ar gϭraged y gyt ar gϭraged yn wahanedic. A gϭedy kyflehau[2] paϭb y[3] eisted yn herϭyd y deissyfei y deilygtaϭt, Kei bennsϭydϭr yn wiskedic o ermynwisc, a mil[4] y gyt ac ef o vn ryϭ adurn a hynny[5] o veibon dylyedogyon, a gychwynassant y wassanaethu or gegin anregyon. Ac or parth arall Bedwyr a mil o veibon

(Ch. 26). 1 idi *add.*, 2 machesseu, 3 colomen, 4 gvynyon, 5 yn ol, 6 prosessivn, 7 kywydolyaetheu, 8 a gerdynt, 9 y amdanadunt
(Ch. 27). 1 hitheu, 2 kyfyavnheu (?) 3 yn, 4 mil o wyr, 5 ac ynteu

gŏyrda y gyt ac ynteu yn wisgedic o amryuaelon wiscoed yn gŏassanaethu gŏirodeu or vedgell. Ac or parth arall yn llys y vrenhines aneiryf o amylder gŏassanaethwyr yn wisgedic o amryfaelon wisgoed yn herŏyd eu defaŏt yn talu eu gŏassanaeth yn diwall. Ar petheu hynny ae ryotres pei ascrifenŏn, gormod o hyt a blinder a ŏnaŏn yr ystorya. Kanys ar y veint teilygdaŏt honno yd oed[6] ynys Prydein megys y racvlaenei yr holl ynyssed o amylder eur ac aryant ac alafoed dayraŏl.[7] A phy varchaŏc bynhac a vynnei[8] vot yn glotuaŏr yn llys Arthur, o vn ryŏ wisc yd aruerynt,[9] ac o vn ryŏ arueu, ac o un ryŏ dyŏygyat[10] marchogaeth. Y gorderchwraged o vn llinŏ wisgoed ac o un dyŏygyat[10] yd aruerynt. Ac ny bydei teilŏg gan un wreic garu[11] vn gŏr, ony bei y uot yn brofedic teirgŏeith y milŏryaeth. Ac uelly diŏeirach y gŏneynt[12] y gŏraged a gŏell, ar gŏyr yn glotuorussach oc eu karyat.

28. Ac or diŏed gŏedy daruot bŏyta a chy[ch]wynnu y ar y byrdeu, allan odieithyr y dinas yd aethant y chŏare[1] amryfaylon chwaryeu.[2] Ac yn y lle marchogyon yn dangos arŏydon, megys kyt bydynt[3] yn ymlad yn iaŏn ar y maes. Ar gŏraged y ar y muroed ar bylcheu yn edrych ar chware.[4] Ereill yn bŏrŏ mein, ereill yn saethu, ereill yn rydec,[5] ereill yn gŏare gŏydbŏ[y]ll, ereill yn gŏare taplas. Ac uelly[6] drŏy bop[7] kyfryŏ amryuaelon dychymygeu[8] gŏaryeu[9] treulaŏ yr hyn a oed yn ol or dyd gan diruaŏr leŏenyd, heb lit a heb gyffro[10] a heb gynhen. A phŏy bynhac a vei vudugaŏl yn y gŏare, Arthur drŏy amlaf rodyon ae henrydedei.[11] A gŏedy treulaŏ y tri dieu kyntaf uelly,[12] y petwyryd dyd galŏ paŏp a wnaeth-

(Ch. 27.) 6 yr dothoed, 7 aualoed daeravl, 8 vynhei, 9 aruerhynt, 10 diwygyat, 11 karu, 12 ymwneynt

(Ch. 28). 1 wareu, 2 waryeu, 3 beynt, 4 ar y gvareu, 5 redec, 6 y velly, 7 pop, 8 dychymygyon, 9 a gvaryeu, 10 a heb gyffro *om.*, 11 henrydedhei, 12 y velly

pŏyt or a oedynt yg gŏassanaeth, a thalu[13] y baŏp y wassanaeth ae lafur herŏyd ual[14] y dylyynt. Ac yna y rodent[15] y dinassoed, ar kestyll, ar tir, ar dayar, ar escobaetheu,[16] ar archescobaetheu,[17] ar manachlogoed, ar amryuaelon urdasseu, megys y gŏedei y baŏp or ae dylyei.[18]

29. Ac yna y gŏrthodes Dyfric archescob y archescobaŏt ae teilygdaŏt. Kanys gŏell oed gantaŏ bot yn didrifŏr a buchedu yn y didryf no bot yn archescob. Ac yn y le ynteu y gossodet Dewi[1] eŏythyr y[r][2] brenhin yn archescob yg Kaer Lion ar Wysc.[3] Buched hŏnnŏ oed agreifft[4] dayoni[5] y baŏp or a gymerassei y dysc ynteu. Ac yn[6] lle Samsŏn[7] archescob Lydaŏ drŏy anoc Howel[8] uab Emyr Lydaŏ y gossodet Teilaŏ escob[9] Lan Daf, yr hŏn a glotuorei y uuched, ae deuodeu da a dangossynt y uot yn ŏrda. Ac odyna escobaŏt Gaer[10] Vudei y Veugant, ac escobaŏt Gaer[10] Wynt y Dywan,[11] ac escobaŏt Lincol y Aldelmi.

30. Ac val yd oedynt velly yn llunyaethu pob peth, nachaf deudegwyr aeduet eu hoet, enrydedus y gŏed, a cheig [o] olyfwyd[1] yn llaŏ bop vn onadunt yn arŏyd eu bot yn genadeu, ac yn kerdet yn araf, ac yn kyfarch gŏell y Arthur, ac yn y annerch y gan Les amheraŏdyr Rufein, ac yn rodi llythyr yn y laŏ, ar ymadraŏd hŏnn[2] yndaŏ.

31. "Les amheraŏdyr Rufein yn anuon y Arthur yr hynn a haedŏys. Gan enryfedu[1] yn uaŏr enryfed yŏ genyf i dy greulonder di athrudannaeth.[2] Enryfedu[3]

(Ch, 28). 13 thallu, 14 *om.*, 15 rodet *recte*, 16 escobyaetheu, 17 ar archescobaetheu *om.*, 18 y paŏb ac y dylyei

(Ch. 29). 1 *in marg.*, 2 yr, 3 arvyse *om.*, 4 agriff, 5 a dayoni, 6 yny, 7 sampsŏn, 8 hywel, 9 yn escob yn, 10 kaer, 11, dŏywan?

(Ch. 30). 1 o oliwyd, 2 ymadrodyon hynny

(Ch. 31). 1 anryfedu, 2 athrudanyaeth, 3 hefyt *add.*

ydǒyf gan goffau y sarhaedeu[4] a wnaethost di[5] y Rufein. Ac anheilǒg yǒ genyf nat atwaenost[6] dy vynet oth dieithyr[7] dy hun, ac na wydut ac nat yttǒyt[8] yn medylyaǒ py veint trymder yǒ gǒneuthur kodyant y sened Rufein, yr honn a ǒdost di[9] bot yr holl vyt yn talu gǒassanaeth idi. Kanys y deyrnget a orchymynǒyt y dalu idi, yr hǒn[10] a gafas Ulkassar a llaǒer o amherodron ereill gǒedy ef a chyn no minheu[11] drǒy laǒer o amseroed—a hǒnnǒ gan dremygu[12] gorchymyneu kymeint ac vn sened Rufein—a gamryvygeist di[13] y attal. Ac y gyt a hynny ti a dugost Bǒrgǒyn ac ynyssed yr eigaǒn yn hollaǒl, brenhined y rei hynny, hyt tra yttoed Rufeinaǒl uedyant yn eu medu, a dallasant teyrnget yr amherodron a vuant kyn no minheu. A chanys or veint sarhaedeu[14] hynny y barnǒys sened Rufein y minheu iaǒn y genhyt ti, ǒrth hynny minheu a ossodaf teruyn ytti yr Aǒst kyntaf yssyd yn dyuot, dyuot ohonat titheu hyt yn Rufein y wneuthur iaǒn or saǒl sarhaedeu[14] hynny, ac y diodef y vraǒt a uarnho sened Rufein arnat. Ac ony deuy uelly,[15] miui a gyrchaf dy teruyneu.[16] A megys y ranho y clefydeu,[17] mi ae ranaf[18] ac a lafuryaf y dǒyn drachefyn ǒrth sened Rufein.''

32. A gǒedy datkanu y llythyr hǒnnǒ rac bron Arthur ar brenhined ar tywyssogion a oedynt y gyt ac ef, ef ac ǒynt a aethant y gyt hyt yn tǒr y keǒri y gymryt kyghor py beth a ǒnelhynt yn erbyn y kymynediǒeu[1] hynny. Ac ual yd oedynt yn esgynnu[2] gradeu y tǒr, kadǒr iarll Kernyǒ megys gǒr llaǒen y uedǒl[3] a dywaǒt yr ymadraǒd hǒnn: '' Kyn no hynn ofyn a ry fu arnaf i rac goruot o lesged y Brytanyeit o hir hedǒch, a chollí

(Ch. 31). 4 sarahedeu, 5 wnaethosti, 6 atwaenosti, 7 odieithyr, 8 ydǒyt, 9 ǒdosti, 10 hon, 11 thitheu, 12 tremygu, 13 gamryfygeisti, 14 sarahedeu, 15 dohy y velly, 16 terfynheu, 17 cledyfeu, 18 kymhellaf
(Ch. 32). 1 kymenediveu, 2 yskynnu, 3 y vedǒl *om.*

clot eu milǒryaeth, or honn y buant hǒy eglurach no neb o genedloed y byt yn hollaǒl. Sef achaǒs yǒ. Yn y lle y peitter ac[4] arueru o arueu, ac aruer or ǒydbǒyll ar daplas a serch gǒraged, nyt oes petrus yna llygru o lesged py beth bynhac a ry fei[5] o nerth yno a chedernit ac enryded a chlot. Kynys[6] pump mlyned hayach ar[7] ethynt yr pan yttym ni yn arueru or ryǒ seguryt hǒnnǒ ar digrifǒch, a heb arueru o diǒyll ymlad. Ac ǒrth hynny Duǒ yr mynu[8] an rydhau ni or llesged honno a gyffroes gǒyr Rufein yn an herbyn, hyt pan alwem ni an clot ac an milǒryaeth ar y hen gynefaǒt.''

33. A gǒedy dyǒedut o Gadǒr yr ymadrodyon hynny a llaǒer o rei ereill, or diwed ǒynt a deuthant yr eisteduaeu. A gǒedy eisted o baǒp yn y le, Arthur a dyǒaǒt ual hynn ǒrthunt: '' Vyg kedymdeithon ar rǒyd ac ar dyrys, molyant yr rei hyt hynny[1] ac yn rodi eu[2] kyghoreu ac eu[3] milǒryaeth, ac yr[4] aǒr honn o vn vryt rodǒch aǒch kyghor, ac yn doeth racvedylyǒch py beth a uo iaǒn y atteb yn erbyn yr attebyon hynn Kanys py beth bynhac[5] a racvedylyer[6] yn da yn y blaen y gan doethon, pan del ar ǒeithret, haǒs vyd y diodef. Ac ǒrth hynny haǒs y gallǒn ninheu diodef ryfel gǒyr Rufein, os o gyffredin gyfundeb a chytgyghor yn doeth y racuedylyǒn py wed y gallom ni gǒahanu ac eu ryfel ǒynt. Ar ryfel hǒnnǒ, herǒyd y tebygaf i, nyt maǒr reit yn y ofynhau. Kanys andylyedus y maent hǒy[7] yn erchi teyrnget o ynys Prydein. Kanys ef a dyǒeit dylyu y talu idaǒ ef ǒrth y talu[8] y Ulkassar[9] ac y ereill gǒedy hǒnnǒ, a hynny o achaǒs teruysc ac anuundeb[10] y rǒg an hendateu[11] ninheu, a dugassant[12]

(Ch. 32). 4 o, 5 ryffei, 6 kanys, 7 a, 8 mynnu
(Ch. 33). 1 yr rei a profeis hyt hyn, 2 *om.*, 3 y, 4 ar, 5 bynac, 6 racweler, 7 ǒy, 8 dalu, 9 ulkessar, 10 annundab, 11 hendadeu, 12 ducsant

wyr Rufein yr ynys honn, ac o dreis[12] y gȯnaethant yn trethaȯl.[13] Ac ȯrth hynny py beth bynhac a gaffer drȯy na thȯyll na chedernit,[14] nyt o dylyet y kynhellir hȯnnȯ. Pȯy bynhac a dycko treis, peth andylyedus a geis y gynhal. A chanys andylyedus y maent ȯy yn keissaȯ teyrnget y genhym ni, yn gynhebic y hynny ninheu a deissyfȯn teyrnget y gantunt hȯy[15] o Rufein, ar kadarnaf ohonom ni kymeret y gan y llall.[16] Kanys or goresgynȯys[17] Ulkassar[18] ac amherodron ereill gȯedy ef ynys Prydein, ac o achaȯs hynny yr aȯr honn holi teyrnget ohanei,[19] yn gynhebic y hynny minheu a varnaf dylyu o[20] Rufein talu teyrnget y minheu. Kanys vy rieni ynheu gynt a oresgynnassant[21] Rufein ac ae kynhalassant, nyt amgen, Beli uab Dyfynwal gan ganhorthȯy Bran y vraȯt duc Bȯrgȯyn, gȯedy crogi petwar gȯystyl ar hugeint[22] o dylyedogyon[23] Ruuein rac bron y gaer, ac ae dalyassant drȯy laȯer o amseroed. A gȯedy hynny Custenin mab Elen a Maxen mab Lywelyn—pob vn or rei hynny yn gar agos y mi o gerenhyd,[24] ac yn vrenhined arderchaȯc o goron ynys Prydein—yr vn gȯedy y gilyd a gaȯssant amherodraeth Rufein. Ac ȯrth hynny pony bernȯch chȯi bot yn iaȯn y minheu deissyfeit teyrnget o Rufein?" O Ffreinc ac or ynyssed ereill ny ȯrthebȯn ni udunt ȯy, kany doethant y hamdiffyn, pan y goresgynassam,[25] nac oe gȯarafun. Ac ȯrth hynny ny ȯrthebȯn ni udunt hȯy[26] or rei hynny."

34. A gȯedy teruynu o Arthur yr ymadraȯd, Howel[1] uab Emyr Lydaȯ a ȯrthebaȯd ym blaen[2] paȯb y ymadraȯd Arthur ual hyn: "Pei[3] traethei bop un[4] ohonom ni[5] a medylyaȯ pob peth yn y uedȯl, ny thebygaf i[6] gallu

(Ch. 33). 12 treis, 13 treulaȯ, 14 gaffer a thvyll a chedernit, 15 vy, 16 teyrnget *add.*, 17 o gverysgynnvys, 18 vlkessar, 19 oheni, 20 wyr *add.*, 21 weryskynassant, 22 hugein, 23 dylyodogyon, 24 gerenyd, 25 gverys-cynassam 26 *om.*

(Ch. 34). 1 hywel, 2 ymlaen, 3 bei, 4 bavb, 5 oll *add.*, 6 thybygaf

o neb ohonam ni rodi kyghor gȯerthuaȯrogach[7] nac atteb grynoach na doethach nor hȯn a rodes doethineb[8] yr arglȯyd Arthur ehun. Ac ȯrth hynny yr hyn a racuedylyaȯd[9] medȯl doeth anyanaȯl gȯastat,[10] ninheu yn hollaȯl moli hȯnnȯ a dylyȯn ae ganmaȯl yn wastat. Kanys yn herȯyd y dylyet a dyȯedy di, or[11] mynny di kyrchu Rufein, ny phetrussaf[12] i yd aruerȯn ni or uudugolyaeth, hyt tra vom ni yn amdiffyn an rydit, hyt tra geissom ni an iaȯn y gan an gelynyon, y peth y maent hȯy[13] yn gam yn y geissaȯ y gennym ninheu. Kanys pȯy bynhac a geisso dȯyn y ureint ae dylyet gan gam y gan arall, teilȯg yȯ idaȯ ynteu kolli y vreint ae dylyet. Ac ȯrth hynny kanys gȯyr Rufein yssyd yn keissaȯ dȯyn yr einym ni, heb amheu ninheu a dygȯn y racdunt[14] yr eidunt, o ryd Duȯ gyfle y ymgyuaruot ac ȯynt. A llyna ymgyfaruot damunedic yr holl vrytanyeit. Lyma daroganneu[15] Sibli yn wir,[16] a[17] dyȯaȯt dyuot o genedyl y Brytanyeit tri brenhin a oresgynynt[18] Rufeinaȯl amherodraeth. Ar deu a ryfu, ac yr[19] aȯr hon yd ym yth gaffael titheu yn drydyd,[20] yr hȯn y tyfȯys[21] blaenȯed Rufeinaȯl enryded.[22] Or deu neur deryȯ eilenȯi yn amlȯc, megys y dyȯedeist ti,[23] yr eglur tyȯyssogyon[24] Beli a Chustenin;[25] pob un onadunt a uuant amherodron yn Rufein. Ac ȯrth hynny bryssya titheu[26] y gymryt y pe[t]h[27] y mae Duȯ yn y rodi itt. Bryssya y oreskyn[28] y peth oe uod yssyd[29] yn mynu[30] y oresgyn.[28] Bryssya y an hardrychafel[31] ni oll, hyt pan yth ardrychauer titheu. Ac[32] ny ochelȯn ninheu kymryt gȯelieu ac agheu, or byd reit.[33] A hyt pan

(Ch. 34). 7 gverthuorogach, 8 nor hȯn a racuedylyaȯd racweledic doethineb, 9 racwelas, 10 gvastadavr, 11 o, 12 phedrussaf, 13 vy, 14 dygvn racdunt vy, 15 darogan, 16 yn dyfot yn wir, 17 hi a, 18 weres-cynynt, 19 ar, 20 ydym yn kafel y trydyd, 21 yr hvn yd yttys yn adav, 22 anryded, 23 dywedeisti, 24 yn eglur y tywyssogyon, 25 chustenhin, 26 ditheu, 27 peth, 28 werescyn, 29 *om.*, 30 oe vod *add.*, 31 ardrychafel, 32 *om.*, 33 in *add.*

geffych ti hynny, minheu ath gedymdeithockaf ti[34] a deg mil o varchogyon aruaȣc y gyt a mi y achȣanegu dy lu."

35. A gȣedy teruynu o Howel[1] y barabyl, Araȣn uab Kynuarch brenhin Prydein a dywaȣt ual hynn: "Yr pan dechreuaȣd vy arglȣyd i dywedut y ymadraȣd, ny allaf i[2] traethu am tauaȣt y veint lewenyd yssyd ym medȣl i. Kanys nyt dim gennyf i a ry wnaetham[3] o ymladeu ar yr holl urenhined a oresgynnassam[4] ni hyt hynn, os gȣyr Rufein a gȣyr Germania dihagant[5] yn diarueu[6] y genhym ni, a heb dial arnadunt yr aeruaeu a ȣnaethant ȣynteu oc an rieni ni gynt. A chanys[7] yr aȣr honn y mae darpar ymgyfaruot ac ȣynt, llaȣen yȣ genyf; a damunaȣ yd ȣyf y dyd yd ymgyfarffom ni ac ȣynt. Kanys sychet eu gȣaet ȣynt yssyd arnaf i yn gymeint a phei gȣelȣn fynhaȣn oer[8] ger vy mron y yfet diaȣt ohonaei, pan vei arnaf diruaȣr sychet.[9] Oia Duȣ! gȣyn y uyt a arhoei y dyd hȣnnȣ! Melys a welieu genyf i[10] y rei a gymerȣn i neu y rei a rodȣn inheu, tra neȣityȣn an deheuoed y gyt an gelynyon. Ar agheu honno yssyd uelys, yr honn a diodefȣn yn dial[11] uy rieni am kenedyl, ac yn amdiffyn vy rydit, ac yn ardyrchauel[12] an brenhin. Ac ȣrth hynny kyrchȣn yr hanher gȣyr[13] hynny; na safȣn yn eu kyrchu, hyt pan orfom ni arnadunt ȣy gan dȣyn eu henryded,[14] yd aruerom[15] ni[16] o laȣen uudugolyaeth. Ac y achȣaneckau dy lu ditheu minheu a rodaf dȣy vil o varchogyon aruaȣc heb eu pedyt."[17]

36. A gȣedy daruot y baȣp dywedut y peth a vynhynt yg kylch hynny, adaȣ a oruc paȣb nerth, megys y bei y

(Ch. 34). 34 gytymdeithockavn ditheu

(Ch. 35). 1 hvel, 2 allaffi, 3 genhym ar wnaetham, 4 werysgynassam, 5 diaghant, 6 diaerua, 7 achavs, 8 loyv eglur, 9 ohonaei—sychet *om.*, 10 genhyfi, 11 gvaet *add.*, 12 ardrychafel, 13 yr avr hon yr haner gvyr, 14 hanryded, 15 aruerhom, 16 ni oll, 17 pedyd

allu ae defnyd yn y wassanaeth. Ac yna y kahat o ynys Prydein ehun[1] trugein mil o varchogyon aruaȣc, heb deg[2] mil a adaȣssei urenhin Lydaȣ. Ac odyna brenhined yr ynyssed ereill (kany buassei aruer o varchogyon[3]) paȣb onadunt a edeȣis pedydgant y saȣl a ellynt eu kaffel. Sef a gahat or chwech ynys, nyt amgen, Iwerdon ac Islont a Gotlont ac o[4] Orc a Lychlyn a Denmarc, chȣe[5] ugein mil o pedyt;[6] ac y gan tyȣyssogyon Freinc, nyt amgen, Ruthyn a Phortu a Normandi a Cenoman ar Angiȣ a Pheitaȣ, petwar ugein mil o uarchogyon. Ac y gan y deudec gogyfarch[7] y deuthant[8] y gyt a Gereint deucant[9] marchaȣc a mil o varchogyon aruaȣc. A sef oed eiryf hynny oll y gyt, deu cant marchaȣc a their mil a phetȣar vgein mil a chanmil, heb eu pedyt,[6] yr hyn nyt oed haȣd eu gossot yn rif.

37. A gȣedy gȣelet o Arthur paȣb yn baraȣt yn y reit ae wassanaeth, erchi a oruc y baȣp bryssyaȣ y wlat ac ymbaratoi, ac yn erbyn Kalan Aȣst bot eu kynadyl oll y gyt ym porth Barberfloi ar tir Lydaȣ, ȣrth gyrchu Bȣrgȣyn odyno yn erbyn gȣyr Freinc. Ac y gyt a hynny menegi a oruc Arthur ȣrth genadeu gȣyr Rufein na thalei ef tyrnget udunt hȣy[1] o ynys Prydein. Ac nyt yr gȣneuthur iaȣn vdunt or a holynt yd oed ef yn kyrchu Rufein, namyn yr kymell teyrnget idaȣ ef o Rufein, megys y barnassei ehun y dylyu. Ac ar hynny yd aethant y brenhined ar gȣyrda paȣb y ymbaratoi heb vn annot, erbyn yr amser teruynedic a ossodyssit udunt.

38. A gȣedy adnabot o Les amheraȣdyr yr atteb a gaȣssei y gan Arthur, drȣy gyghor sened Rufein ef a

(Ch. 36). 1 *om.*, 2 y deg, 3 varchogaeth, 4 *om. recte*, 5 whe, 6 pedyd 7 gogyfurd, 8 doethant, 9 deudeckant

(Ch. 37). 1 vy

ellygwys kenadeu y wyssyaw brenhined y dwfrein,[1] ac erchi[2] dyuot ac eu lluoed gantunt y gyt ac ef wrth oresgyn[3] ynys Prydein. Ac yn gyflym yd ymgynullassant yno Epistrophus[4] vrenhin Groec,[5] Mustensar brenhin[6] yr Affric, Aliphantina urenhin yr Yspaen, Hirtacus vrenhin Parth, Boctus brenhin Iudiff, Sertor[7] brenhin[6] Libia, Serx vrenhin Nuri, Pandrasius brenhin[6] yr Eifft, Missipia[8] brenhin[6] Babilon, Teucer duc Frigia, Euander duc[6] Siria, Echion o Boeti, Ypolit o Creta,[9] y gyt ar tywyssogyon a oedynt darestygedigyon udunt ar wyrda. Ac y gyt a hynny o vrdas y senedwyr Les, Kadell, Meuruc, Lepidus, Gaius, Metellus,[10] Octa, Quintus, Miluius, Taculus, Metellus, Quintinus, Gerucius.[11] A sef[12] oed eiryf hynny oll y gyt, canwr a thrugein mil a phetwar can mil.

39. A gwedy ymgyweiraw onadunt o bop peth or a vei reit udunt, Kalan Awst hwynt[1] a gymerassant eu hynt parth ac ynys Prydein. A phan wybu Arthur hynny, ynteu a orchymynwys llywodraeth ynys Prydein y Vedrawt y nei uab y chwaer, ac y Wenhwyvar vrenhines. Ac ynteu ae lu a gychwynwys parth a phorthua[2] Hamtwn. A phan gafas y wynt gyntaf[3] yn y ol, ef a aeth yn y logeu ar y mor.[4] Ac val yd oed uelly o aneiryf amylder llogeu yn y gylch, ar wynt yn rwyd yn y ol, gan lewenyd yn rwygaw y[5] mor, mal am awr haner nos, gwrthrwm hun a disgynwys[6] ar Arthur. Sef y gwelei drwy y hun, arth yn ehedec yn yr awyr; murmur hwnnw ae odwrd a lanwei y traetheu o ofyn ac aruthred. Ac y wrth y gorllewin y gwelei aruthyr[7] dreic yn ehedec, ac o

(Ch. 38). 1 dvyrein *recte*, 2 ac y erchi vdunt, 3 wereskyn, 4 epitrophus 5 goroec, 6 vrenhin, 7 settor, 8 mesipia, 9 greta, 10 metelus, 11 *For* Quintus Jerucius A *has* Quint*us* milnius katulus metelus Quint*us* cerutius (?), 12 Ac ysef

(Ch. 39). 1 vynt, 2 phorth, 3 kyntaf, 4 ar y mor *om.*, 5 *om.*, 6 dygvydvys, 7 arth*ur*

eglurder y llygeit yn goleuhau yr holl wlat. A phob vn or rei hynny a welei yn ymgyrchu, ac yn ymlad yn irat ac yn greulawn. Ac or diwed y welei y racdywededic dreic yn kyrchu yr arth, ac ae thanawl anadyl yn y losgi, ac yn y vwrw yn llosgedic yn y dayar. A gwedy duhunaw o Arthur, ef a datkanawd y weledigaeth[8] yr wyrda a o[e]dynt[9] yn y gylch. Ac wynt gan y dehogyl a dywedassant mae[10] Arthur a arwydockaei y dreic, ar arth a arwydockaei y kawr a ymladei ac ef, ar ymlad a welei y rydunt a arwydockaei yr ymlad a vydei[11] y rydaw ef ar kawr, ar uudugolyaeth a damweinhei[12] y Arthur or kawr. Ac amgen no hynny y tebygei[13] Arthur ehun uot y dehogyl. Kanys ef a dybygei y mae oe achaws ef ar amherawtyr[14] y gwelei ef y vreidwyt. A gwedy rydec y nos, or diwed pan yttoed gwawr dyd yn cochi tranoeth,[15] wynt a disgynnassant ym porthua[16] Barberflwy yn Lydaw. Ac yn y lle tynu[17] pebylleu a wnaethant, ac yno aros brenhined yr ynyssed[18] ar wladoed ac eu llu atunt.

40. A gwedy ymgynullaw pawb y gyt or yd oedynt yn aros, Arthur a gychwynwys odyno hyt yn Awgustudwm, y lle y tybygei bot yr amherawdyr ae lu yn dyuot. A gwedy y dyuot hyt ar lann yr Avon Wenn ym Bwrgwyn, ef a venegit idaw bot yr amherawdyr gwedy pebyllaw nyt oed bell odyno, a chymeint o luoed gantaw ac y dywedit nat oed neb a allei gwrthwynebu idaw. Ac yr hynny eissoes ny chynhyruawd Arthur dim, namyn gossot y bebyllеu ae luesteu ar lann yr auon, megys y gallei yn rwyd ac yn ehang llunyaethu y lu, or bei reit idaw, yn y lle hwnnw. Ac odyna yd anuones Arthur Boso o Ryt Ychen a Gwal[ch]mei uab Gwyar a Gereint Garanwys hyt

(Ch. 39). 8 vreidvyt, 9 oed, 10 y mae, 11 vei, 12 damweinei, 13 tybygei, 14 amheravdŷr, 15 dranoeth, 16 ymhorthua, 17 tannu 18 ynyssoed

ar amheraỽdyr Rufein, y erchi idaỽ mynet o teruyneu Freinc, neu tranoeth rodi kat ar uaes y Arthur, y wybot pỽy oreu onadunt a dylyei Ffreinc. Ac annoc a ỽnaeth jeuenctit Ilys Arthur y Walchmei gỽneuthur gỽrthgassed yn Ilys yr amheraỽdyr, megys y gellynt gaffel gosgymonn y ymgyuaruot a gỽyr Rufein.

41. Ac odyna y trywyr hynny a gerdassant at yr amheraỽdyr, ac a archassant idaỽ mynet ymeith o Ffreinc, neu ynteu trannoeth rodi kat ar uaes y Arthur. Ac ual yd oed yr amheraỽdyr yn dyỽedut nat mynet ohonei a dylyei, namyn dyuot oe hamdiffyn ac y llyỽyaỽ, nachaf Quintinus nei yr amheraỽdyr yn dywedut bot yn hỽy gorhoffed a bocsach y Brytanyeit noc eu gallu ac eu gleỽder, a bot yn hỽy eu tauodeu noc eu clefydeu. Ac ỽrth hynny llityaỽ a oruc Gỽalchmei, a thynnu cledyf a llad y benn ger bronn y ewythyr. Ac yn y lle ar hynt kaffel eu meirych ac ymtynnu or llys ef ae gedym[d]eithon, ar Rufeinwyr ar veirych ac ar traet yn eu hymlit y geissaỽ dial y gỽr arnadunt oc eu holl ynni. Ac ual yd oed vn or Rufeinwyr yn ymordiwes a Gereint Garanỽys, ef a troes arnaỽ, ac a gleif ae gỽant trỽy y holl arueu a thrỽydaỽ ehun, yny vyd yr llaỽr y ar y varch yn varỽ. Ac yna blyghau a oruc Boso o Ryt Ychen, a throi y varch a oruc, ar kyntaf a gyvaruu ac ef, ef a ossodes arnaỽ yn y vogel, ac a rodes dyrnaỽt agheuaỽl idaỽ, a chymell arnaỽ ymadaỽ ae varch ac ymadassu ar dayar. Ac ar hynny nachaf Marell Mut senedỽr oe holl ynni yn keissaỽ dial Qỽintilian ac yn ymordiwes a Gỽalchmei yn y ol ac yn mynnu y dala, pan ymchoelaỽd Gỽalchmei arnaỽ yn gyflym, ac a chledyf llad y benn yn gyfuch ae dỽy yscỽyd; ac y gyt a hynny gorchymun idaỽ, pan elhei y uffern, menegi y Gỽintinal, yr hỽnn a ladassei ef yn y pebyll, bot yn amyl gan y Brytanyeit y ryỽ or hoffter hỽnnỽ. Ac odyna ymỽascu ae gedymdeithon

a oruc Gỽalchmei ac eu hannoc, a llad o bop un ỽr; ar Rufeinwyr ar gỽeỽyr ac ar clefydeu yn eu fustaỽ, ac ny ellynt nac eu dala nac eu bỽrỽ. Ac ual yd oedynt geir llaỽ coet a oed yn agos udunt, ar Rufeinwyr yn eu herlit yn lut, nachaf chwe mil or Brytanyeit yn dyuot or coet yn borth yr tywyssogyon a oedynt ar ffo, ac ar hynt yn dangos yr ysparduneu yr meirych, ac yn llanỽ yr aỽyr o lefein a dodi eu taryaneu ar eu bronnoed ac yn deissyfyt kyrchu y Rufeinwyr ac yn y lle eu kymell ar ffo, ac o vn vryt eu herlit, a bỽrỽ rei onadunt yr llaỽr, a dala ereill, a llad ereill.

42. A gỽedy menegi hynny y Petrius senedỽr, ef a gymerth degmil y gyt ac ef, a bryssyaỽ yn ganhorthỽy y gedymdeithon,[1] ac yn y lle kymell y Brytanyeit ar fo yr coet y dathoedynt ohonaỽ. Ac eissoes nyt heb wneuthur diruaỽr gollet yr Rufeinwyr. Kanys y Brytanyeit, kyt foynt, pan geffynt adỽyeu kyfig a lleoed dyrys, aerua uaỽr a ỽneynt or Rufeinwyr. Ac ual yd yttoedynt hỽy yn ymlad ar y wed honno, nachaf Hydeir uab Mut a phump mil y gyt ac ef yn dyuot yn ganhorthỽy yr Brytanyeit. Ac yn y lle ymchoelut a wnaethant; ar rei a oedynt yn dangos eu kefneu ar ffo yr aỽr honno, yn y lle yd oedynt yn dangos eu bronnoed ac yn rodi gỽrolyon dyrnodeu bop eilwers yr Rufeinwyr, ar Brytanyeit oc eu holl dihewyt yn damunaỽ milỽryaeth. Ac ny didorynt py damỽein y dygỽydynt yndaỽ, hyt tra gynhelynt eu clot ym milỽryaeth, megys y dechreuyssynt. Ar Rufeinỽyr kymhennach y gỽneynt ỽy; kanys Petrius megys tỽyssaỽc da ae dysgei ỽynt yn doeth gỽers y gyrchu gỽers arall y ffo, megys y gỽelei yn dygrynoi udunt. Ac uelly y gỽneynt golledeu maỽr yr Brytanyeit.

43. A phan welas Boso o Ryt Ychen hynny, galỽ a oruc attaỽ laỽer or Brytanyeit gleỽaf a ỽydat ar neillu,

1. MS. gedyndeithon

a dyϭedut ϭrthunt ual hyn: "Dioer," heb ef, "kanys heb wybot y an brenhin y dechreuassam ni yr ymlad hϭnn, reit oed yn ninheu ymoglyt rac an dygϭydaϭ yn y[1] ran waethaf or ymlad. Ac os uelly y dygϭydϭn, kollet maϭr oc an marchogyon a gollϭn, ac y gyt a hynny an brenhin a dygϭn ar gyffro ac irlloned ϭrthym. Ac ϭrth hynny gelϭch aϭch gleϭder attaϭch, a chanlynϭch vinheu drϭy vydinoed y Rufeinwyr. Ac o kanhorthϭya an tyghetuenneu ni, ae llad Petrius ae dala ni a orvydϭn."

44. Ac ar hynny dangos yr ysparduneu yr meirych a orugant, a thrϭy vydinoed y marchogyon o ebrϭyd ruthur mynet drostunt hyt y lle yd oed Petrius yn dysgu y gedymdeithon. Ac yn gyflym Boso a gyrchaϭd Petrius a meglyt yndaϭ herϭyd y vynϭgyl a, megys y racdyϭedassei, dygϭydaϭ y gyt ac ef yr llaϭr. Ac ϭrth hynny ymgynullaϭ a ϭneynt y Rufeinwyr y geissaϭ y ellϭg y gan y elynyon. Ac or parth arall yd ympentyrrynt y Brytanyeit yn borth y Voso o Ryt Ychen. Ac yna y clyϭit y lleuein ar gorderi; yna yd oed yr aerua diruaϭr o bop parth, hyt tra ytoedynt y Rufeinwyr yn keissaϭ rydhau eu tyϭyssaϭc, ar Brytanyeit yn y attal. Ac yna y gellit gϭybot pϭy oreu a digonei a gϭayϭ, pϭy oreu a saetheu, pϭy oreu a chledyf. Ac or diwed y Brytanyeit gan teϭhau eu bydinoed a dugant eu ruthur ar karcharoryon gantunt drϭy vydinoed y Rufeinϭyr, hyt pan vydynt ym perued kedernit eu hymlad ehunein a Phetrius gantunt. Ac yn y lle ymchoelut ar yr Rufeinwyr ymdiueit oc eu tywyssaϭc ac or ran vϭyaf yn ϭanach ac yn ϭasgaredigach dangos eu kefneu a orugant ϭrth ffo. Ac ϭrth hynny estϭg gantunt a ϭnaeth y Brytanyeit, ac eu llad ac eu hyspeilaϭ, ac erlit y rei a ffoynt, a dala llaϭer or rei a damunynt y eu dangos yr brenhin. Ac or

1. MS. yr

diwed gϭedy gϭneuthur llaϭer o berigleu a drϭc onadunt, y Brytanyeit ϭynt[eu] a ymchoelassant y eu pebyllеu ar karcharoryon ac ar yspeileu gantunt. A chan leϭenyd ϭynt a dangossant Petrius ar karcharoryon ereill y gyt ac ef y Arthur. Ac ynteu a diolches udunt gan diruaϭr leϭenyd eu llafur ac eu gϭassanaeth yn y aϭssen ef, gan adaϭ achϭaneckau eu henryded ac eu kyuoeth am eu milϭryaeth ac eu molyant. Ac yna yd erchis Arthur mynet ar carcharoryon hyt ym Paris y eu kadϭ, tra gymerit kyghor amdanunt. Ac yd erchis Arthur y Gadϭr iarll Kernyϭ a Bedwyr a Rickart a Bosel ac eu teuluoed y gyt ac ϭynteu eu hebrϭg, hyt pan elhynt yn diogel, rac ofyn tϭyll y Rufeinwyr.

45. Ar Rufeinwyr y nos hono, gϭedy caffel onadunt gϭybot y darpar hϭnnϭ, a etholassant pymtheg mil o wyr aruaϭc ac ae gellygassant hyt nos y ragot y fford y tebygynt eu mynet trannoeth, y geissaϭ rydhau eu karcharoryon. Ac yn tyϭyssogyon ar yr rei hynny y gossodet Ultei a Chadell a Chwintus senedϭr ac Evander vrenhin Siria a Sertor vrenhin Libia. Ar rei hynny oll a gymerasant eu hynt, hyt pan gaϭssant y lle a vei adas gantunt y lechu, ac yno aros y dyd arnadunt.

46. Ar bore drannoeth kymryt eu fford a wnaeth y Brytanyeit ac eu karcharoryon parth a Pharis. Ac val yd oedynt yn dyuot yn agos yr lle yd oed y pyt y gan eu gelynyon arnadunt, ac ϭynteu heb wybot dim or vrat nae thybyaϭ, yn dirybud eu kyrchu a oruc y Rufeinwyr, a dechreu eu gϭaskaru a mynet drostunt. Ac eissoes, kyt kyrchit y Brytanyeit yn dirybud, ny chahat yn diaruot, namyn yn ϭraϭl gϭrthϭynebu y eu gelynyon. A rei a dodassant y gadϭ y karcharoryon, ac ereill yn vydinoed y ymlad. Ar vydin a ossodassant y gadϭ y carcharoryon a orchmynnassant y Rickert a Bedwyr. A thywyssogaeth y rei ereill a orchymynnϭyt y Gadϭr

iarll Kernyó, a Borel yn gyttywyssaóc idaó. Ar Rufeinwyr kyrchu a wneynt heb geissaó na llunyeithaó eu góyr nae bydinaó, namyn oc eu holl lafur keissaó góneuthur aerua or Brytanyeit, hyt tra yttoedynt ónteu yn bydinaó eu góyr ac yn eu hamdiffyn ehunein. Ac órth hynny gan eu góanhau yn ormod ónt yn dybryt a gollassynt eu karcharoryon, pei na danuonei eu tyghetuen vdunt damunedic ganhorthóy ar vrys. Kanys Góittart iarll Peittaó, góedy góybot y tóyll hónnó, a deuth a their mil gantaó. Ac or diwed gan nerth Duó ar kanhorthóy hónnó y Brytanyeit a oruuant, ac a talyssant eu haerua yr tóyllwyr. Ac eissoes yn y gyfranc kyntaf y collassant lawer. Kanys yna y collassant yr arderchaóc tywyssaóc Borel o Cenoman; yn kyuaruot ac Euander vrenhin Siria yn vrathedic gan y waeó y dygóydóys. Yna y kollassant hefyt petóar góyr bonhedigyon, nyt amgen, Hirlas o Pirón a Meuruc o Gaer Geint ac Alidóc o Dindagól a Hir uab Hydeir. Nyt oed haód kaffel góyr leóach nor rei hynny. Ac yr hynny ny chollassant y Brytanyeit eu glewder,[1] namyn oc eu llauur kadó eu karcharoryon. Ac or diwed ny allyssant y Rufeinwyr diodef eu ruthur, namyn yn gyflym adaó y maes a ffo parth ac eu pebyllеu, ar Brytanyeit yn eu herlit ac yn góneuthur aerua onadunt. Ac ny pheidassant yn eu dala ac yn eu llad, hyt pan ladassant Vltei a Chadell senedór ac Evander vrenhin Siria. A góedy caffel or Brytanyeit y vudugolyaeth honno, ónt a anuonassant y karcharoryon hyt ym Paris. Ar rei a dalyassant o newyd, ónt ae hym[ch]oelassant ar Arthur eu brenhin oe dangos, gan adaó gobeith holl uudugolyaeth idaó; kanys nifer mor vychan a hónnó a geóssynt uudugolyaeth ar y saól elynyon hynny.

1. MS. gleuder

47. A góedy góelet o Les amheraótyr Rufein meint y gollet ar dechreu y ryfel, tróm a thrist uu gantaó. A medylyaó a oruc peidaó ae darpar am ymlad ac Arthur a mynet y dinas Aóuarn y aros porth o newyd attaó y gan Leo amheraódyr. A gwedy caffel o honaó hynny yn y gyghor, y nos honno ef a aeth hyt yn Legris. A góedy menegi hynny y Arthur, ynteu a raculaenóys y fford ef. Ar nos honno, gan adaó y dinas ar y llaó asseu idaó, ef a aeth hyt y myón dyffryn y fford y kerdei Les amheraódyr ae lu. Ac yno y mynóys ef bydinaó y wyr. Ac ef a erchis y Vorud iarll Kaer Loyó kymryt attaó lleg o wyr a mynet ar neillтu yg góersyll, a phan welei uot yn reit órthunt, dyfot yn ganhorthóy. Ac odyna y nifer oll y am hynny a ranóys yn naó bydin, ac ym pob bydin or naó chwe góyr a chwe ugeint a chwe chant a chwe mil, ar rei hynny yn gyweir o bop arueu, ar rann o bop bydin yn uarchogyon ar rann arall yn bedyt, a thywyssogyon y dyscu pob bydin yn y blaen. Ac yr vydin gyntaf y rodet Araón uab Kynuarch a Chadór iarll Kernyó, vn yn yr anher deheu ar llall yn yr anher asseu. Ac yr vydin arall y rodet Gereint Garanóys a Boso o Ryt Ychen. Ac yr dryded y rodet Echel vrenhin Denmarc a Leu uab Kynuarch brenhin Lychlyn. Ac yr bedwared y rodet Howel uab Emyr Lydaó a Góalchmei uab Góyar, deu nei y Arthur. Ac yn ol y pedeir hynny y gossodet pedeir bydin ereill drae kefyn ónteu. Ac yr gyntaf or rei hynny y rodet Kei bensóydwr a Bedwyr bentrullyat. Ac yr nessaf idi y rodet Hodlyn iarll Ruthyn a Góittart iarll Peittaó; ac yr tryded Owein o Gaer Leon a Ionathal o Gaer Weir; ac yr petwared Vryen Vadon a Chursalem o Gaer Geint. Ac Arthur ehun a etholes[1] lleg idaó o varchogyon aruaóc o

1. MS. ae otholes

chwe gŏyr a chwe ugeint a chwe chant a chŏe mil. A rac bron Arthur sefyll y dreic eureit, yr honn a oed yn lle arŏyd idaŏ, megys y gellynt y gŏyr blin ar rei brathedic, pan gymhellei eu hagen[1] udunt, ffo dan yr arŏyd honno megys y gastell diogel.

48. A gŏedy llunyaethu paŏb yn y ansaŏd, Arthur a dywaŏt val hynn ŏrth y varchogyon: "Vyg kytuarchogyon kytdiodeuedic ymi,[2] chŏi a ŏnaethaŏch ynys Prydein yn arglŏydes ar dec teyrnas ar hugeint; y aŏch deŏred chŏi ac y aŏch molyant y kytdiolchaf ynheu hynny, y molyant nyt yttyŏ yn pallu nac yn dyffygyaŏ, namyn yn kynydu. Kyt ry foch chŏi ys pump mlyned yn arueru o seguryt heb arueru o arueu a milŏryaeth, yr hynny eissoes ny chollyssaŏch aŏch anyanaŏl dayoni, namyn yn wastat parhau yn ach bonhedic dayoni. Kanys y Rufeinwyr a gymellassaŏch ar ffo, y rei a oed oc eu syberŏyt yn keissaŏ dŏyn aŏch rydit y gennŏch, ac yn vŏy eu nifer nor einym ni. Ac ny allassant sefyll yn aŏch erbyn, namyn yn dybryt ffo gan achub y dinas honn. Ac yr aŏr honn y doant o honnŏ drŏy y dyffryn honn y gyrchu Aŏuarn. Ac y am hynn yma y gellŏch chŏitheu eu kaffel ŏynt yn dirybud ac eu llad megys deueit. Kanys gŏyr y dŏyrein a debygant[3] bot llesked ynaŏch chŏi, pan geissynt gŏneuthur aŏch gŏlat yn trethaŏl udunt a chwitheu yn geith udunt. Pony wybuant ŏy py ryŏ ymladeu a dyborthassaŏch chŏi y wyr Lychlyn a Denmarc ac y tywyssogyon Freinc, y rei a oreskynassaŏch chŏi, ac a rydhayssaŏch y ŏrth eu harglŏydiaeth waratŏydus ŏy? Ac ŏrth hynny, kan gorfuam ni yn yr ymladeu kadarnaf hynny, heb amheu ni a orfydŏn yn yr ymladeu yscaŏn hynn, os o vn dihewyt ac o vn vryt y llafuryŏn y gyŏarsagu yr hanner

1. MS. hageu 2 MS. yni 3 *leg.* debygynt

gŏyr hynn. Py veint o enryded a medyant a chyfoeth a geiff paŏb ohonaŏch chŏi, os megys kytvarchogyon ffydlaŏn yd ufudheŏch chŏi ym gorchymynn ynheu? Kanys gŏedy gorffom ni arnadunt, ni a gyrchŏn Rufein, a ni a gaffŏn y medu hi. Ac velly keffŏch yr eur ar aryant ar llyssoed ar tired ar kestyll ar dinassoed; ac eu holl gyuoeth a geffŏch." Ac val yd oed yn dyŏedut hynny ŏrthunt, paŏb o vn eir a gadarnassant bot yn gynt y diodefynt ageu noc yd ymedeŏynt ac ef, tra vei ef vyŏ or blaen.

49. A gŏedy gŏybot or amheraŏdyr y vrat yd oedit yn y darparu idaŏ, nyt ffo a oruc ef megys y darparyssei, namyn galŏ y leŏder attaŏ a chyrchu y dyffryn hŏnnŏ ar eu tor. A galŏ y tyŏyssogyon attaŏ a dywedut ŏrthunt val hyn: "Tadeu enrydedus o arglŏydiaeth, or rei y dylyir kynal teyrnassoed y dŏyrein[1] ar gorlleŏin yn darestygedic vdunt, koffeŏch ych hendadeu, y rei yr gorescyn eu gelynyon ny ochelynt ellŏg eu priaŏt waet ehunein, namyn adaŏ agreiff molyant yr rei a delei gŏedy ŏynt. Ac velly yn vynych y goruydynt. A chan oruot y gochelynt agheu, kanys ny daŏ y neb namyn yr neb y gŏelho Duŏ, ar ansaŏd y mynho Duŏ, ar amser y mynho. Ac ŏrth hynny yd achŏaneckeynt hŏy gyfoeth Rufein ac eu molyant hŏy ac eu clot ac eu hadfŏynder ac eu haelder. Ac o hynny y dyrchefynt ŏynt ac eu harglŏydiaeth ac eu hetiuedyon ar yr holl vyt. Ac ŏrth hynny gan damunaŏ kyffroi ynaŏch chwitheu y kyfryŏ hŏnnŏ yd anogaf i hyt pan alŏoch chŏi attaŏch aŏch anyanaŏl dayoni, a hyt pan safoch yndi gan gyrchu aŏch gelynyon yssyd yn aŏch aros yn y dyffryn hŏnn gan deissyfyt y gennŏch aŏch dylyet. Ac na thebygŏch y mae rac eu hofyn ŏy y kyrcheis i y dinas hŏnn, namyn

1. MS. dŏyfrein

o tebygu an herlit ni ohonunt hŏy, ac yn deissyfyt kaffel ohonam aerua diruaŏr eu meint ohonunt. A chanys yn amgen y gŏnaethant hŏy noc y tebygassŏn i, gŏnaŏn ninheu yn amgen noc y tebygant ŏynteu. Deisyfŏn ŏynt, ac yn leŏ kyrchŏn ŏynt. A chyt gorffont, diodefŏn ni yn da y rythur gyntaf y gantunt; a vellỿ heb amheu ni a oruydŏn. Kanys y neb a safo yn da yn y rythur gyntaf, mynych yŏ y vynet gan uudugolyaeth yn llaŏer o ymladeu."

50. A gŏedy daruot idaŏ teruynu yr ymadraŏd hŏnnŏ a llaŏer o rei ereill, paŏb o vn dihewyt a rodassant eu dŏylaŏ gan tygu nat ymedewynt ac ef; ac ar vrys gwisgaŏ amdanunt eu harueu ac adaŏ Legrys a chyrchu y dyffryn, y lle yd oed Arthur gŏedy llunyaethu y vydinoed. Ac yna gossot a ŏnaethant hŏynteu drŏy deudec bydin o varchogyon a phedyt yn herŏyd Rufeinaŏl deuaŏt o chwe gŏyr a thrugeint a chwe chant a chŏe mil ym pop bydin; ac ym pop vn ohonunt llyŏodyr, hyt pan vei o dysc hŏnnŏ y kyrchynt ac y kilynt, pan vei dylyedus udunt, ac y gŏrthŏynebynt y eu gelynyon. Ac y vn or bydinoed y rodes[1] Les. Kadell senedŏr o Rufein ac Aliphantina brenhin yr Yspaen, ac yr eil Hirtacus brenhin Parth a Meuruc senedŏr, ac yr tryded Bocus brenhin Nidif a Ganis senedŏr, yr bedwared Qŏintus a Myrr senedŏr. Ar pedeir hynny a rodet yn y blaen. Ac yn ol y pedeir hynny y dodet pedeir ereill. Ac y vn or rei hynny y rodet Serx brenhin Ituri, ac yr eil Polites duc Ffrigia, yr tryded Pandrasius brenhin yr Eift, yr pedŏared duc Bitinia. Ac yn ol y rei hynny pedeir bydin ereill. Ac y vn ohonunt y rodet Qŏintus Carucius, ac yr eil iarll Lelli Hosti, yr tryded Sulpius, yr pedŏared Marius

1. MS. yr adodes

senedŏr. Ac ynteu yr amheraŏtyr hŏnt ac yma, yn annoc y wyr ac yn eu dysgu py wed yd ymledynt. Ac ym perued y llu yd erchis ef sefyll yn gadarn eryr eureit, yr hŏnn a oed yn lle arŏyd idaŏ, ac erchi y baŏp or a ŏehenit y ŏrth y vydin, gyrchu yno.

51. Ac or diŏed gŏedy sefyll paŏb yn erbyn y gilyd onadunt y Brytanyeit or ne[i]ll parth ar Rufeinwyr or parth arall, pan glyŏssant sein yr arŏydon, y vydin, yd oed brenhin yrYspaen ae gedymdeith yny llywyaŏ, ymgyuarfot a orugant a bydin Araŏn uab Kynuarch a Chadŏr iarll Kernyŏ, a hynny yn wychyr ac yn leŏ. Ac eissoes ny allyssant nae thorri nae gŏasgaru. Ac ual yd oedynt uellỿ yn ymlad yn dywal ac yn wychyr, nachaf Gereint Garanŏys a Boso o Ryt Ychen ac eu bydin yn eu kyrchu yn deissyfyt o rydec eu meirych, ac yn tyllu eu gelynyon ac yn mynet drostunt, hyt pan gyfarfuant a bydin brenhin Parth, yr honn a yttoed yn kyrchu yn erbyn bydin Echel brenhin Denmarc a Leu vab Kynuarch brenhin Lychlyn. Ac yna heb vn gohir o bop parth ymgymysgu a ŏnaethant y bydinoed, a mynet paŏb dros y gilyd onadunt; ac aerua diruaŏr y meint o bop parth, ar lleuein ar gorderi yn llanŏ yr aŏyr o son; ar rei brathedic yn maedu y dayar ac ae penneu ac eu sodleu, a thrŏy eu gŏaet yn terfynu eu buched. Ac eissoes y kollet kyntaf a deuth yr Brytanyeit. Kanys Bedwyr a las, a Chei a vrathŏyt yn agheuaŏl. Kanys pan ymgyfarvu Vedwyr a brenhin Nidif, y brathŏyt a gleif yny dygŏydŏys. A hyt tra yttoed Gei yn keissaŏ dial Bedwyr, ym perued kat brenhin Nidif y brathŏyt ynteu. Ac eissoes o defawt [1] marchaŏc da, ar ystondard a oed yn y laŏ gan lad a gŏasgaru y elynyon, agori fford idaŏ a oruc; ac ae vydin gantaŏ yn gyfan ef a doeth hyt ym

1. MS. dyfot

plith y wyr ehunan, pei nar gyfarffei ac ef vydin brenhin Libia. Honno a ỽasgarỽys y vydin ef yn hollaỽl, ac ynteu a ffoes a chorff Bedỽyr gantaỽ hyt y dan y dragon eureit. Ac yna py veint o gỽynuan a oed gan wyr Normandi, pan welsant gorff eu tyỽyssaỽc yn vriỽedic or saỽl welioed hynny? Py veint gỽynuan a ỽneynt wyr yr Angiỽ ỽrth welet gỽelieu Kei eu tyỽyssaỽc, pei kaffei neb enkyt y gỽynaỽ y gilyd gan y amdiffyn ehunan yg kyfrỽg y bydinoed gỽaetlyt?

52. Ac ỽrth hynny Hirlas nei Bedwyr yn gyffroedic o agheu Bedwyr a gymerth a gyt ac ef trychant marchaỽc, a megys baed koet trỽy blith llaỽer o gỽn kyrchu drỽy blith y elynaỽl vydinoed yr lle y gỽelei arỽyd brenhin Nidif, heb didarbot py beth a damỽeinei idaỽ gan gaffel dial y eỽythyr ohonaỽ. Ac or diỽed ef a gafas dyuot hyt y lle yd oed vrenhin Nidif, ac ae kymerth o blith y vydin, ac ae duc gantaỽ hyt y lle yd oed gorff Bedwyr, ac yno y dryllyaỽ yn drylleu man. Ac odyna goralỽ ar y gedymdeithon, a chan eu hannoc kyrchu eu ge ynyon yn vynych, megys gan atnewydu eu nerth, hyt pan yttoedynt eu gelynyon yn ofnaỽc ac eu callonoed yn crynu. Ac y gyt a hynny kyỽreinach y kyrchynt y Brytanyeit oe dysc ynteu, a chreulonach y gỽneynt aerua. Ac ỽrth hynny grym ac angerd oe annoc ef a gymerassant y Brytanyeit, a dỽyn ruthur y eu gelynyon; ac o bop parth udunt diruaỽr aerua a orucpỽyt. Y Rufeinwyr yna y gyt ac aneiryf o vilyoed y syrthassant. Yna y llas Aliphant vrenhi[n] yr Yspaen, a Misipia vrenhin Babilon, a Chỽintus Miluius, a Marius Lepidus senedỽr. Ac o parth y Brytanyeit y syrthỽys Hodlyn iarll Ruthun, a Leodogar iarll Bolỽyn, a thri thyỽyssaỽc ereill o ynys Prydein, nyt amgen, Cursalem o Gaer Geint, a Gỽallaỽc vab Llywynaỽc o Salsbri, a Vryen o Gaer Vadon. Ac ỽrth hynny gỽahanu a ỽnaethant y bydinoed

yd oedynt yn y llywyaỽ, ac enkil drachefyn hyt ar y vydin yd oed Howel uab Emyr Llydaỽ a Gỽalchmei uab Gỽyar yn y llywyaỽ. A phan welas y gỽyr hynny eu kedymdeithon yn ffo, enynu o lit megys fflam yn enynu godeith, gan alỽ y rei a oedynt ar ffo a chyrchu eu gelynyon. A chymell ar ffo y rei a oedynt yn eu herlit ỽynteu kyn no hynny gan eu bỽrỽ ac eu llad, a gỽneuthur aerua heb orfỽys onadunt, hyt pan deuthant hyt ar vydin yr amheraỽdyr.

53. A phan welas yr amheraỽdyr yr aerua oe wyr, bryssyaỽ a oruc yn borth udunt. Ac yna y gỽnaethpỽyt y Brytanyeit yn veirỽ; kanys Kynuarch tyỽyssaỽc Trigeri a dỽy vil y gyt ac ef a las yna. Ac yna y llas or parth arall trywyr, nyt amgen, Rigyfarch a Bolconi a Laỽin o Votlan. A phei bydynt tywyssogyon teyrnassoed, yr oessoed a delhynt gof hyt vraỽt ac a enrydedynt eu molyant ac eu clot. Ac eissoes pỽy bynhac a gyfarffei a Hoỽel neu a Gỽalchmei oc eu gelynyon, ny diagei ae eneit gantaỽ. A gỽedy eu dyuot, megys y dywespỽyt uchot, hyt ym plith bydin yr amheraỽdyr, yn damgylchedic oc eu gelynyon y syrthassant y tryỽyr hynny. Ac ỽrth hynny Howel a Gỽalchmei, y rei ny magyssit yn yr oessoed kyn noc ỽynt neb well noc ỽynt, pan welsant yr aerua oc eu kedymdeithon, yn ỽychyr y kyrchassant hỽnt ac yman, vn o bop parth yn gyffredin yn dyỽalhau ac yn blinaỽ bydin yr amheraỽdyr, ac megys llucheit yn llad a gyfarffei ac ỽynt, ac yn annoc eu kedymdeithon; a Gỽal[ch]mei yn damunaỽ oe holl dihewyt ymgaffel a Les amheraỽdyr y gymell arnaỽ peth a digonei ym milỽryaeth. Ac nyt oed haỽd barnu pỽy oreu, ae Hoỽel ae Gỽalchmei.

54. Ac odyna Gỽalchmei a gafas y damunedic hynt. Ac yn ỽychyr kyrchu yr amheraỽdyr a oruc, a gossot arnaỽ. Ac eissoes Les, megys yd oed yn dechreu

blodeuaƈ dewred y ieuenctit ac yn vaƈr y ynni, nyt oed well dim gantaƈ ynteu noc ymgaffel ar ryƈ uarchaƈc clotuaƈr hƕnnƈ, yr hƕnn a gymellei y wybot beth vei y angerd ae deƈred. Ac ƈrth hynny diruaƈr leƈenyd a gymerth yndaƈ ƈrth ymgaffel ohonaƈ a gƈr kynglotuorusset a Gƈalchmei. Ac ymerbynyeit yn galet a ƕnaeth pob vn ae gilid, megys na ƈelat rƈg deu vilƈr ymlad a gyffelypit y hƕnnƈ. A phan yttoedynt ƈy yn neƈidyaƈ kaledyon dyrnodeu, a phob vn yn llafuryaƈ agheu y gilyd, nachaf y Rufeinwyr ynn ympentyryaƈ yn eu kylch, hyt pan vu reit y Walchmei a Howel ac eu bydinoed enkilyaƈ hyt ar vydin Arthur, gan eu llad or Rufeinwyr yn drut.

55. A phan welas Arthur yr aerua yd oedit yn y wneuthur oe wyr ef, tynu Caletvƈlch y gledyf goreu a ƕnaeth, ac yn vchel dyƈedut val hynn: "Py achaƈs y gedƈch chƈi y gƈreicolyon wyr hynn y genƈch? Nac aet vn yn vyƈ onadunt, nac aet. Koffeƈch aƈch deheuoed, y rei yn gyfrƈys yn y saƈl ymladeu kyn no hynn a darestygassant dec teyrnas ar hugeint ƈrth vym medyant. Koffeƈch aƈch hendadeu, y rei, pan oedynt gadarnach gƈyr Rufein no hediƈ, ae gƕnaethant yn drethaƈl udunt. Koffeƈch aƈch rydit, yr honn y mae yr hanher gƈyr hynn yn keissaƈ y dƈyn y genƈch. Ac ƈrth hynny nac aet vn yn vyƈ onadunt, nac aet." A chan dywedut yr ymadrodyon hynny, kyrchu y elynyon ac eu bƈrƈ dan y draet ac eu llad. A phƈy bynnac a gyfarffei ac ef, o vn dyrnaƈt y lladei ac ef ae varch. Ac ƈrth hynny paƈb a foynt racdaƈ, megys y foynt aniueileit rac lleƈ creulaƈn, pan vei neƈyn maƈr arnaƈ ac ynteu yn keissaƈ bƈyt. A phƈy bynhac o damƈein a gyfarffei ac ef, nys differei y arueu ef rac Caletuƈlch, hyt pan vei reit idaƈ talu y eneit y gyt ae ƈaet. Deu urenhin oc eu drycdamƈein a gyfaruuant ac ef, Sertor brenhin Libia a Pholites brenhin Bitinia. Ar deu hynny gƈedy llad eu penneu a anuones Arthur y Rufein.

56. A gƈedy gƈelet or Brytanyeit eu brenhin yn ymlad uelly,[1] gleƈder ac ehofynder a gymerassant, a chan teƈhau eu bydinoed o vn vryt kyrchu y Rufeinwyr gan darparu mynet drostunt. Ac eissoes gƈrthƈynebu yn wychyr a oruc y Rufeinwyr udunt, ac o dysc Les amheraƈdyr llafuryaƈ y talu aerua yr Brytanyeit. A chymeint uu yr ymlad yna o bop parth a chyt pei[2] yr aƈr honno y dechreuynt yr ymlad. Or neill parth yd oed yr arderchaƈc vrenhin Arthur yn llad y elynyon, ac yn annoc y wyr y sefyll yn ƈraƈl. Ac or parth arall yd oed Les amheraƈdyr yn annoc y Rufeinwyr ac yn eu dysgu ac yn eu moli. Ac ny orfoƈyssei ynteu yn llad ac yn bƈrƈ y elynyon ac yn kylchynu y vydinoed ehun. A phy elyn bynac a gyfarffei ac ef, a gƈayƈ neu a chledyf y lladei. Ac uelly o bop parth y bydei Arthur yn gƕneuthur aerua. Kanys gƈeitheu y bydynt trechaf[3] y Brytanyeit, gƈeitheu ereill y bydynt[4] trechaf[3] y Rufeinwyr. A phan yttoedynt hƈy[5] yn yr ymfust hƕnnƈ, heb wybot py diƈ y damƈeinei y vudugolyaeth, nachaf Morud iarll Caer Loyƈ yn dyuot ar lleg a dyƈedassam ni y hadaƈ uchot yg gƈersyll, ac yn deissyfyt[6] yn kyrchu eu gelynyon yn dirybud or tu yn eu[7] hol ac yn mynet drostunt, gan eu gƈasgaru a gƕneuthur aerua diruaƈr y meint. Ac yna y syrthassant[8] llaƈer o vilyoed or Rufeinwyr. Ac yna y dygƈydƈys Les amheraƈdyr yn vrathedic gan leif neb vn, ac y bu varƈ. Ac yna, kyt bei drƈy diruaƈr lafur, y Brytanyeit a gaƈssant y maes.[9]

57. Ac yna y gƈasgarassant[1] y Rufeinwyr[2] yr diffeithƈch ac yr coedyd, ac ofyn yn eu kymell. Ereill yr dinassoed

(Ch. 56). 1 y velly? *the initial letters are illegible*, 2 chyn bei, 3 drechaf, 4 bydei, 5 ƈy, 6 deissyfedic, 7 y, 8 syrthysant, 9 ar goruot *add.*
(Ch. 57). 1 gvasgaryssant, 2 rei *add.*

ar kestyll ac yr lleoed kadarn y ffoynt; ar Brytanyeit oc eu hol yn[3] eu hymlit, ac o druanaf aerua[4] yn eu llad ac yn eu dala ac yn eu hyspeilaȣ. Ac uelly megys y rodynt y ran vȣyaf[5] onadunt eu dȣylaȣ yn wreigaȣl y eu rȣymaȣ ac y eu karcharu, y geissaȣ ystynu ychydic y[6] eu hoedel. A hynny[7] o jaȣn vraȣt[8] Duȣ. Kanys eu hendadeu ȣynteu kyn no hynny yn andylyedus a ȣnathoedynt[9] y Brytanyeit yn drethaȣl udunt; ar Brytanyeit yna yn nackau udunt y dreth yd oedynt yn andylyedus yn y cheissaȣ gantunt.[10]

58. A gȣedy caffel o Arthur y vudugolyaeth, ef a erchis gȣahanu ar neillтu[1] kalaned y wyrda ef y ȣrth y elynaȣl galaned ac eu kyȣeiryaȣ o vrenhinaȣl defaȣt, ac eu dȣyn yr[2] manachlogoed a vei yn eu gȣlat yn ansodedic, ac yno eu cladu yn enrydedus. Ac yna y ducpȣyt corff Bedwyr hyt y dinas ehun yn Normandi gan diruaȣr gȣynuan y[3] gan y Normanyeit. Ac yno y myȣn mynȣent ar deheu y dinas y cladȣyt yn enrydedus gyr[4] llaȣ y mur. Kei a ducpȣyt yn urathedic hyt yg Kam, y kastell[5] a ȣnathoed[6] ehun. Ac yno ny bu bell gȣedy hynny yny vu[7] uarȣ Kei[8] or brath hȣnnȣ. Ac yn y fforest a oed yn agos yno y myȣn manachlaȣc ermitwyr or enryded a dylyei iarll yr Angiȣ y cladȣyt. Hodlyn tyȣyssaȣc a ducpȣyt hyt y[9] dinas ehun, yr hȣn a elȣir y Tyruan, ac yno y cladȣyt. Y gȣyrda ereill a erchis Arthur eu dȣyn yr manachlogoed nessaf udunt ar hyt y gȣlatoed.[10] Ac yna[11] yd erchis ef y ȣyr y wlat honno cladu y elynyon,[12] ac anuon corff Les amheraȣdyr hyt yn sened Rufein. Ac erchi menegi udunt na dylyynt hȣy[13 14] teyrnget o ynys Prydein amgen no hȣnnȣ. Ac yno y bu Arthur y gayaf

(Ch. 57). 3 oc eu holl ynni yn, 4 agheu, 5 vvyaff, 6 *om.*, 7 ac uelly, 8 varn, 9 wnaethoedynt, 10 yn y cheissav yn andylyedus y ganthunt
(Ch. 58). 1 gvahanu a neillтua, 2 yr, 3 *om.*, 4 ger, 5 hyt–kastell : hyt y castell, 6 wnaethoed, 7 yny vu : y bu, 8 *om.*, 9 yn y, 10 gvladoed, 11 odyna, 12 gelynyon, 13 vy, 14 tremygu y brytanyeit nac erchi *add.*

hȣnnȣ yn goresgyn y dinassoed y Mȣrgȣin.[15] A phan yttoed yr haf yn dechreu dyuot, ac Arthur yn ysgynu mynyd Mynheeu[16] ȣrth vynet parth a Rufein, nachaf genadeu o ynys Prydein yn menegi y Arthur ry daruot[17] y Vedraȣt y nei, uab y chȣaer, goresgyn[18] ynys Prydein a gȣisgaȣ[19] coron y teyrnas am y pen[20] ehun[21] drȣy greulonder a brat, a thynu[22] Gȣenhȣyfar vrenhines oe rieingadeir a ry gysgu[23] genti, gan lygru kyfreith dȣywaȣl y neithoreu.[24]

59. A gȣedy menegi hynny y Arthur, yn y lle peidyaȣ[1] a oruc ae darpar am vynet y Rufein, ac ymchoelut parth ac ynys Prydein, a brenhined yr ynyssed y gyt ac ef. A gellȣg Howel uab[2] Emyr Lydaȣ a llu gantaȣ y tagnefedu ac y hedychu y gȣladoed.[3] Kanys yr yscymunedickaf[4] vradȣr gan Vedraȣt a anuonassei Cheldric[5] tyȣyssaȣc y Saeson hyt yn Germania y gynullaȣ y llu mȣyaf a gallei yn borth idaȣ. A rodi udunt a oruc o Humyr hyt yn Yscotlont, ac yn achȣanec kymeint ac a uuassei y[6] Hors a Heingyst[7] kyn no hynny yg Kent.[8] Ac ȣrth hynny y deuth Cheldric ac ȣyth cant[9] llog yn llaȣn o wyr aruaȣc gantaȣ[10] o baganyeit,[11] a gȣrhau y Vedraȣt ac ufudhau megys y vrenhin. Ac neur daroed idaȣ gedymdeithockau ataȣ yr Yscottyeit ar Ffichteit, a phaȣb or a ȣypei ef idaȣ gassau y ewythyr,[12] hyt pan yttoedynt oll petwar[13] ugein mil rȣg Cristonogyon a phaganyeit.

60. Ac a hynny o nifer gantaȣ y deuth Medraȣt[1] hyt yn aber Temys, y lle yd oedynt llogeu Arthur yn disgynnu. A gȣedy dechreu ymlad, ef a[2] wnaeth aerua diruaȣr

(Ch 58). 15 gvrescyn dinassoed bȣrgȣyn, 16 mynheu, 17 darvot? 18 gverescyn, 19 arwisgaȣ? 20 ben, 21 *om.*, 22 thynhu, 23 chysgu, ry *om.* 24 neithoryeu
(Ch. 59). 1 peidaȣ, 2 ac ellvg hvel m., 3 gvledi, 4 yscymunediccaf. 5 chledric, 6 *om.*, 7 hengist, 8 ygkeint, 9 can, 10 *om.*, 11 paganyeit, 12 *The word before* hyt *is* (a)rthur; *between* pav(b) *and this there is a hole in the* MS., 13 *The initial letters seem to be* deu, *what follows is illegible*
(Ch. 60). 1 *om.*

onadunt yn dyuot yr tir. Kanys yna y dygỏydassant Araỏn uab Kynuarch, brenhin Yscotlont, a Gỏalchme[i][3] uab[4] Gỏyar. Ac yn ol Araỏn y deuth Owein vab[4] Vryen yn vrenhin yn Reget, y gỏr gỏedy hynny a vu clotuaỏr yn llaỏer o gynhenneu. Ac or diwed, kyt[5] bei drỏy diruaỏr lafur a thrỏy eu llad,[6] Arthur ae lu a gafas y tir. A chan talu yr aerua ỏynt a gymellassant Vedraỏt[7] ae lu ar ffo. A chyn bei mwy eiryf llu Medraỏt no llu Arthur, eissoes kywreinach a doethach yd ymledynt o beunydyaỏl ymladeu.[8] Ac ỏrth hynny y bu dir yr anudonaỏl[9] gan Vedraỏt gymryt y ffo. Ar nos honno, gỏedy ymgynullaỏ y wascaredic[10] lu y gyt, yd aeth hyt yg Kaer Wynt. A gỏedy clybot o Wenhỏyuar[11] hynny, diobeithaỏ a oruc, a mynet o Gaer Efraỏc hyt yg Kaer[12] Lion ar Wysc. Ac[13] y myỏn manachlaỏc gỏraged a[14] oed yno gỏisgaỏ yr abit ymdanei ac adaỏ cadỏ y diỏeirdeb yn eu plith o hynny allan. Ar abit honno a vu ymdanei hyt agheu.

61. Ac odyna Arthur a gymerth llit maỏr yndaỏ am gollỉ[1] ohonaỏ y saỏl vilioed hynny, a pheri cladu y wyr. Ar trydyd dyd kyrchu Caer Wynt a oruc ac yn diannot y chylchynu. Ac yr hynny ny pheidỏys Medraỏt ar hynn a dechreuassei, namyn, gan annoc y wyr, eu gossot yn vydinoed a mynet allan or dinas y ymlad ac Arthur y ewythyr. A gỏedy dechreu ymlad, aerua vaỏr o pob parth a wnaethant. Ac eissoes mỏyaf vu yr aerua o wyr Medraỏt; ac yn dybryt kymell arnaỏ adaỏ y maes. Ac ny hanbỏyllỏys[2] Medraỏt yna gohir ỏrth gladu y ladedigyon, namyn ffo a oruc parth a Chernyỏ.

62. Ac ỏrth hynny Arthur, yn bryderus ac yn llidiaỏc

(Ch. 60). 2 aeth ac a *add.*, 3 gỏalchmei, 4 mab, 5 *only* ky *is legible*, 6 a thrỏy eu llad *om.*, 7 medraỏt, 8 o beunydyaỏl ymladeu: wyr arthur, kanys kyfrỏys oedynt o peunydyaỏl ymlad, 9 kelwydaỏc *add.*, 10 gỏasgaredigyon, 11 vrenhines *add.*, 12 ygkaer, 13 yno *add.*, 14 *om.*

(Ch. 61). 1 rygollỉ, 2 handenỏys

a achaỏs dianc y tỏyllỏr[1] y gantaỏ, yn y lle[2] ae hymlynỏys hyt y wlat honno hyt ar lan Kamlan, y lle yd oed Vedraỏt yn y aros.[3] Ac ỏrth hynny megys yd oed Vedraỏt gleỏaf a gỏychraf yn cyrchu, yn y lle gossot y varchogyon yn vydinoed a oruc. Kanys gỏell oed gantaỏ y lad neu ynteu a orffei, no ffo yn hỏy no hynny. Kanys yd oed ettwa gantaỏ o eiryf trugein mil. Ac o hynny y gỏnaeth ef whech[4] bydin, a whech[5] gỏyr a thrugeint a chwe[6] chant a chwe[6] mil ym pob bydin o wyr aruaỏc. Ac or rei nyt aed[7] yn y chwech[4] bydin ef a wnaeth bydin idaỏ ehun, a rodi llywodron y bop vn or rei ereill oll.[8] A dyscu paỏb onadunt ac eu hannoc y ymlad a oruc, gan adaỏ udunt enryded a chyfoeth, os ef a orffei. Ac or parth arall Arthur a ossodes y wyr[9] ynteu drỏy naỏ bydin; a gorchymyn y baỏp onadunt[10] ac annoc llad y lladron tỏyllwyr yskymyn,[11] a dathoedynt o wladoed ereill o dysc y bratỏr[12] y geissaỏ y digyfoethi ynteu. " Ar bobyl a gelỏch[13] racko," heb Arthur, " a[14] gynullỏyt o wlatoed[15] amryfaelon, ac aghyfyeith ynt a llesc ag aghyfrỏys ar ymlad. Ac ny allant gỏrthỏynebu yỏch, kanys kyfrỏys yỏch chỏi."[16] Ac velly paỏb onadunt yn annoc y wyr or parth arall.[17] Ac yn deissyfyt ymgyfaruot a ỏnaeth y bydinoed yghyt,[18] a dechreu ymlad a newidyaỏ dyrnodeu yn vynych. A chymeint vu yr aerua yna o bop parth ac megys yd oed gỏynfan[19] y rei meirỏ yn kyffroi y rei byỏ ar lit ac ymlad, ac megys yd oed blin a llafuryus[20] y yscriuenu nae datkanu. Kanys o bop parth y brethynt ac y brethit ỏynteu; ỏynt a ledynt ac ỏynteu a ledit.

63. Ac or diwed gỏedy treulaỏ llaỏer or dyd yn y mod

(Ch. 62). 1 y mynychet hỏnnỏ *add.*, 2 ef *add.*, 3 arhos, 4 whech, 5 ỏhe, 6 whe, 7 aeth, 8 rodi llywodraeth y pop bydin oll, 9 lu, 10 ohonunt, 11 ysgymun, 12 bradỏr, 13 welhỏchi, 14 ar, 15 wladoed, 16 yỏchi, 17 or parth arall: o pop parth, 18 ygyt, 19 kỏynuan, 20 llafurus

hǒnnǒ, Arthur ae vydin a gyrchǒys y vydin y gǒydat[1] bot y tǒyllǒr gan Vedraǒt yndi,[2] ac agori ffyrd udunt ar clefydeu,[3] ac yn diannot mynet drostunt, a gǒneuthur[4] aerua diruaǒr[5] onadunt. Kanys yn y lle y dygǒydǒys yr yscymunedickaf[6] vradǒr hǒnnǒ gan Vedraǒt, a llaǒer o vilioed y gyt ac ef. Ac eissoes yr hynny ny ffoyssant[7] y rei ereill, namyn ymgynullaǒ y gyt[8] or maes oll, ac yn herǒyd eu gleǒder keissaǒ ymgynhal a gǒrthǒynebu y Arthur. Ac ǒrth hynny gǒychraf a girattaf[9] a chreulonaf aerua a vu y rydunt yna o bop parth, ac eu bydinoed yn syrthaǒ. Ac yna o bop[10] parth y[10] Vedraǒt y syrthassant[11] Cheldric[12] ac Elafyǒs,[13] Egberinc[10] brenhin or Saeson; or Gǒydyl Gilapadric,[14] Gillamǒri, Gillasel, Gillamor.[15] Yr Yscottyeit ar Ffichteit ac ǒynt ac eu harglǒydi oll hayach a las. Ac o bleit[16] Arthur y llas Osbrinc brenhin Lychlyn, Echel brenhin Denmarc,[17] Kadǒr Lemenic[18] iarll Kernyǒ, Kasǒallaǒn, a llaǒer o vililioed[19] y gyt ac ǒynteu,[20] rǒg y Brytanyeit a chenedloed ereill a ducsynt y gyt ac ǒynt. Ac ynteu yr arderchaǒc vrenhin Arthur a vrathǒyt yn agheuaǒl, ac a ducpǒyt odyna hyt yn ynys Avallach y iachau y welieu. Coron y[21] teyrnas o ynys Prydein a gymynnǒys ynteu y Gustenin[22] vab Kadǒr iarll Kernyǒ y gar. Dǒy vlyned a deugeint[23] a phump kant gǒedy dyfot Crist yg knaǒt dyn oed hynny yna.

(Ch. 63). 1 gǒydyat, 2 yndianc, 3 cledyfeu, 4 tristaf, 5 *om.*, 6 ysgymunediccaf, 7 foassant, 8 yghyt, 9 girattaff, 10 *om.*, 11 syrthyssant, 12 chledric, 13 elefyǒys, 14 gillapadric, 15 gillamor gillasel gillamǒri, 16 pleit, 17 denmarch, 18 llymenic, 19 vilyoed, 20 ǒynt, 21 *om.*, 22 gustenhin, 23 deu vgeint

III. THE HUNTING OF TWRCH TRWYTH.

1. Kerdet a orugant ǒy ỳ dỳd hǒnnǒ educher. Hỳnỳ[1] vỳd kaer uaen[2] gỳmrǒt a welasit,[3] uǒỳhaf ar keỳrỳd ỳ bỳt[4]. Nachaf gǒr[5] du mǒỳ[6] no thrỳǒỳr[7] ỳ bỳt hǒnn a welant[8] ỳn dỳuot or gaer. Amkeudant[9] ǒrthaǒ: "Pan doỳ ti,[10] ǒr?" "Or gaer a welǒch chǒi ỳna."[11] "Pieu ỳ gaer?"[12] "Meredic a wỳr ỳǒchi.[13] Nỳt oes ỳn ỳ bỳt nỳ ǒỳppo pieu ỳ gaer honn. Wrnach Gaǒr pieu."[14] "Pỳ uoes ỳssỳd ỳ osp a phellenhic ỳ diskỳnnu ỳn ỳ gaer honn?" "Ha vnben, Duǒ ach notho![15] Nỳ dodỳǒ[16] neb guestei eiroet oheni[17] ae uỳǒ[18] gantaǒ.[19] Nỳ edir neb idi namyn a dỳccǒỳ[20] ỳ gerd."[21]

2. Kỳrchu ỳ porth a orugant. Amkaǒd[1] Gǒrhỳr Gualstaǒt Ieithoet: "A oes porthaǒr?"[2] "Oes. A titheu[3] nỳ bo teu dỳ penn,[4] pỳr[5] ỳ kỳuerchỳ dỳ?" "Agor ỳ porth!" "Nac agoraf." "Pǒỳstỳr[6] nas agorỳ ti?" "Kỳllell a edỳǒ ỳm mǒỳt[7] a llỳnn ỳ mual,[8] ac amsathỳr ỳn neuad Vrnach.[9] Namỳn ỳ gerdaǒr a dỳccǒỳ[10] ỳ gerd nỳt agorir."[11] Amkaǒd Kei:[12] "Ỳ porthaǒr, ỳ mae kerd genhỳf i." "Pa gerd ỳssỳd genhỳt ti?" "Ỳslipanǒr cledỳueu goreu ỳn ỳ bỳt ǒỳf ui." "Mi a af ỳ dỳwedut hỳnnỳ ỳ Vrnach[13] Gaǒr, ac a dỳgaf atteb ỳt."

VARIANTS H=RED BOOK OF HERGEST, P=PENIARTH MS. 1V.

(Ch. 1). 1 yny H, 2 uaǒr H, 3 welynt H, 4 vǒyhaf or byt H, 5 ǒr H, 6 oed *add.* H, 7 yn *add.* H, 8 a welant *om.* H, 9 ac y dywedassant ǒynteu H, 10 deuy di H. 11 racco H, 12 heb ǒynt *add.* H, 13 yǒch chǒi H, 14 bieu H, 15 nodho H, 16 deuth H, 17 eiryoet ohonei H, 18 vywyt H, 19 gantaǒ H, 20 dycko H, 21 gantaǒ *add.* H.

(Ch. 2). 1 heb y H, 2 borthaǒr H, 3 thitheu H, 4 dy dauaǒt yth benn H, 5 py rac H, 6 Py ystyr H, 7 bǒyt H, 8 ym bual H, 9 ǒrnach gaǒr H, 10 dycko H, 11 yma heno bellach *add.* H, 12 Heb y kei yna H, 13 ǒrnach H

3. Dẏuot a oruc ẏ porthaȣr ẏ mẏȣn. Dẏwaȣt[1] Wrnach Gaȣr:[2] "Whedleu[3] porth genhẏt?"[4] "Ẏssẏdẏnt genhẏf. Kẏweithẏd ẏssẏd ẏn drȣs ẏ porth, ac[5] a uẏnnẏnt dẏuot ẏ mẏȣn." "A ouẏnneist ti[6] a oed gerd ganthunt?"[7] "Gouẏnneis.[8] Ac vn onadunt a dẏwaȣt gallel[9] ẏslipanu cledẏueu."[10] "Oed[11] reit ẏ mi[12] ȣrth hȣnnȣ. Ẏs guers ẏd ȣẏf ẏn keissaȣ a olchei vẏg cledẏf; nẏs rẏgeueis.[13] Gat hȣnnȣ ẏ mẏȣn, cans oed[14] gerd ganthaȣ."

4. Dẏuot[1] ẏ porthaȣr ac agori ẏ porth. A dẏuot Kei ẏ mẏȣn ehun. A chẏuarch guell a oruc ef ẏ Wrnach Gaȣr. Kadeir a dodet ẏ danaȣ.[2] Dẏwaȣt[3] Wrnach[4]: "Ha ȣr, ae gȣir a dẏwedir arnat gallel[5] ẏslipanu cledẏueu?" "Mi ae digonaf."[6] Dẏdȣẏn[7] ẏ cledẏf attaȣ[8] a orucpȣẏt.[9] Kẏmrẏt agalen gleis a oruc Kei ẏ dan ẏ geffeil. "Pȣẏ well genhẏt arnaȣ,[10] ae guẏnseit ae grȣmseit?" "Yr hȣnn a uo da genhẏt ti, malpei teu uei, gȣna arnaȣ." Glanhau a oruc hanher ẏ lleill gẏllell idaȣ, ae rodi ẏn ẏ laȣ a oruc. "A reinc dẏ uod di hẏnnẏ?" "Oed well genhẏf noc ẏssẏd ẏm gȣlat, bei oll ẏt uei[11] val hẏnn. Dẏhed a beth bot gȣr kẏstal a thi heb gedẏmdeith." "Oia ȣrda, mae[12] imi gedẏmdeith kẏny dẏgo[n]ho[13] ẏ gerd honn." "Pwẏ ẏȣ hȣnnȣ?" "Aet ẏ porthaȣr allan, a mi a dẏwedaf ar arȣẏdon idaȣ.[14] Penn ẏ waẏȣ a daȣ ẏ ar ẏ baladẏr. Ac ẏssef a dẏgẏrch ẏ guaet ẏ ar y guẏnt ac a diskẏn ar ẏ baladẏr."[15] Agori ẏ porth a wnaethpȣẏt, a dẏuot Bedwẏr ẏ mẏȣn. Dẏwaȣt[16] Kei: "Budugaȣl ẏȣ Bedwẏr, kẏn nẏ digonho[17] ẏ gerd hon."

(Ch. 3). 1 ac y dywaȣt H, 2 ȣrthaȣ H, 3 chwedleu H, 4 y gennyt H, *in* P, y *has been added over the line*, 5 *om.* H, 6 ouynneist di H, 7 gantunt hȣy H, 8 heb ef *add.* H, 9 gȣybot H, 10 ohonaȣ yn da *add.* H, 11 as oed H, 12 ynni H, 13 ac nys keueis H, 14 kan oes H

(Ch. 4). 1 a oruc H, 2 geyr bron gȣrnach *add.* H, 3 ac y dywaȣt H, 4 ȣrthaȣ *add.* H, 5 arnat ti y gȣdost H, 6 Mi a ȣnn hynn yn da heb y kei H, 7 Dȣyn H, 8 ȣrnach H, 9 wnaethpȣyt attaȣ H, 10 a gouyn or deu pȣy oed oreu gantaȣ H, 11 pei bei oll ual H, 12 y mae ymi H, 13 dycko H, 14 idaȣ y arwydon H, 15 eilweith *add.* H, 16 ac y dẏwaȣt H, 17 wypo H

5. A[1] dadleu maȣr a uu ar ẏ gȣẏr hẏnnẏ allan. Dẏuot[2] Kei a Bedwẏr ẏ mẏȣn. A guas ieuanc a doeth gẏt[3] ac ȣẏnt ẏ mẏȣn, vn mab Custennhin heussaȣr. Sef a ȣnaeth ef ae gedẏmdeithon a glẏn[4] ȣrthaȣ mal nat oed vȣẏ no dim ganthunt[5] mẏnet[6] dros ẏ teir catlẏs a wnaethant[7] hẏt pan dẏuuant[8] ẏ mẏȣn ẏ gaer. Amkeudant[9] ẏ gedẏmdeithon ȣrth vab Custenhin: "Goreu dẏn ẏȣ."[10] O[11] hẏnnẏ allan ẏ gelwit Goreu mab Custenhin. Guascaru a orugant ȣẏ ẏ eu llettẏeu, mal ẏ keffẏnt llad eu llettẏwẏr heb ȣẏbot ẏr caȣr.

6. Ẏ cledẏf a daruu ẏ ȣrteith. Ae rodi a oruc Kei ẏn llaȣ Wrnach Kaȣr,[1] ẏ malphei ẏ edrẏch a ranghei ẏ uod idaȣ ẏ weith.[2] Dẏwaȣt[3] ẏ kaȣr: "Da ẏȣ ẏ gueith, a ranc bod ẏȣ genhẏf." Amkaȣd[4] Kei: "Dẏ wein[5] a lẏgrȣẏs dẏ gledẏf. Dẏro di imi ẏ diot ẏ kellellprenneu[6] oheni,[7] a chaffȣẏf inheu gȣneuthur rei newẏd[8] idaȣ." A chẏmrẏt ẏ wein ohonaȣ, ar cledyf[9] ẏn ẏ llaȣ arall. Dẏuot[10] ohonaȣ vch pen ẏ kaȣr, malphei[11] ẏ cledẏf a dottei ẏn ẏ wein. Ẏ ossot a oruc ẏm phen[12] ẏ kaȣr, a llad ẏ penn ẏ ergẏt ẏ arnaȣ. Diffeithaȣ ẏ gaer, a dȣẏn a vẏnnassant o tlẏsseu.[13] Ẏg kẏuenȣ ẏr vn dẏd ẏm phen[14] ẏ vlȣẏdẏn ẏ deuthant[15] y lys Arthur, a chledyf Wrnach Gaȣr gantunt.

7. Dywedut a ȣnaethant y Arthur y ual y daruu udunt. Arthur a dywaȣt: "Pa beth yssyd iaȣnaf y geissaȣ gyntaf or annoetheu hynny?" "Iaȣnaf ẏȣ," heb ȣynteu, "keissaȣ Mabon uab Modron. Ac nyt kaffel arnaȣ nes kaffel Eidoel uab Aer y gar yn gyntaf." Kyuodi a oruc Arthur a milwyr ynys Prydein gantaȣ y geissaȣ Eidoel. A dyuot a orugant hyt yn rac Kaer Glini, yn y lle yd oed Eidoel yg

(Ch. 5). 1 *om.* H, 2 gan y gȣyr a oed allan am dyuot Bedwyr a Chei H, 3 A dyuot gȣas ieuanc oed H, 4 yg glyn H, 5 mal—ganthunt *om.* H, 6 dyuot H, 7 a wnaethant *om.* H, 8 yttoed H, 9 Y dywedassant H, 10 ti a orugost hynn goreu dyn ȣyt H, 11 Ac o H

(Ch. 6). 1 gaȣr H, 2 gȣeith H, 3 ac y dywaȣt H, 4 Y dywaȣt H, 5 wein di H, 6 kyllellbrenneu H, 7 ohonei H, 8 ac y wneuthur ereill o newyd H, 9 chedyf P, 10 a dyuot H, 11 mal pei H, 12 ynteu ym pennH, 13 or da ar tlysseu H, 14 penn H, 15 P *ends*

karchar. Seuyll a oruc Glini ar vann y gaer; ac y dywaȣt: "Arthur, py holy di y mi, pryt nam gedy yn y tarren honn, nyt da im yndi, ac nyt digrif, nyt gȣenith, nyt keirch im, kyn ny cheissych ditheu wneuthur cam im?" Arthur a dywaȣt: "Nyt yr drȣc itti y deuthum i yma, namyn y geissaȣ y karcharaȣr yssyd gennyt." "Mi a rodaf y carcharaȣr itti, ac ny darparysswn y rodi y neb. Ac y gyt a hynny vy nerth am porth a geffy di." Y gȣyr a dywaȣt ȣrth Arthur: "Arglȣyd, dos di adref. Ny elly di uynet ath lu y geissaȣ peth mor uan ar rei hynn." Arthur a dywaȣt: "Gȣrhyr Gȣalstaȣt Ieithoed, itti y mae iaȣn mynet yr neges honn. Yr holl ieithoed yssyd gennyt, a chyfyeith ȣyt ar rei or adar ar anniueileit. Eidoel, itti y mae iaȣn mynet y geissaȣ dy geuynderȣ yȣ gyt am gȣyr i. Kei a Bedwyr, gobeith yȣ gennyf y neges yd eloch ymdanei y chaffel. Eȣch im yr neges honn."

8. Kerdet a orugant racdunt hyt att vȣyalch Gilgȣri. Gouyn a oruc Gȣrhyr idi: "Yr Duȣ, a ȣdost ti dim y ȣrth Uabon uab Modron, a ducpȣyt yn teirnossic ody rȣng y vam ar paret?" Y uȣyalch a dywaȣt: "Pan deuthum i yma gyntaf, eingon gof a oed yma, a minneu ederyn ieuanc oedȣn. Ny wnaethpȣyt gȣeith arnei, namyn tra uu vyg geluin arnei bob ucher. Hediȣ nyt oes kymmeint kneuen ohonei heb dreulaȣ. Dial Duȣ arnaf, o chigleu i dim y ȣrth y gȣr a ovynnȣch chȣi. Peth yssyd iaȣn hagen a dylyet y mi y wneuthur y gennadeu Arthur, mi ae gȣnaf. Kenedlaeth vileit yssyd gynt rithȣys Duȣ no mi; mi a af yn gyuarwyd ragoch yno."

9. Dyuot a orugant hyt yn lle yd oed karȣ Redynure. "Karȣ Redynure, yma y doetham ni attat kennadeu Arthur, kany ȣdam aniueil hyn no thi. Dywet, a wdost di dim y ȣrth Uabon uab Modron, a ducpȣyt yn deirnossic y ȣrth y uam?" Y karȣ a dywaȣt: "Pan deuthum i yma gyntaf, nyt

oed namyn vn reit o bop tu ym penn. Ac nyt oed yma goet namyn un o gollen derwen. Ac y tyfwys honno yn dar can keing. Ac y dygȣydȣys y dar gȣedy hynny. A hediȣ nyt oes namyn ȣystyn coch ohonei. Yr hynny hyt hediȣ yd ȣyf i yma; ny chigleu i dim or neb a ouynnȣch chȣi. Miui hagen a uydaf gyfarȣyd yȣch, kanys kennadeu Arthur yȣch, hyt lle y mae aniueil gynt a rithȣys Duȣ no mi."

10. Dyuot a orugant hyt lle yd oed cuan Cum Kaȣlȣyt. "Cuan Cȣm Caȣlȣyt, yma y mae kennadeu Arthur. A ȣdost di dim y ȣrth Vabon vab Modron a ducpȣyt?" *et cetera.* "Pei as gȣypȣn, mi ae dywedȣn. Pan deuthum i yma gyntaf, y cȣm maȣr a welȣch glynn coet oed. Ac y deuth kenedlaeth o dynyon idaȣ, ac y diuaȣyt. Ac y tyuȣys yr eil coet yndaȣ. Ar trydyd coet yȣ hȣnn. A minneu neut ydynt yn gynyon boneu vy esgyll. Yr hynny hyt hediȣ ny chiglef i dim or gȣr a ouynnȣch chȣi. Mi hagen a uydaf gyuarwyd y genadeu Arthur, yny deloch hyt lle y mae yr anniueil hynaf yssyd yn y byt hȣnn, a mȣyaf a dreigyl, eryr Gȣern Abȣy.

11. Gȣrhyr a dywaȣt: "Eryr Gwern Abȣy, ni a doetham gennadeu Arthur attat y ouyn itt a ȣdost dim y ȣrth Vabon uab Modron a duc" *et cetera.* Yr eryr a dywaȣt: "Mi a deuthum yma yr ys pell o amser. A phann deuthum yma gyntaf, maen a oed ym, ac y ar y benn ef y pigȣn y syr bob ucher; weithon nyt oes dyrnued yn y uchet. Yr hynny hyt hediȣ yd ȣyf i yma. Ac ny chiglef i dim y ȣrth y gȣr a ouynnȣch chȣi, onyt un treigyl yd euthum y geissaȣ uym bȣyt hyt yn Llynn Lyȣ. A phann deuthum i yno, y lledeis uyg cryuangheu y myȣn ehaȣc o debygu bot vym bȣyt yndaȣ wers vaȣr. Ac y tynnȣys ynteu ui hyt yr affȣys, hyt pann uu abreid im ymdianc y gantaȣ. Sef a ȣneuthum inheu, mi am holl garant, mynet yg gȣrys ȣrthaȣ y geissaȣ y diuetha. Kennadeu a yrrȣys ynteu y gymot a mi. A dyuot a oruc ynteu attaf i y diot dec tryuer a deugeint oe geuyn. Onyt

ef a wyr peth or hynn a geissoch choi, ny onn i neb ae gopo. Mi hagen a uydaf gyuaroyd yoch hyt lle y mae."

12. Dyuot a orugant hyt lle yr oed. Dywedut a oruc yr eryr: "Ehaoc Lyn Lyo, mi a deuthum attat gan gennadeu Arthur y ouyn a odost dim y orth Vabon uab Modron, a ducpoyt yn teirnossic y orth y uam." "Y gymeint a wypoyf i, mi ae dywedaf. Gan bob llano yd af i ar hyt yr auon uchot, hyt pan deloyf hyt y mach mur Kaer Loyo. Ac yno y keueis i ny cheueis eirmoet o droc y gymeint. Ac mal y crettoch, doet un ar uyn doy ysgoyd i yma ohonaoch." Ac ysef yd aeth ar doy ysgoyd yr ehaoc. Kei a Gorhyr Gwalstaot Ieithoed. Ac y kerdassant hyt pann deuthant am y uagoyr ar karcharaor. Yny uyd koynuan a griduan a glywynt am y uagoyr ac oy. Gorhyr a dywaot: "Pa dyn a goyn yn y maendy honn?" "Oia or, yssit le idao y goynao y neb yssyd yma. Mabon uab Modron yssyd yma yg carchar; ac ny charcharoyt neb kyndostet yn lloro carchar a mi, na charchar Lud Lao Ereint neu garchar Greit mab Eri." "Oes obeith gennyt ti ar gaffel dy ellong ae yr eur ae yr aryant ae yr golut pressennaol, ae yr catwent ac ymlad?" "Y gymeint ohonof i a gaffer a geffir droy ymlad." Ymchoelut ohonunt oy odyno, a dyuot hyt lle yd oed Arthur. Dywedut ohonunt y lle yd oed Mabon uab Modron yg karchar. Goyssyao a oruc Arthur milwyr yr ynys honn, a mynet hyt yg Kaer Loyo, y lle yd oed Mabon yg karchar. Mynet a oruc Kei a Bedwyr ar doy yscoyd y pysc. Tra yttoed vilwyr Arthur yn ymlad ar gaer, roygao o Gei y uagoyr a chymryt y carcharaor ar y geuyn. Ac ymlad ar goyr ual kynt ar goyr. Atref y doeth Arthur a Mabon gantao yn ryd.

13. Dywedut a oruc Arthur: "Beth iaonhaf weithon y geissao yn gyntaf or annoetheu?" "Iaonhaf yo keissao deu geneu gast Rymhi." "A wys," heb yr Arthur, "pa du y mae hi?" "Y mae," heb yr un, "yn Aber Deugledyf."

Dyuot a oruc Arthur hyt yn ty Tringat yn Aber Cledyf. A gouyn a oruc orthao: "A glyweist ti y orthi hi yma? Py rith y mae hi?" "Yn rith bleidast," heb ynteu, "ae deu geneu genthi yd ymda. Hi a ladaod vy ysgrybul yn vynych. Ac y mae hi issot yn Aber Cledyf y myon gogof." Sef a oruc Arthur gyrru ym Prytwenn y long ar uor ac ereill ar y tir y hela yr ast; ae chylchynu uelly hi ae deu geneu. Ac eu datrithao o Duo y Arthur yn eu rith ehunein. Goascaru a oruc llu Arthur bob un bob deu.

14. Ac ual yd oed Goythyr mab Greidaol dydgoeith yn kerdet dros vynyd, y clywei leuein a gridua[n] girat; a garscon oed eu clybot. Achub a oruc ynteu parth ac yno. Ac mal y deuth yno, dispeilao cledyf a wnaeth, a llad y toynpath orth y dayar, ac ev diffryt uelly rac y tan. Ac y dywedassant oynteu orthao: "Doc uendyth Duo ar einym gennyt. Ar hynn ny allo dyn vyth y waret, ni a doon y waret itt." Hoyntoy wedy hynny a doethant ar nao hestaor llinat, a nodes Yspadaden Pennkaor ar Culhoch, yn uessuredic oll heb dim yn eisseu ohonunt eithyr un llinhedyn; ar morgrugyn cloff a doeth a honno kynn y nos.

15. Pan yttoed Gei a Bedwyr yn eisted ar benn Pumlumon ar Garn Goylathyr ar wynt moyaf yn y byt, edrych a onaethant yn eu kylch. Ac oynt a oelynt voc maor parth ar deheu ym pell y orthunt heb drossi dim gan y goynt. Ac yna y dywaot Kei: "Myn llao vyng kyueillt, syll dy racco tan ryssor." Bryssyao a orugant parth ar moc, a dynessau parth ac yno dan ymardisgoyl o bell. Yny uyd Dillus Uaruaoc yn deiuao baed coet. Llyna hagen y ryssor moyaf a ochelaod Arthur eiryoet. Heb y Bedwyr yna orth Gei: "Ae hatwaenost di ef?" "Atwen," heb y Kei; "llyna Dillus Uarruaoc. Nyt oes yn y byt kynllyuan a dalyo Drutwyn keneu Greit uab Eri, namyn kynllyuan o uaryf y gor a wely di racko; ac ny moynhaa heuyt, onyt yn

vyȣ y tynnir a chyllellprenneu oe uaraf, kanys breu uyd yn uarȣ." "Mae an kynghor ninneu ȣrth hynny?" heb y Bedwyr. "Gadȣn ef," heb y Kei, "y yssu y wala or kic; a gȣedy hynny kyscu a ȣna." Tra yttoed ef yn hynny, y buant ȣynteu yn gȣneuthur kyllellbrenneu. Pan ȣybu Gei yn diheu y uot ef yn kyscu, gȣneuthur pȣll a oruc dan y draet mȣyhaf yn y byt. A tharaȣ dyrnaȣt arnaȣ anueitraȣl y ueint a oruc, ae wascu yn y pȣll, hyt pan daroed udunt y gnithiaȣ yn llȣyr ar kyllellbrenneu y uaryf; a gȣedy hynny y lad yn gȣbyl. Ac odyna yd aethant ell deu hyt yg Kelli Wic yg Kernyȣ, a chynllyuann o uaryf Dillus Uaruaȣc gantunt. Ae rodi a oruc Kei yn llaȣ Arthur. Ac yna y kanei Arthur yr eglyn hȣnn:

"Kynnllyuan a oruc Kei
o uaryf Dillus uab Eurei;
pei iach, dy angheu uydei."

Ac am hynny y sorres Kei, hyt pan uu abreid y uilwyr yr ynys honn tangneuedu y rȣng Kei ac Arthur. Ac eissoes nac yr anghyfnerth ar Arthur nac yr llad y wyr nyt ymyrrȣys Kei yn reit gyt ac ef o hynny allan.

16. Ac yna y dywaȣt Arthur: "Beth iaȣnaf weithon y geissaȣ or annoetheu?" "Iaȣnaf yȣ keissaȣ Drutwyn keneu Greit uab Eri." Kyn no hynny ychydic yd aeth Creidylat uerch Lud Laȣ Ereint gan Wythyr mab Greidaȣl. A chynn kyscu genthi dyuot Gȣynn uab Nud ae dȣyn y treis. Kynnullaȣ llu o Wythyr uab Greidaȣl a dyuot y ymlad a Gȣynn mab Nud. A goruot o Wyn, a dala Greit mab Eri a Glinneu eil Taran a Gȣrgȣst Letlȣm a Dyfnarth y uab; a dala o Penn uab Nethaȣc a Nȣython a Chyledyr Wyllt y uab. A llad Nȣython a oruc, a diot y gallon, a chymhell ar Kyledyr yssu callon y dat; ac am hynny yd aeth Kyledyr yg gȣyllt. Clybot o Arthur hynny, a dyuot hyt y Gogled.

A dyuynnv a oruc ef Gȣynn uab Nud attaȣ, a gellȣng y wyrda y gantaȣ oe garchar, a gȣneuthur tangneued y rȣng Gȣynn mab Nud a Gȣythyr mab Greidaȣl. Sef tangneued a wnaethpȣyt, gadu y uorȣyn yn ty y that yn diuȣyn or dȣy barth; ac ymlad bob duȣ kalan Mei uyth hyt dyd braȣt or dyd hȣnnȣ allan y rȣng Gȣynn a Gȣythyr; ar un a orffo onadunt dyd braȣt, kymeret y uorȣyn. A gȣedy kymot y gȣyrda hynny uelly, y kauas Arthur Mygdȣn march Gȣedȣ a chynnllyuan Cȣrs Cant Ewin.

17. Gȣedy hynny yd aeth Arthur hyt yn Lydaȣ, a Mabon uab Mellt gantaȣ a Gȣare Gȣallt Euryn, y geissaȣ deu gi Glythmyr L[ed]ewic. A gȣedy eu kaffel yd aeth Arthur hyt yg gorllewin Iwerdon y geissaȣ Gȣrgi Seueri, ac Odgar uab Aed brenhin Iwerdon gyt ac ef. Ac odyna yd aeth Arthur yr Gogled, ac y delis Kyledyr Wyllt. Ac yd aeth Yskithyrwynn Pennbeid; ac yd aeth Mabon mab Mellt, a deu gi Glythuyr Ledewic yn y laȣ a Drutwyn geneu Greit mab Eri. Ac yd aeth Arthur ehun yr erhyl, a Chaualℓ ki Arthur yn y laȣ. Ac yd esgynnȣys Kaȣ o Brydein ar Lamrei kassec Arthur, ac achub yr kyfuarch. Ac yna y kymerth Kaȣ o Brydein nerth bȣyellic, ac yn wychyr trebelit y doeth ef yr baed, ac y hollȣes y benn yn deu hanner. A chymryt a oruc Kaȣ yr ysgithyr. Nyt y kȣn a nottayssei Yspaden ar Gȣlhȣch a ladaȣd y baed, namyn Kaualℓ ki Arthur ehun.

18. A gȣedy llad Ysgithyrwyn Bennbeid, yd aeth Arthur ae niuer hyt yng Kelli Wic yng Kernyȣ. Ac odyno y gyrrȣys Menȣ mab Teirgȣaed y edrych a uei y tlysseu y rȣng deu glust Tȣrch Trȣyth, rac salwen oed uynet y ymdaraȣ ac ef, ony[1] bei y tlysseu gantaȣ. Diheu hagen oed y uot ef yno; neur daroed idaȣ diffeithaȣ traean Iwerdon. Mynet a oruc Menȣ y ymgeis ac ȣynt. Sef y gȣelas ȣynt yn Esgeir Oeruel yn Iwerdon. Ac ymrithaȣ a oruc Menȣ yn rith

1. MS. ac ony, *corr. Loth.*

ederyn ; a disgynnu a ỽnaeth uch penn y gỽal, a cheissaỽ ysglyffyaỽ un or tlysseu y gantaỽ ; ac yn chauas dim hagen namyn un oe wrych. Kyuodi a oruc ynteu yn wychyr da ac ymysgytyaỽ, hyt pan ymordiwedaỽd peth or gỽenỽyn ac ef ; odyna ny bu dianaf Menỽ uyth.

19. Gyrru o Arthur gennat gỽedy hynny ar Odgar uab Aed, brenhin Iwerdon, y erchi peir Diỽrnach Wydel, maer idaỽ. Erchi o Otgar idaỽ y rodi. Y dywaỽt Diỽrnach : " Duỽ a wyr, pei hanffei well o welet un olỽc arnaỽ, nas kaffei." A dyuot o gennat Arthur a nac genthi o Iwerdon. Kychỽynnu a oruc Arthur ac ysgaỽn niuer ganthaỽ, a mynet ym Prytwen y long, a dyuot y Ywerdon ; a dygyrchu ty Diỽrnach Wydel a orugant. Gỽelsant niuer Otgar eu meint. A gỽedy bỽyta onadunt ac yuet eu dogyn, erchi y peir a oruc Arthur. Y dywaỽt ynteu, pei as rodei y neb, y rodei ỽrth eir Odgar brenhin Iwerdon. Gỽedy lleueryd nac udunt, kyuodi a oruc Bedwyr ac ymauael yn y peir, ae dodi ar geuyn Hygỽyd gỽas Arthur ; braỽt oed hỽnnỽ unuam y Gachamỽri gỽas Arthur. Sef oed y sỽyd ef yn wastat ymdỽyn peir Arthur a dodi tan y danaỽ. Meglyt o Lenlleaỽc Wydel yg Kaletvỽlch, ae ellỽng ar y rot, a llad Diỽrnach Wydel ae niuer ach[l]an. Dyuot lluoed Iwerdon ac ymlad ac ỽy. A gỽedy ffo y lluoed achlan, mynet Arthur ae wyr yn eu gỽyd yn y llong, ar peir yn llaỽn o sỽllt Iỽerdon gantunt ; a diskynnu yn ty Lỽydeu mab Kelcoet ym Porth Kerdin yn Dyuet. Ac yno y mae messur y peir.

20. Ac yna y kynnullỽys Arthur a oed o gynifyỽr yn teir ynys Prydein ae their racynys, ac a oed yn Freinc a Llydaỽ a Normandi a Gỽlat yr Haf, ac a oed o gicỽr dethol a march clotuaỽr. Ac yd aeth ar niueroed hynny oll hyt yn Iỽerdon. Ac y bu ouyn maỽr ac ergryn racdaỽ yn Iwerdon. A gỽedy disgynnu Arthur yr tir, dyuot seint Iwerdon attaỽ y erchi naỽd idaỽ. Ac y rodes ynteu naỽd udunt hỽy, ac y

rodassant ỽynteu eu bendyth idaỽ ef. Dyuot a oruc gỽyr Iwerdon hyt att Arthur a rodi bỽyttal idaỽ. Dyuot a oruc Arthur hyt yn Esgeir Oeruel yn Iỽerdon, yn y lle yd oed Twrch Trỽyth ae seithlydyn moch gantaỽ. Gellỽng kỽn arnaỽ o bop parth. Y dyd hỽnnỽ educher yd ymladaỽd y Gỽydyl ac ef ; yr hynny pymhet ran Iwerdon[1] a ỽnaeth yn diffeith. A thrannoeth yd ymladaỽd teulu Arthur ac ef ; namyn a gaỽssant o drỽc y gantaỽ, ny chaỽssant dim o da. Y trydyd dyd yd ymladaỽd Arthur ehun ac ef naỽ nos a naỽ nieu ; ny ladaỽd namyn un parchell oe uoch. Gouynnỽys y gỽyr y Arthur peth oed ystyr yr hỽch hỽnnỽ. Y dywaỽt ynteu : "Brenhin uu, ac am y bechaỽt y rithỽys Duỽ ef yn hỽch."

21. Gyrru a ỽnaeth Arthur Gỽrhyr Gỽalstaỽt Ieithoed y geissaỽ ymadraỽd ac ef. Mynet a oruc Gỽrhyr yn rith ederyn, a disgynnv a ỽnaeth vch benn y wal ef ae seithlydyn moch. A gouyn a oruc Gỽrhyr Gỽalstaỽt Ieithoed idaỽ : "Yr y gỽr ath wnaeth ar y delỽ honn, or gellỽch dywedut, y harchaf dyuot un ohonaỽch y ymdidan ac Arthur." Gỽrtheb a ỽnaeth Grugyn Gỽrych Ereint (mal adaned aryant oed y wrych oll ; y fford y kerdei ar goet ac ar uaes y gỽelit, ual y llithrei y wrych). Sef atteb a rodes Grugyn : " Myn y gỽr an gỽneuthur ni ar y delỽ honn, ny wnaỽn, ac ny dywedỽn dim yr Arthur. Oed digaỽn o drỽc a ỽnathoed Duỽ ynni, an gỽneuthur ar y delỽ hon, kyny deleỽch chỽitheu y ymlad a ni." " Mi a dywedaf yỽch yd ymlad Arthur am y grib ar ellyn ar gỽellеu yssyd rỽng deu glust Twrch Trỽyth." Heb y Grugyn : " Hyt pann gaffer y eneit ef yn gyntaf, ny cheffir y tlysseu hynny. Ar bore auory y kychỽynnỽn ni odyma ; ac yd aỽn y wlat Arthur, ar meint mỽyhaf a allom ni o drỽc a ỽnaỽn yno." Kychỽyn a orugant hỽy ar y mor parth a Chymry. Ac yd aeth Arthur ae luoed ae ueirch ae gỽn ym Prytwen, a tharaỽ lygat ymwelet ac ỽynt. Disgynnu a ỽnaeth

1. MS. y iwerdon.

Tȣrch Trȣyth ym Porth Cleis yn Dyuet. Dyuot a oruc Arthur hyt ym Mynyȣ y nos honno. Trannoeth dywedut y Arthur eu mynet heibaȣ. Ac ymordiwes a oruc ac ef yn ỻad gȣarthec Kynnwas Kȣrr y Uagyl. A gȣedy ỻad a oed yn Deugledyf o dyn a mil kynn dyuot Arthur, or pan deuth Arthur, y kychȣynnȣys Tȣrch Trȣyth odyno hyt ym Presseleu. Dyuot Arthur a ỻuoed y byt hyt yno. Gyrru a oruc Arthur y wyr yr erhyl, Ely a Thrachmyr, a Drutwyn keneu Greit mab Eri yn y laȣ ehun; a Gȣarthegyt uab Kaȣ yghongyl araỻ, a deu gi Glythmyr Letewic yn y laȣ ynteu; a Bedwyr a Chauaỻ ki Arthur yn y laȣ ynteu. A restru a oruc y milwyr oỻ o deu tu Nyuer. Dyuot tri meib Cledyf Divȣlch, gȣyr a gauas clot maȣr yn ỻad Ysgithyrwyn Pennbeid. Ac yna y kychȣynnȣys ynteu o Lynn Nyuer, ac y doeth y Gȣm Kerȣyn, ac y rodes kyuarth yno. Ac yna y ỻadaȣd ef bedwar ryssȣr y Arthur, Gȣarthegyd mab Kaȣ, a Tharaȣc Aỻỻt Clȣyt, a Reidȣn uab Eli Atuer, ac Iscouan Hael. A gȣedy ỻad y gȣyr hynny, y rodes yr eil kyuarth udunt yn y ỻe, ac y ỻadaȣd Gȣydre uab Arthur, a Garselit Wydel, a Gleȣ uab Yscaȣt, ac Iscaȣyn uab Panon; ae doluryaȣ ynteu yna a ȣnaethpȣyt.

22. Ar bore ym bronn y dyd drannoeth yd ymordiwedaȣd rei or gȣyr ac ef. Ac yna y ỻadaȣd Huandaȣ a Gogigȣr a Phenn Pingon, tri gȣeis Gleȣlȣyt Gauaeluaȣr, hyt nas gȣydyat Duȣ was yn y byt ar y helȣ ynteu, eithyr Ỻaesgenym ehunan, gȣr ny hanoed weỻ neb ohonaȣ. Ac y gyt a hynny y ỻadaȣd ỻaȣer o wyr y ȣlat, a Gȣlydyn saer, pensaer y Arthur. Ac yna yd ymordiwedaȣd Arthur ym Pelumyaȣc ac ef. Ac yna y ỻadaȣd ynteu Madaȣc mab Teithyon, a Gȣyn mab Tringat mab Neuet, ac Eiryaȣn Pennỻoran. Ac odyna yd aeth ef hyt yn Aber Tyȣi. Ac yno y rodes kyuarth udunt. Ac yna y ỻadaȣd ef Kynlas mab Kynan, a Gȣilenhin bre[nh]in Freinc. Odyna yd aeth hyt yg

Glynn Ystu. Ac yna yd ymgoỻassant y gȣyr ar cȣn ac ef. Dyuynnu a oruc Arthur Gȣyn uab Nud attaȣ, a gouyn idaȣ a ȣydyat ef dim yȣrth Tȣrch Trȣyth. Y dywaȣt ynteu nas gȣydyat.

23. Y hela y moch yd aeth y kynnydyon yna oỻ hyt yn Dyffryn Ỻychȣr. Ac y digribyȣys Grugyn Gȣaỻỻt Ereint udunt a Ỻȣydaȣc Gouynnyat; ac y ỻadass[ant] y kynnydyon, hyt na diengis dyn yn vyȣ onadunt namyn un gȣr. Sef a oruc Arthur dyuot ae luoed hyt ỻe yd oed Grugyn a Ỻȣydaȣc, a geỻȣng yna arnadunt a oed o gi rynodydoed yn ỻȣyr. Ac ȣrth yr aȣr a dodet yna ar kyuarth, y doeth Tȣrch Trȣyth ac y diffyrth ȣynt. Ac yr pan dathoedynt dros uor Iwerdon, nyt ymwelsei ac ȣynt hyt yna. Dygȣydaȣ a ȣnaethpȣyt yna a gȣyr a chȣn arnaȣ. Ymrodi y gerdet ohonaȣ ynteu hyt ym Mynyd Amanȣ. Ac yna y ỻas banȣ oe uoch ef. Ac yna yd aethpȣyt eneit dros eneit ac ef. Ac y ỻadȣyt yna Tȣrch Llaȣin. Ac yna y ỻas araỻ oe voch; Gȣys oed y enȣ. Ac odyna yd aeth hyt yn Dyffrynn Amanȣ. Ac yno y ỻas banȣ a bennwic. Nyt aeth odyno gantaȣ oe uoch yn vyȣ namyn Grugyn Gȣaỻt Ereint a Ỻȣydaȣc Gouynnyat. Or ỻe hȣnnȣ yd aethant hyt yn Ỻȣch Eȣin. Ac yd ymordiwedaȣd Arthur ac ef yno. Rodi kyuarth a ȣnaeth ynteu yna. Ac yna y ỻadaȣd ef Echel Uordȣyt Tȣỻ, ac Arȣyli eil Gȣydaȣc Gȣyr, a ỻaȣer o wyr a chȣn heuyt. Ac yd aethant odyna hyt yn Llȣch Taȣy. Yscar a ȣnaeth Grugyn Gȣrych Ereint ac ȣynt yna. Ac yd aeth Grugyn odyna hyt yn Dintywi. Ac odyna yd aeth hyt yg Keredigyaȣn, ac Eil a Thrachmyr gantaȣ, a ỻiaȣs gyt ac ȣynt heuyt. Ac y doeth hyt yg Garth Gregyn. Ac yno y[1] ỻas Llȣydaȣc Gouynnyat yn y mysc. Ac y ỻadaȣd Ruduyȣ Rys, a ỻaȣer gyt ac ef. Ac yna yd aeth Ỻȣytaȣc hyt yn Ystrat Yȣ. Ac yno y kyuaruu gȣyr Ỻydaȣ ac ef.

1. MS. y y

Ac yna y llada6d ef Hir Peissa6c brenhin Lyda6, a Lygatrud Emys a Gor̈bothu, e6ythred Arthur, vrodyr y uam. Ac yna y llas ynteu.

24. Tor̈ch Tro̊yth a aeth yna y ro̊ng Ta6y ac Euyas. Go̊yssya6 Kerny6 a Dyfneint o Arthur yn y erbyn hyt yn aber Hafren. A dywedut a oruc Arthur go̊rth vil6yr yr ynys honn: "Tor̈ch Tro̊yth a lada6d lla6er om go̊yr. Myn go̊rhyt go̊yr, nyt a mi yn uy6 yd aho ef y Gerny6. Nys ymlityaf i ef bellach, namyn mynet eneit dros eneit ac ef a wnaf. Go̊ne6ch ch6i a go̊nelhoch." Sef a daruu o gyghor ganta6 ell6ng kat o uarchogyon, a ch6n yr ynys gantunt, hyt yn Euyas, ac ymchoelut odyno hyt yn Hafren, ae ragot yno ac a oed o vilwyr prouedic yn yr ynys honn, ae yrru anghen yn anghen yn Hafren. A mynet a go̊naeth Mabon uab Modron ganta6 ar Wynn mygd6n march Go̊ed6 yn Hafren, a Goreu mab Custennin, a Men6 mab Teirgo̊aed y ro̊ng Llynn Li6an ac aber Go̊y. A dygo̊yda6 o Arthur arna6, a ryss6yr Prydein gyt ac ef. Dynessau a oruc Osla Gyllellua6r a Mana6ydan uab Llyr a Chacmo̊ri go̊as Arthur a Go̊yn Gelli, a dygrynnya6 ynda6, ac ymauael yn gyntaf yn y traet, ae gleica6 ohonunt yn Hafren, yny yttoed yn llen6i odyuchta6. Brathu am6s o Uabon uab Modron or neil[l] parth, a chael yr ellyn y ganta6. Ac or parth arall y dygyrch6ys Kyledyr Wyllt y ar am6s arall ganta6 yn Hafren, ac y duc y go̊ellеu y ganta6. Kynn kaffel diot y grib, kaffel dayar ohona6 ynteu ae draet. Ac or pan gauas y tir, ny all6ys na chi na dyn na march y ganhymdeith, hyt pan aeth y Gerny6. Noc a gaffat o dro̊c yn keissa6 y tlysseu hynny y ganta6, go̊aeth a gaffat yn keissa6 diffryt y deu go̊r rac eu bodi. Kacmo̊ri ual y tynnit ef y uynyd, y tynnei deu uaen ureuan ynteu yr affo̊ys. Osla Gyllellua6r yn redec yn ol y to̊rch, y dygo̊yd6ys y gyllell oe wein ac y kolles; ae wein ynteu

go̊edy hynny yn lla6n or do̊fyr, ual y tynnit ef y uynyd, y tynnei hitheu ef yr affo̊ys. Odyna yd aeth Arthur a llu6oed, hyt pan ymordiweda6d ac ef yg Kerny6. Go̊are oed a gafat o dro̊c ganta6 kyn no hynny y go̊rth a gaffat yna ganta6 yn keissa6 y grib. O dro̊c y gilyd y kaffat y grib y ganta6. Ac odyna y holet ynteu o Gerny6, ac y gyrro̊yt yr mor yn y gyueir. Ny wybu6yt vyth o hynny allan pa le yd aeth, ac Anet ac Aethlem ganta6. Ac odyno yd aeth Arthur y ymeneina6 ac y u6ro̊ y ludet y arna6 hyt yg Kelli Wic yg Kerny6.

25. Dywedut o Arthur: "A oes dim weithon or anoetheu heb gaffel?" Y dywa6t vn or go̊yr: "Oes. Go̊aet y widon Ordu merch y widon Orwen o penn Nant Gouut yg go̊rthtir Uffern." Kych6yn a oruc Arthur parth ar Gogled, a dyuot hyt lle yd oed gogof y wrach. A chynghori o Wynn uab Nud a Go̊ythyr uab Greida6l gell6ng Kacmo̊ri a Hyg6yd y ura6t y ymlad ar wrach. Ac ual yd euthant y my6n yr ogof, y hachub a oruc y wrach; ac ymauael yn Hyg6yd her6yd go̊allt y benn, ae dara6 yr lla6r deni. Ac ymauel o Gacmo̊ri yndi hitheu her6yd go̊allt y phenn, ae thynnu y ar Hyg6yd yr lla6r. Ac ymchoelut a oruc hitheu ar Kacmo̊ri, ac eu dygaboli yll deu, ac eu diaruu, ae gyrru allan dan eu hub ac eu hob. A llidya6 a oruc Arthur o welet y deu was hayachen wedy eu llad, a cheissa6 achub yr ogof. Ac yna y dywedassant Go̊ynn a Go̊ythyr o̊rtha6: "Nyt dec ac nyt digrif genhym dy welet yn ymgribya6 a go̊rach. Gell6ng Hir Amren a Hir Eidyl yr ogof." A mynet a orugant. Ac or bu dro̊c trafferth y deu gynt, go̊aeth uu drafferth y deu hynny, hyt nas go̊ypei Du6 y vn ohonunt ell pedwar allu mynet or lle, namyn mal y dodet ell pedwar ar Lamrei kassec Arthur. Ac yna achub a oruc Arthur dro̊s yr ogof, ac y ar y dro̊s a uyryei y wrach a Charnwennan y gyllell, ae thara6 am y hanner, yny uu yn deu gelo̊rn hi. A chymryt a oruc Ka6 o Brydein go̊aet y widon ae gad6 gantha6.

IV. THE PROCEDURE IN A SUIT FOR LANDED PROPERTY.

Puipe*n*ac aue*n*no kefroẏ haul am tir a dayar.[1] Kefroet panue*n*no o nauuethid kalangayaf allan. Neu onauuethid meẏ. Kanis[2] eramseroyd he*n*ny ybit agoredic keureith am tir ay dayar.

Oderuit yr haulur me*n*nu holi tir en eramseroyt hi*n*ni deuhet[1] ar er argluit yerchi did y guarandau y haul a hi*n*ni aretir. In edid hu*n*nu datkanet y haul. Ni dele y dithun[2] kaifail atebedithun. Kanis haul dissiuit yu ar[3] guercheidveithac wrth hi*n*ni yguercheidveith a deleant oyt urth porth. Yaun yu irhalur y ludyas udunt onit ekeureyth ay deweyt ydeleu. Ac ena emay[4] ereneyt ev guarandau. A gouin pale emay eu porth. Odeweduuant pot eu porth eneu ke*n*mut euhun. Roy oyt trideu udunt. Obit en eli[5] kemut naunieu. Obit en etredit neu uot llanu a treẏ eregthun ac eu porth. Os kin ha*n*ner did ebernir eroytpetheunos or did hunnu ebit eroyt. Os guedi ha*n*ner did petheunos otra*n*noyth. Ac essev achaus yu he*n*ne. Kanydoys did kubilac nat yaun talu drill did en lle did. Ac en eroyt barnedic hu*n*nuemay yaun deuod ar etir[6] ac vynt ac eu porth.

1. Pwy bynnac a uynno kyffroi hawl am dir a dayar, kyffroet pan uynno o nawvet dyd kalan gayaf allan, neu o nawvet dyd Mei. Kanys yn yr amseroed hynny y byd agoredic kyvreith am dir a dayar.

2. O deruyd yr hawlwr mynnu holi tir yn yr amseroed hynny deuet ar yr arglwyd y erchi dyd y warandaw y hawl, a hynny ar y tir. Yn y dyd hwnnw dadganet y hawl. Ny dyly kaffael atteb y dyd hwnn. Kanys hawl dysseivyt yw ar y gwercheidweit. Ac wrth hynny y gwercheidweit a dylyant oet wrth borth. Iawn yw yr hawlwr y ludyas udunt, onyt y gyvreith a dyweit y dylyu. Ac yna y mae iawn yr yneit eu gwarandaw, a govyn pa le y mae eu porth. O dywedant bot eu porth yn eu kymmwt eu hun, roi oet

(Ch. 1). 1 the second *a* is added over the line, 2 *add* yn *with several* MSS.
(Ch. 2). 1 *h* over the line, 2 omit, 3 *add* y *with many* MSS., 4 *add* iaun *with many MSS.*

Ac ena ymay yaun guneythur[1] du[2] pleit ac eiste en[3] keureithiaul. Esseu ual etestedyr en keureythiaul. Eiste orbrenhin neu or neb a uo enile. ay keuen ar er eul[4] neu ar er[5] hin. Rac aulonidu er hin oyuyneb ef. Ar enat llis neu egnat ekemut erhun henau auo en eiste rac euron ef. Ac ar[6] llau assu y hu*n*nu er egnat arall auo enemays neu er eneid.[7] Ac ar ellau tridieu udunt. O byd yn yr eil gymmwt, naw nieu. O byd yn y trydyd neu vot llanw a threi yryngthunt ac eu porth, os kyn hanner dyd y bernir yr oet, pythewnos or dyd hwnnw y byd yr oet; os gwedy hanner dyd, pythewnos o drannoeth. Ac yssef achaws yw hynny; kanyt oes dyd kwbyl, ac nat iawn talu dryll dyd yn lle dyd. Ac yn yr oet barnedic hwnnw y mae iawn dyvot ar y tir ac wynt ac eu porth.

3. Ac yna y mae iawn gwneuthur dwy bleit ac eisted yn gyfreithiawl. Sef ual yd eistedir yn gyfreithyawl. Eisted or brenhin neu or neb a uo yn y le ae gevyn ar yr heul neu ar yr hin, rac avlonydu yr hin oe wyneb ef. Ar ynat llys neu ynat y kymmwt, yr hwn hynaf a uo, yn eisted rac y uron ef. Ac ar y llaw assw y hwnnw yr ynat arall a vo yn y maes. Ac ar y llaw deheu idaw yr

(Ch. 2). 5 leg. ereil, 6 *e* over the line

(Ch. 3). 1 *n* and *y* over the line, 2 leg. dui, 3 MS. eneu, 4 the *e* over the line, 5 added over the line, 6 *add* y *with many* MSS., 7 *after* neu *some letters cancelled*; er eneid *added over the line*

deheu ydau ereferiat neu er eferieit.[8] Ac egkell[9] er argluid edeu heneuid. Ay guirda o hinny allan o popthu ydau. Odena ford yr eneyt keuarvyneb· ac eu[10] darimret yeubraudle. Keghaus er haulur ar ellau assu ydau ar eford· ar haulur enessav· ydau· en eperued[11] ar kanllau ar ellau arall ydau. Ar[12] rigyll en seuill trakeuen ekeghaus[13]· er amdiffinur ar ellau deheu ar eforth· ar amdiffinhur enessau· ydau· eneperued· ay kanllau or tu arall ydau· arigill traigeuen entheu. Gwedi darvo eiste euelly· Kemerer[14] mach ar keureith. Esseu meychẏeu auid ar[15] tir ay dayar. Guystlon[16] o dynyon· deu[17] dyn neu auo muy· o popleit· arey[18] hinni emedyant er argluid edant.

effeiryat neu yr effeiryeit. Ac yg kylch yr arglwyd y deu hyneuid; ae wyrda o hynny allan o bob tu idau. Odyna fford yr yneit gyvarwyneb ac wynt y darymret y eu brawdle. Kynghaws yr hawlwr ar y llaw assw idaw ar y fford, ar hawlwr yn nessaf idaw yn y perved, ar kanllaw ar y llaw arall idaw; ar ringyll yn sevyll tracheuyn y kynghaws. Ar bleit arall y tu arall yr fford; yn nessaf yr fford kynghaws yr amdiffynnwr ar y llaw deheu ar y fford, ar amdiffynnwr yn nessaf idaw yn y perued, ae ganllaw or tu arall idaw; ar rhingyll traegevyn ynteu. Gwedy darvo eisted yvelly, kymerer mach ar gyvreith. Sef meichyeu a vyd ar dir a dayar, gwystlon o dynyon, deu dyn neu a vo mwy o bob pleit. Ar rei hynny yn medyant yr arglwyd yd ant.

(Ch. 3). 8 in marg., where it has been written twice, the first entry having been mutilated by the cutting of the margin, 9 *on p. 103 the phrase is* ẏnẏ gẏlch, 10 *leg.* uy y *or the like,* 11 *after this* ydau *with a stroke beneath it,* 12 after this some letters cancelled, 13 *some words omitted which in the text of the Laws are:* ar bleit arall y tu arall yr ford yn nessat yr fford kyglaȣs, 14 MS. Kemere^{r}t, 15 MS. a^{r}t, 16 some letters cancelled, 17 *e* over the line, 18 *h* after *a* cancelled and *r* written above it.

Odena guedi henne e dodir tellued·[1] essev yu hene.[2] Gostec ar emays. Puipenac a thorro etelleued hoⁿno teyr biu[3] camluru a tal ne nau ugeint. Ar geyr adeweter guedi er ostec bot hunnu[4] en diuunyant er neb ay deweto· ac yr keghaus edevether irporth ydau.

Guedi daruo eyste[1] en keureithaul mal y redewessam ny vchot ena e may yaun yr egnat deueduit wrth e dupleit ymdeveduch o keureith weithion. Ac ena may yaun iregnat gouin ẏr[2] haulur puy de keghaus[3] di a puy de kanllau· ac ena e may yaun[4] yr haulur ev henwi. Ac ena may yaun eregnat gouin ir haulur a dody colli a kaffayl eneu pen vinteu. Ac ena ema yaun yr haulur·[5] dodav heb eff. Ac ena may yaun eregnat[6] ac yr kanllau· a sauant huy ydau ef· en erenmay ef enidody arnadunthuy.[7] Ac

4. Odyna gwedy hynny y dodir tyllwed. Sef yw hynny, gostec ar y maes. Pwy bynnac a dorro y dyllwed honno, teir buw camlwrw a dal neu naw ugeint. Ar geir a dywetter gwedy yr ostec, bot hwnnw yn divwynyant yr neb ae dywetto, ac yr kynghaws y dywetter yr porth idaw.

5. Gwedy darvo eisted yn gyvreithiawl, val y rydywedassam ni uchot, yna y mae iawn yr ynat dyvedut wrth y dwy bleit: "ymdywedwch o gyvreith weithyon." Ac yna y mae iawn yr ynat ovyn yr hawlwr: "pwy dy gynghaws di a phwy dy ganllaw?" Ac yna y mae iawn yr hawlwr eu henwi. Ac yna y mae iawn yr ynat ovyn yr hawlwr: "a dody colli a chaffael yn eu pen wynteu?" Ac yna y mae iawn yr hawlwr dywedut, "dodaf," heb ef. Ac yna y mae iawn yr ynat ovyn yr kynghaws ac yr kanllaw, a

(Ch. 4). 1 *u* over the line, 2 *h* over the line, 3 *i* over the line, 4 *after this* did *cancelled*

(Ch. 5). 1 *y* over the line, 2 MS. hẏr, 3 *ke* over the line, 4 *after this* eregnat *cancelled,* 5 *leg.* haulur deueduyt, 6 *add* gouin yr kyghaus, 7 *h* over the line

ena emay yaun[8] udunt huintheu dewedvyt sauun.

Ac guedi hinny emay yaun eregnat gouin eramdiffenvr[1] puy dekeghaus ditheu apuy de kanllau. Ac ena emay yaun ydau entehu eu henwi. Ac ena emay yaun[2] yr egnat gouin ydau entehu · a did ev kolli a kaffayl en eu pen Ac ena may yaun ydau entheu dewetuyt dodau heb ef. Ac ena emay iaun[3] eregnat devetvit wrth erhaulur · haul di weython de haul. Ac ena emay[4] yaun yhaulur[5] decreu.

Llema essit yaun yr haulur edewetuyd·[1] menegi · yuot ef en briodaur ar etir hunema ardayar. Ac obit aameuho ydau ef yuot en briodaur · bot kanthau entheu a kathuo ybriodolder · o · ach ac edriu · hit emay digaun en ekeureẏth. Ay reerru en savant hwy idaw ef yn yr hyn y mae ef yn y dodi arnadunt hwy. Ac yna y mae iawn udunt hwynteu dywedut: "savun."

6. A gwedy hynny y mae iawn yr ynat ouyn yr amdiffynnwr: "pwy dy gynghaws ditheu, a phwy dy ganllaw?" Ac yna y mae iawn ydau ynteu eu henwi. Ac yna y mae iawn yr ynat ovyn idaw ynteu, a dyd ef golli a chaffael en eu pen. Ac yna y mae iawn idaw ynteu dywedut: "dodaf," heb ef. Ac yna y mae iawn yr ynat dywedut wrth yr hawlwr: "hawl di weithon dy hawl." Ac yna y mae iawn yr hawlwr dechreu.

7. Llyma yssyd iawn yr hawlwr y dywedut, menegi y vot ef yn briodawr ar y tir hwnn yma ar dayar. Ac o byt a amheuo idaw ef y vot yn briodawr, bot ganthaw ynteu a gatwo y briodolder o ach ac edrif, hyt y mae digawn yn y gyvreith, ae

(Ch. 5). 8 *after this* yregnat *cancelled*
(Ch. 6). 1 *e* over a cancelled *i*, 2 over the line, 3 *over the line*; *after this* irhaulur *cancelled*, 4 *e* over the line, 5 *leg.* yrhaulur
(Ch. 7). 1 MS. edewetduyd

agkeureithiaul yar ybriodolder · ac osid ay ha*m*mehuho[2] emay ydau ef[3] ay guyr · yreherru enagkeureithiaul. Ac essev emay entehu[4] endodi ar ekeureith deleu deuot en keureythaul traykeuen er lle ereherruyd en agkeureithyaul[5] ohonau.

Oderuit bot reẏ adewetho dodi keythveid ac guybedyeid or un pleyt Ninni adewedun egellir ene warhandawer atteb er amdiffenhur.

Heb amdiffenhur[1] myuy essit briodaur · o acch[2] ac · edriu · ac esseu eduyf en guarchadu empriodolder[3] val emay goreu edeleauvy yguarchadu · ac osid ay hameuho y · am[4] henni emay ymy ageidu digaun[5] bot en guir adewedau. A thitheu obuosty ema ty haythost en keureythaul odema. Ac osid a hamehuo hinni · emay ymy digaun ayguyr. ryyrru yn anghyvreithyawl y ar y briodolder. Ac osit ae hamheuo, y mae idaw ef digawn ae gwyr y ryyrru yn anghyvreithyawl. Ac yssef y mae ynteu yn dodi ar y gyvreith, dylyu dyvot yn gyvreithyawl traegevyn yr lle y ryyrrwyt yn anghyvreithyawl ohonaw.

8. O dervyd bot rei a dywetto dodi ceidweid a gwybydyeid or un bleit, Ninni a dywedwn y gellir, yny warandawer atteb y amdiffynnwr.

9. Heb yr amdiffynnwr: "Mivi yssyd briodawr o ach ac edrif. A sef yd wyf yn gwarchadw vym priodolder, val y mae goreu y dylyaf y warchadw. Ac osit ae hamheuo imi hynny, y mae imi ageidw digawn bot yn wir a dywedaf. A thitheu, o buost ti yma, ti a aethost yn gyvreithyawl odyma. Ac osit a hamheuo hynny y mae imi digawn ae gwyr."

(Ch. 7). 2 the third *h* over the line, 3 digawn *has probably been omitted*, 4 *h* over the line, 5 *r* over the line
(Ch.9). 1 *leg.* eramdiffenhur, 2 there is something like an *h* over the second *c*, 3 the third letter seems to have been altered to *p*, 4 y am; *leg.* y mi? 5 *leg.* digaun ageidu

Ninni adewedun ket darfo eramdiffenur rohi atheb kin oyholy ev or haulur bot en anolo er ateb · eny warandao ef · er haul ac odena atebet.

Ac guedy darfo vdunt euduy kegheussayth mal edewedassam ni vchot. Gouenet er egnat udunt aydygaun hyn adewedassant. Ac gouenet udunt auennant guellau eu kykeussayth.[1] Ac obit ay menno gather[2] ydau. Ac onibit ay menno kyemeret eregnat euduy kegheussayth[3] a dadkanet huy. A guedy estadkano aynt eregneyt allan. ar effeyryhet y gyt ac vy · a. Righyll ygyt aguy · hy eu kadv. Rac douot dynyon ywarandu[4] arnadu*n*t. Oderuit idyn deuot ywarandau arnadunt huntheu[5] ev adely talu teyrbuy kamluru hir brenhin. Ac o bit ebrenin enemays · ev adele talu kamluru deudeplic am hinny. Ac ena guedy edeystedont huy emay iaun · yr effeyryat · guedya duy ydangos oduy

10. Ninni a dywedwn, kyt darffo yr amdiffynnwr roi atteb kyn noe holi ef or hawlwr, bot yn anolo yr atteb, yny warandao ef yr hawl, ac odyna attebet.

11. A gwedy darffo udunt eu dwy gyngheusaeth, val y dywedassam ni uchot, govynet yr ynat udunt, ae digawn yr hyn a dywedassant, a gouynet udunt a vynnant gwellau eu kyngheussaeth. Ac o byd ae mynno, gatter idaw. Ac ony byd ae mynno, kymeret yr ynat eu dwy gyngheussaeth, a dadganet hwy. A gwedy as dadgano, aent yr yneit allan, ar effeiryeit y gyt ac wy, ar ringhyll y gyt ac wy y eu kadw, rac dyvot dynyon y warandaw arnadunt. O dervyd y dyn dyvot y warandaw arnadunt wynteu, ef a dyly talu teirbuw kamlwrw yr brenhin. Ac o byd y brenhin yn y maes, ef a dyly talu kamlwrw deudyplic am hynny. Ac yna gwedy yd eistedont hwy y mae iawn

(Ch. 11). 1 *ky* over the line, 2 *h* over the line, 3 *ssa* over the line, 4 *leg.* ywarandaw, 5 the second *h* over the line

er yaun[6] udu*n*t. Akanu onadunt huyntheu eu pader · Ac guedy epader emay yaun yr egnat dadkanu eduykeghessaith eylweyth.

Ac o deruit bot enreyt[1] egeyr keuarch. Elleger deu oy ouyn. Ac obit reyt yr bleyt egouener egeyr keuarhc ydy vrth kemyrit keghor[2] aynt tuy kan kanyat[3] yr egneyt hyeu keghor · ac essev edant ynyuer ebuant en eukehussayth · heb auo muy · aguas yr argluyd ygyt aguy · yeu kadu Rac deuod neb yeu keghor · ygyt ac huy · ac odau neb atadu*n*t ay keghoro talet ef kamluru er brenin a bot en anolo ekeghor. Ac guedy edarfo ekeghor deue*n*t edeu hinny ar eregneyt[4] adatkane*n*t egneyth[5] ekeghor.

Oderuit nabo reyt urth eyr keuarch yaun yu gadayl udunt vintheu eu ardelu · yr effeiryat gwediaw Duw y dangos o Duw yr iawn udunt. A chanu onadunt wynteu eu pader. A gwedy y pader y mae iaun yr ynat dadganu y dwy gyngheussaeth eilweith.

12. Ac o dervyd bot yn reit y geir kyvarch, ellynger deu oe ovyn. Ac o byd reit yr bleit y govyner y geir kyvarch idi wrth gymryt kynghor, aent wy gan ganyat yr yneit y eu kynghor. Ac yssev yd ant, y niver y buant yn eu kyngheussaeth, heb a vo muy, a gwas yr arglwyd y gyt ac wy y eu kadw rac dyvot neb y eu kynghor y gyt ac wy. Ac o daw neb attadunt ae kynghoro, talet ef gamlwrw yr brenhin, a bot yn anolo y kynghor. A gwedy y darffo y kynghor, deuent y deu hynny ar yr yneit a dadganent yr yneit y kynghor.

13. O dervyd na boreit wrth eyr kyvarch, iawn yw gadael udunt wynteu eu hardelw, a

(Ch. 11). 6 *u* over the line

(Ch. 12). 1 *some* MSS. *add* wrth, 2 *h* over the line, 3 *y* over the line, 4 the second *e* over the line, 5 *n* over the line ; *leg.* eregneit

agerru deu youyn puy eugubideyt · ac eu kedweyt · a phale emaynt · odewedant eu bot ene mays · munaher vynt · odewedant[1] eubot en[2] un kemut ac vy rodher oyd trideu[3] udunt. Odewedant eubot en ereil kemud rodher oyd naunẏeu udunt. Odewetant eubot egulat arall vynt[4] neu lanu neu trey eregthunt ac vy · oyt petheunos or did hunnu · os kin hanner did vit · os guedy hanner did petheonos odranoyth · ar did hennu endyd kolli akaffayal. Abot eguystlon egkarch[5] brenin · hit edid hunnu · ac erchi y paup deuot ay devnidev kanthau edid hynnu · hit ar etir. Kenebo duun kan edu bleyd · hinny. Neu[5] edyu endid keuereit barnedic.

En etrededet guedi edeleher vyneb[1] iaun yu i paup eistet enelle mal ereystedus edid kint · ac obetant meiru rey or guir auu en ekeggyrru deu y ovyn pwy eu guibydyeit ac eu keidweit, a pha le y maent. O dywedant eu bot yn y maes, mwynhaer wynt. O dywedant eu bot yn un kymwt ac wy, rodher oet tridieu udunt. O dywedant eu bot yn yr eil gymwt, rodher oet naw nieu udunt. O dywedant eu bot yg gwlat arall neu lanw neu drei yryngthunt ac wy, oet pythewnos or dyd hwnnw, os kyn hannerdyd y byd. Os gwedy hannerdyd, pythewnos o dranoeth, ar dyd hwnnw yn dyd kolli a chaffael. A bot y gwystlon yg karchar y brenhin hyt y dyd hwnnw. Ac erchi y bawp dyvot ae devnydeu ganthaw y dyd hwnnw hyt ar y tir. Kynnybo duungan y dwy bleit hynny, neud ydiw yn dyd kyvreith barnedic.

14. Yny trydyd dyd guedy y delher wyneb yn wyneb iawn yw y bawb eisted yn y lle, val y ryeistedws y dyd kynt. Ac o bydant meirw

(Ch. 13). 1 *ed* over the line, 2 over the line, 3 *e* over the line, 4 omitted in several MSS., 5 *leg.* karchar e, 6 *written twice over ; leg.* neud
(Ch. 14). 1 *leg.* vyneb en vynep ; *there are remains of the missing words on the margin*

kussaeith doder ereill en eu lle · a guedi er[2] eisteter ena emae yaunt yr haulur · kenic y devnidieu iam etestion ay keidveit[3] adeueduit evot ef en p*ar*aut. Ac ena emay yaun ir[4] amdifinnur gurtheb ac esev ateb a dere · deueduit yvot ef en p*ar*aut · ay defnetyeu kanhau val y hedeuis ac ena emae yaun yr brenin hercki dankos eguestelon en emays · kanys vint essit vechieu.[5] [6]Ac ena emay yaun ir egnat deuedut kosb er anostec · esseu eu hene teir biu camluru abot en anolo egeir adeueter.

Ac ena emae yaun ir haulur dodi em pen er eneyt pan niu effo adedeuis[1] en kentaf testion · akeitueit · a deleu ohonau enteu[2] muenhau en kentaf Ac ena emay yaun yr eneit erchi ydau enteu duyn y keditveit[3] ay testion rei or gwyr a vu yn y gyngheussaeth, dotter ereill yn eu lle. A gwedy yr eistether, yna y mae iawn yr hawlwr kynnic y devnydyeu y am y dystyon ae geidweit, a dyuedut y vot ef yn barawt. Ac yna y mae iawn yr amdiffynnwr gwrtheb. Ac yssef atteb a dyry, dyuedut y vot ef yn barawt, ae devnydyeu ganthaw, val y hedewis. Ac yna y mae iawn yr brenhin erchi dangos y gwystlon yn y maes; kanys wynt yssyd veichieu. Ac yna y mae iawn yr ynat dywedut kosb yr anostec. Sef yw hynny teir buw kamlwrw a bot yn anolo y geir a dywetter.

15. Ac yna y mae iawn yr hawlwr dodi ym pen yr yneit panyw efo a edewis yn gyntaf dystyon a cheidweit, a dylyu ohonaw ynteu eu mwynhau yn gyntaf. Ac yna y mae iawn yr yneit erchi idaw ynteu dwyn y

(Ch. 14). 2 *some MSS.* yd, 3 the second *i* over the line, 4 *after this* brenin *cancelled*, 5 *kanis—vechieu* interlined, in part on the margin and illegible, 6 *there seems to be a lacuna here ; some MSS.* have : Ac ena gỏedy dangosser y gỏystlon y mae iaỏn yr brenhin erchi yr righyll dodi gostec ar y maes
(Ch. 15). 1 *leg.* aedeuis, 2 *leg.* enteu eu, 3 *leg.* keidveit

y eu muinahu. Ac ena emae yaun idau enteu eu duin huy ene keuil[4] ef ac eudangos · esseu eu rei aedeueis[5] ef erei a enguis en edit kyntaf Ny dele er amdife*n*nwr llessu yrun onadunt kanivir[6] nabo da idau adeueduit.[7] Ar hun a llesso onatuunt kin guibot bet aduedoent ·[8] bit sauedc[9] hunu · er amdifenur aeil gouin[10] aoes breint yr reihinny. Ac obit doent racdunt · esseu pa achaus[11] egeill ef gouin hinny vrth na eill alldut bot en vybitiat ar treftadauc. Ac na eill gureic · ar gur. Ac ekit ahene ni heill llauer o deneon bot yn vibetiet nac en kedueit heruit breint ar amdifenur ni lluger arnau deueduit hinny.

Oderuit ir amdifenur readau testion auo gwell no rei aedeuis er haulur · ae ouot en guell yu breint ay o bot en amlach Ame*n*nu ohonau geidweit ae dystyon y eu mwynhau. Ac yna y mae iawn idaw ynteu eu dwyn hwy yny kyvyl (?) ef ac eu dangos. Sef yw rei a edewis ef y rei a enwis yn y dyd kyntaf. Ny dyly yr amdiffynnwr llyssu yr un onadunt, kany wyr na bo da idaw a dywettont. Ar hwn a lysso onadunt cyn gwybot beth a dywettont, bit savedic hwnnw. Yr amdiffynnwr a eill ovyn a oes breint yr rei hynny. Ac o byd, doent racdunt. Sef pa achaws y geill ef ovyn hynny, wrth na eill alltut vot yn wybydyat ar drevtadawc, ac na eill gwreic ar wr. Ac y gyt a hynny ny eill llawer o dynyon vot yn wybydyeit nac yn geidweit herwyd breint. Ar amdiffynnwr ny lwgyr arnaw dywedut hynny.

16. O deruyd yr amdiffynnwr ryadaw tystyon a uo gwell nor rei a edewis yr hawlwr—ae o vot yn well eu breint ae oe bot yn amlach—

(Ch. 15). 4 *some MSS. have* kỳlch, 5 the second *e* over the line; *leg.* aedewis, 6 the second *i* over the line, 7 *leg.* adeueduint, 8 *o* over the line, 9 *leg.* sauedic, 10 *i* over the line, 11 the second *a* over the line

kannal hinny. Iaun eu[1] da*n*gos aguedi da*n*gosso ef etestion nityaun[2] yr haulur eu llessu vyntheu. Ena emai iaun yr enat gouin yr haulur may breint de destion dẏ. Ac ena emay yaunt yr haulur deueduit breint y testion · ae vntoe en veirri neu en kegheoron[3] ae vnteu en veneich[4] neu en ahtraon ae vnteu en efferiet neu en escoleicion ae vinteu en lleecion breinaul Guedi daruo ir enat gouen ir haulur breint etestion iau*n* eu yr enat goui*n* yr a*m*difenur breint y testion Ac ena emay yaunt yr a*m*dife*n*nur deuedut ebreint goreu avo oy testion Ac ena emay yaunt yr enat datkanu deubrein yreduedasant eduypleit yeu testion.

Ena emay yaun yr enat gouin ir duipleit[1] a sauant huy hen erhen ededis en y dodi en eu pe*n* · llema paup or guebethit en deueduit a mynnu ohonaw gynnal hynny, iawn yw eu dangos. A gwedi dangosso ef y dystion, nyt iawn yr hawlwr eu llyssu wynteu. Yna y mae iawn yr ynat ovyn yr hawlwr: "Mae breint dy dystyon di?" Ac yna y mae iawn yr hawlwr dywedut breint y dystyon, ae wynteu yn veiri neu yn gynghelloryon, ae wynteu yn veneich neu yn athrawon, ae wynteu yn effeiryeit neu ysgoleigyon, ae wynteu yn lleygion breiniawl. Gwedy darvo yr ynat govyn yr hawlwr breint y dystyon, iawn yw yr ynat govyn yr amdiffynnur vreint y dystyon. Ac yna y mae iawn yr amdiffynnwr dywedut y breint goreu a vo oe dystyon. Ac yna y mae iawn yr ynat dadganu deu vreint y rydywedassant y dwy bleit y eu tystyon.

17. Yna y mae iawn yr ynat ovyn yr dwy bleit a savant hwy yn yr hyn yd ydys yn y dodi yn eu pen. Llyma bawb or gwybydyeit

(Ch. 16). 1 *leg.* eu eu, 2 *t* over the line, 3 *leg.* keghelloron, 4 MS. venich
Ch. 17). 1 There is a smudge between *p* and *l*

esauahant · llema popun or duipleit yn amheu guibytied y kilit nasdegant yr degin · ket as deuetoent ar eutauaut leu*er*it jaun eu yr eneit ena ev kreirhau · ac guedi askreirhauont emay yaun vddunt menet allan. Ac edrych[2] er hyn jaunaf aueloent vrth a gluassant. Ac oguelhant bot en vell testion eneill rei noe gilit · diuarnent huy eguaethaf e testion. Od*er*uit bot en kestal eutestion · diuarner er amdife*m*nur · kanys etheuis ef testion a vey guell noc aoet ka*n* ellall. Ac nis cauas. Ac ena emay jaun yr egneit barnu deuot er haulur ar etir · ar e breint edoet pan kechuinuus[3] en agkaefreithiaul yarnau

Ac guediheni emay[1] yr eneit p*ro*ui ekedueit · [2] y edric a duc pop rey onadunt huy bot en p*ri*odaur ebleit emaent enika*n*helu a deueduit o keituueit pop rey eu bot en priodaur Ac odamheuir yn dywedut y savant. Llyma bob un or dwy bleit yn amheu gwybydieit y gilyd nas dygant yr dygyn, kyt as dywettont ar eu tavawt leveryd. Iawn yw yr yneit yna eu kreirhau. A gwedy askreirhaont y mae iawn udunt vynet allan, ac edrych yr hyn iawnaf a welont wrth a glywassant. Ac o gwelant bot yn well testyon eneill rei noe gilyd, divarnent hwy y gwaethaf y dystyon. O dervyd bot yn gystal eu tystyon, divarner yr amdiffynnwr; kanys edewis ef tystyon a vei well noc a oed gan y llall, ac nys kauas. Ac yna y mae iawn yr ygneit barnu dyvot yr hawlwr ar y tir, ar y breint yd oed pan gychwynws yn aghyvreithyawl y arnaw.

18. A gwedy hynny y mae iawn yr yneit provi y keidweit, y edrych a dwng pob rei onadunt hwy bot yn briodawr y bleit y maent yn y chynhelu; a dywedut o geidweit pob rei eu bot yn

(Ch. 17). 2 *h* over *c*, 3 *h* over the line

(Ch. 18). 1 *leg.* emay iawn, 4 MS. ekeuit[due]

vntheu yaun eu eucreirhau ar nep akellio y kedueit onaduunt y vrht ellu kollet etir · o seif ekeitueit or duepleit kehedet yv · ar lle ebo kehedet deuhann*er* vit.

Ked barner ydau deuod yr tir · nikecuuin egur aoet ene mediant kynt erdau okeill kaffael · tu · atal · ydau en er un lle ac en kastal edeudir vrth na burir odena ef. Ac nideleir talu tir ambreinaul en lle tir abreint ohonau val kegkalloraith neu vaerony neu redit.

Ac ena emay yaun er egneit deuot traceukeuen y eu braudle ac ena emay yaun vdunt ke*m*rit kede*r*nit a[1] bot vrth ebraut a ka*m*rit mach areugober. Ac ena edeleant er eneit datcanu eduy kegheusaeh · a guedi hene datcanu eu uaraut[2] ac ena ebrenin adele redhau eguestelon · oeu carcar.

(Ch. 20). 1 *leg.* ar, 2 *leg.* braut

briodawr. Ac ot amheuir wynteu, iawn yw eu kreirhau. Ar neb a gilio y geidweit onadunt y wrth y llw, kollet y dir. O seif y keidweit or dwy bleit, kyhyded yw. Ar lle y bo kyhyded deuhanner vyd.

19. Kyt barner idaw dyvot yr tir, ny chychwyn y gwr a oed yn y medyant gynt yrdaw, o geill gaffael tu a thal idaw yn yr un lle ac yn gystal y deu dir, wrth na vwryir odyna ef. Ac ny dylyir talu tir ammreiniawl yn lle tir a breint ohonaw, val kynghelloraeth neu vaeroni neu rydit.

20. Ac yna y mae iawn yr yneit dyvot tracheukevyn y eu brawdle. Ac yna y mae iawn udunt kymryt kedernit ar vot wrth y vrawt, a chymryt mach ar eu gobyr. Ac yna y dylyant yr yneit dadganu y dwy gyngheusaeth, a gwedy hynny dadganu eu brawt. Ac yna y brenhin a dyly rydhau y gwystlon o eu karchar.

V. THE PRIVILEGE OF ST. TEILIO.

The following Latin Charter (Lib. Land., page 118) deals with the same subject, and illustrates the Welsh :

Priuilegium Sancti Teliaui est et ecclesiae suae Landauiae, datum sibi et omnibus successoribus suis in perpetuo a regibus istis et principibus Brittaniae, confirmatum apostolica auctoritate, cum omnibus legibus suis in se plenariis sibi et terris suis, libera ab omni regali seruitio, sine consule, sine proconsule, sine conuentu intus nec extra, sine expeditione, sine uigilanda regione. Et cum omni iustitia sua ; de fure et furto, de rapina, de homicidio, de arsione, de rixa, de sanguine, de refugio uiolato ubique in terra sancti, de assaltu uiarum et extra uias, de faciendo iudicio et patiendo, de omni populo Sancti Teliaui in curia Landauiae ; de communione aquae et herbae, campi et siluae populo ecclesiae Sancti Teliaui ; cum mercato et moneta in Landauia ; cum applicatione nauium ubique per terras Sancti Teliaui libera pro regibus et omnibus nisi ecclesiae Landauiae et episcopis eius. De opprobrio et omni iniuria quod rex Morcanhuc et sui homines fecerint episcopo Sancti Teliaui et suis hominibus, idem rex Morcanhuc et sui homines rectum faciant episcopo et suis hominibus, et iudicium patiantur in curia Landauiae. Omnis lex quae fuerit regali, omnis etiam et in curia plenarie episcopali Landauensi.

Lẏmma ẏ cẏmreith ha brẏein eccluẏs Teliau o lanntaf arodes breenhined hinn ha touẏssocion Cẏmrẏ ẏntrẏcẏguidaul dẏ eccluẏs teliau hac dir escip oll gueti ef amcẏtarnedic o audurdaut papou rumein ẏ holl cẏfreith didi hac dẏ thir · hac di dair · rẏd o pop guasanaith breennin bẏdaul · heb mair · heb cẏghellaur · heb cẏhoith · dadlma ẏmeun gulat hac nẏ dieithẏr · heb luẏd · heb gauaẏl · heb guẏlma ẏcẏfreith idi ẏnhollaul · o leitẏr o latrat · o treis · odẏnnẏorn ·

Llyma y gyvreith a breint eglwys Deilaw o Lanndaf, a rodes y brenhined hynn a thywysogyon Cymry yn dragywydawl y eglwys Deilaw ac yr escyp oll gwedy ef, amgadarnedic o awdurdawt pabeu Ruvein. Y holl gyvreith idi ac y thir ac y dayar ; ryd o bob gwasanaeth brenhin bydawl ; heb vaer, heb gynghellawr, heb gyhoed dadylva y mewn gwlat ac yn y dieithyr ; heb luyd, heb avael, heb wylva. Y chyvreith idi yn hollawl o leidyr, o ladrat, o dreis, o dynyorn,

o cẏnluẏn hac o losc · o amrẏson canguaẏt ahebguaẏt · ẏ diruẏ haẏ camcul ẏndi didi ẏn hollaul · o dorri naud ẏnn lann hac ẏndieẏthẏr lann · orachot ẏnn luhẏn hac dieithẏr luhẏn · o cẏrch ẏ popmẏnnic artir teliau haẏ guir · haẏ braut dẏ lẏtu ẏr ecluẏs ygundẏ teliau ẏnn lantaf · hac nẏ lẏs · dufẏr ha guell · hac choẏt ha maẏs ẏncẏfrẏtin dẏ lẏtu teliau · cẏfnofut habathoriaẏth ẏnn lanntaf hac aperua ardir teliau dẏr loggou adiscẏnno nẏthir ẏ pop mẏnnic ẏt uoẏ rẏd rac brennin arac paup namẏn dẏ teliau aẏ eccluẏs lantam · ha dẏ escẏp · har mefẏl har sarhaẏthar cam har ennuet a gunech[1] brennhin morcannhuc hay gur haẏ guas dẏ escop teliau hac dẏ gur hac dẏ guas · dẏuot brennhin morcannhuc ẏgundẏ teliau ẏn lanntaf · dẏ gunethur guir ha cẏfreith · ha diguadef braut diam ẏ cam a diconher dẏ escop teliau ha dẏ gur ha dẏ guas · ẏthir haẏ daẏr dẏ luẏd dẏ uuner digauaẏl · ha pop

o gynllwyn ac o losc, o amryson gan waet ac heb waet. Y dirwy ae chamgwl yndi idi yn hollawl o dorri nawd yn llann ac yn diethyr llann, o ragot yn llwyn ac diethyr llwyn, o gyrch [ ] ar dir Teilaw. Ae gwir ae brawt y deulu yr eglwys yg Gwndy Teilaw yn Llandaf ac yny llys. Dwvyr a gwellt a choet a maes yn gyffredin ẏ deulu Teilaw. Cyvnewit a bathoriaeth yn Llandaf, ac aberva ar dir Teilaw yr llongeu a discynno yny thir pa le bynnac y bo, ryd rac brenhin a rac pawb namyn y Deilaw ac eglwys Landaf ac y hescyp. Ar mevyl ar sarhaet ar cam ar enywet a wnel brenhin Morgannuc ae wr ae was y escop Teilaw ac y wr ac y was, dyvot brenhin Morgannuc y Wndy Teilaw yn Llandaf y wneuthur gwir a chyvreith a diodef brawt yam y cam a a digonher y escop Teilaw ac y wr ac y was. Y thir ae dayar di luyd divuner diavael. A pob cyvreith a vo y vrenhin Morgannuc yn

cyfreith auo dẏ brennin morcannuc ẏn lẏs· ou bot oll ẏn hollaul dẏ escop teliau nẏ lẏs yntou· haẏ bot ẏnemelldicetic hac ẏn ẏscumunetic ẏr neb aitorro hac aẏ dimanuo ẏ brẏeint hunn· hac ef haẏ plant guetẏ ef. Hẏnn bendicetic hac ef haẏ plant aẏ enrẏdedocao ẏbreint hunn hac aẏ cat(ꝺo).[2] Amen.

[y] lys, eu bot yn hollawl y escop Teilaw yn y lys ynteu. Ae vot yn emelldigedic ac yn yscumunedic y neb ae torro ac ae divanwo y breint hwnn, ac ef ae blant wedy ef. Yn vendigedic ac ef ae blant ae enrydedockao y breint hwnn ac ae katwo. Amen.

1. leg. gunel. 2. ꝺo added in later hand.

VI. MORAL VERSES.

Kalan gaeaf, kalet graꝺn,
deil ar gychꝺyn, Ilynnwynn Ilaꝺn:
y bore gynn noe vynet
gwae a ymdiret y estraꝺn.

Kalan gayaf, kein gyfrin;
kyfret awel a dryckin:
gꝺeith keluyd yꝺ kelu rin.

Kalan gayaf, cul hydot,
melyn blaen bedꝺ, gꝺedꝺ hauot:
gꝺae a haed meuyl yr bychot.

Kalan gayaf, crꝺm blaen gꝺrysc,
gnaꝺt o benn dirieit teruysc:
Ile ny bo daꝺn ny byd dysc.

Kalan gaeaf, garꝺ hin,
anhebic y gynteuin:
namwyn Duꝺ nyt oes dewin.

Kalan gaeaf, kein gyfreu
adar, byrr dyd, ban cogeu:
trugar daffar Duꝺ goreu.

Kalan gayaf, kalet cras,
purdu bran, buan o vras:
am gꝺymp hen chwerdit gꝺen gꝺas.

Kalan gaeaf, cul kerwyt,
gwae wann pan syrr; byrr vyd byt:
gŏir gŏell hegarŏch no phryt.

Kalan gayaf, llŏm godeith,
aradyr yn rych, ych yg gweith:
or kant odit kedymdeith.

VII. DOOMSDAY.

Deus Duŏ delwat,
Gŏledic, gŏaed neirthyat.
Crist Jessu gŏyliat,
Rŏysc rihyd amnat
Aduelach kaffat.
Nym gŏnel heb ranned
Moli dy trugared.
Nẏ dyfu yma,
Gŏledic, dy gynna.
Ny dyfu, nẏ dyfyd
Neb kystal a Douyd.
Ny ganet yn dyd plŏyŏ
Neb kystal a Duŏ.
Nac nyt adef
Neb kystal ac ef.
Vch nef, is nef
Nyt gŏledic namyn ef.
Vch mor, is mor
Ef an creŏys.
Pan dyffo Deŏs,
Ef an gwnaho maŏr trŏs.
Dyd braŏt yn echwrys.
Kennadeu o drŏs
Gwynt a mor a than,
Luchet a tharyan,
Eiryf ab[1] gŏengan.
Lŏyth byt yg griduan
Ergelaŏr, dygetaŏr llaŏhethan.
Ergelhaŏr mor a syr[2],

1. leg. *eiry fab?* 2. leg. *ser.*

Pan discynho Pater
Y dadyl ae nifer,
A chyrn gopetror
Ac ennynnu mor.
Llóyth byt Ꝺoscẹtaór
Hyny uóynt marwaór,
Loscaót ynyal ran
Rac y vaór varan.
Ef tynho aches
Rac y varanres.
Diffurn dyd reges
Góae ae harhoes.
Ef tardho talaór;
Terdit nef y laór.
Góynt rud dygetaór
Ech y gadóynaór.
Neu byt mor wastat
Mal pan great.
Seith Pedyr ae dywaót,
Dayar diwarnaót.
Dywaót duó Sadórn
Dayar yn vn ffórn.
Sadórn vore róyd
In gónaho ny Culóyd.
Tir bydaót tywyd,
Góynt y todo góyd.
Ebryn pop dyhed,
Pan losco mynyded.
Atuyd triganed
A chyrn rac rihed.
Kyfoethaóc ae henuyn,
Mor a tir a Ꝺyn.
Atuyd cryn dygryn

A dayar gychwyn.
Ac uch pop mehyn
A maró mein uudyn.
Eryf argelóch
Ac enẏnnu llóch.
Ton aghyolóch,
Taryan ymrythóch.
Teithẏaóc afar
Ac eryf tróy alar
Ac enynnu tróy var
Rwg nef a dayar.
Pan dyffo Trindaót
Y maes maestaót,
Lu nef ymdanaó,
Lóyth Ꝺydan attaó,
Kyrd a cherdoryon,
A chathleu egylyon.
Drychafant o vedeu;
Eirant o dechreu.
Eirant kón coet,
Ar gymeint adoet.
A rewinẏóys mor
A wnant maór gaór,
Pryt pan dyffo
Ef ae góahano.
"Y saól a uo meu,
Ymchoelant o deheu.
A digonóy kamwed,
Ymchaelent y perthgled.
Ponyt erlys dy gyfreu
A lefeir dy eneu?
Dy vynet yn du hynt yn nanheu
Yn tywyll heb leuuereu.

Ac ym oed y ereu,
Ac ym oed i ieitheu,
Ac ym oed i ganwlat
Ac eu cant ẗoneit.
Canuet gǒlat pressent
Nẏ bum heb gatwent.
Oed mynych kyfar chwerǒ
Yrof am[1] kefynderǒ.
Oed mynych kyryscǒydat
Yrof y am kywlat.
Oed mynych kyflafan
Yrof i ar truan.
Am goryǒ hǒn vyth;
Nym gǒnaei dyn byth.
Am gyrrǒys yg croc,
A wydǒn yn oc.
Am gyrrǒys ym pren
Dipynǒys vym pen.
Tafaǒ ti vyn deu troet,
Mor tru eu hadoet.
Tauaǒ dy 'r boenet,
Escyrn vyn traet.
Tauaǒ dy vyn dǒy vreich;
Ny ny dybyd eu beich.
Tauaǒ dy vyn dǒy yscǒyd;
Handit mor dyuyd.
Tauaǒ dy 'r cethron
Y myǒn vyg callon.
Tauaǒ dy gethraǒt
Yrwg vyn deu lygat.
Tauaǒ yr da aẗlat,
Coron drein ym iat.
Tauaǒ dy oestru,

1. MS. *eim.*

A wanpǒyt vyn tu.
Teu ẏǒ chitheu
Mal yr yǒch ẗaǒ deheu.
Iǒch nẏ byd madeu
Vy gwan a bereu."
"A wledic, ny wydyem
Pan oed ti a grogem.
Gǒledic nef, gǒledic pop tut,
Nẏ wydem ni, Grist, tut vyhut.
Bei ath ǒybydem,
Crist, ath athechem."
"Nyt aruoẗir gǒat
Gan lǒyth eissyfflat.
Digonsaǒchi anuat
Yn erbyn Dofydyat.
Can mil egylyon
Yssyd imi yn tyston,
A doeth ym kyrchaǒ
Gǒedy vyg crogaǒ.
Yg croc yn greulet
Myhun ym gǒaret.
Yn nefoed bu cryt,
Pan ẏm crogyssit.
Pan orelwis Keli
Dy Culǒyd vch keli.
A chenǒch deu ieuan
Ragof y deu gynran,
A deu lyfyr yn ach ẗaǒ
Yn eu darẗeaǒ.
Nys deubi ryrys
Rygossǒy rygossys.
Ac aǒch bi wynnyeith
Gǒerth aǒch ynuyt areith.

Kayator y dyleith
Arnaȣch y vffern ỻeith."
Crist Jessu uchel ry seilas trycha[n] mil blȣydyned,
Er pan yttyȣ ym buched.
Ac eil mil kyn croc
Yt lewychi Enoc.
Neu nyt atwen drut
Meint eu heissyỻut.
Gȣlat pressent yth ermut,
A chyt aȣch bei odit.
Trychan mil blȣydyned namyn vn
Oric odit buched tragywyd.

VIII. TO GWENWYNWYN.

Ysym arglȣyd gȣrd, gordiuȣng y var,
(gordȣy neb nyȣ hystȣng)
glyȣ diwreid gȣrdvleid[1] gorvlȣg,
gleȣ dywal, ny dal, ny dȣg.

Yssit ym arglȣyd aergl̈yf ner nerthuaȣr,
aerỻeȣ ỻaȣr,[2] ỻaȣch niuer,
ny oleith ỻeith yr ỻyfyrder,
ny odef cam, nyw kymer.

Yssit ym arglȣyd eurgledyfrud gaȣr,
breisc ỻafnaȣr brȣysc ỻofrud,
ny daȣl ȣrth ae maȣl maȣruud,
ny graȣn golut, nyw golud.

Yssit ym arglȣyd argledyr anaȣ beird,
am bardeir yn eidaȣ,
am karyat kadarn arnaȣ,
am kerd, am kynnelȣ ohonaȣ.

Yssit ym arglȣyd argledyr cat a tharyf,
a theruyn ar gywlat,
klotuaȣr ỻaȣr, ỻaȣ aghaeat,
koryf toryf, teruysc oe anghat.

Yssit ym wledic wlat amdiffyn ỻary,
(ỻawer dyn ae govyn)
gwalchlan wosparth warth wrthryn,
gȣalpar gȣanar Gȣenwynwyn.

[1] r *over* d [2] r *over* ȣ

IX. CYNDDELW TO RHYS AB GRUFFUDD.

(a) BLACK BOOK, page 39*b*.

Assuỏnaw naut Duv diamhev[1] ỏ daun
ae donỏauc wiffinnhev.
ar dỏ guir erir aerev.
ar dỏ gulad guledic dehev.

Assuinaf archaf eirchad ỏmgelwir.
naut kỏuir kỏgwastad.
ar dỏ drissev aer. drussad.
ar di drissaur gvaur gwenvlad.

Assuinaw archaw arch vaur ỏ *per*iw.
a p*er*is new a llaur.
naut rac dỏ uar car kertaur.
ar dỏ pirth ar di porthaur.

Assuinaf naut haut haelon deheuparth
diheuporth kertorion.
ath turuf oth tarianogion.
ath torỏf oth teern meibon.

Assuinaf ỏch naut na cheluch ỏch porth.
can p*er*thin attreguch.
gostecwir llis gosteguch.
gostec beirt bart aglỏwuch.

Assuinaf naut haut[2] haelvonet worsset.
nỏth orsseiw teernet.
ar dỏ torif corỏf kỏwrisset
ar dỏ teulu teilug met.

1. MS. diamehv. 2. MS. haut naut *with marks of transposition.*

Metcuin ev gwiraud metkirn ae gwallav.
ae gwellig in eurdirn.
a gloev ỏ ved in edirn.
a gliv deur. a glev teeirn.

Teernweilch P*ri*dein prỏdaw ỏch priwgert.
ỏch p*ri*wclod a digaw.
ỏch bart ỏch beirnad vỏtaw.
ỏch porth p*er*thin ỏv ataf.

Attep a ganaw ar canhuỏw vỏ argluit·
ergliv. wi. can dothuif.
lleissaun lliw llev gliv glevrvit.
llaessa di var di bart wif.

Viw kertaur im ruw. ruisc. morkimlaut gurt.
ruisfirt kirt kert. vahaut.
assuin asserv herv hirvlaut.
assuinaf ar wut naw. naut.

(b) RED BOOK.

Dadolɷch Rys vab Gruffud. Kyndelɷ ae cant.

Assɷynaf naɷd Duɷ (diamheu dy daɷn,
ath donyaɷc ɷyf inneu)
ar dy wyr, eryr aereu,
ar dy wlat, wledic deheu.

Assɷynaf, archaf arch vaɷr y beryf
a beris nef a llaɷr,
naɷd rac dy var, car kerdaɷr,
ar dy byrth, ar dy borthaɷr.

Assɷynaf, archaf (eirchat ym gelwir)
naɷd kywir ky*ng*wastat
ar dy drysseu, aer drɷssyat,
ar dy dryssaɷr, gɷawr gɷenwlat.

Assǒynaf aǒch naǒd, na chelǒch aǒch porth,
can perthyn attregǒch.
Gostecwyr llys, gostegǒch:
"Gostec, beird! bard a glywch."

Assǒynaf naǒd haǒd haelon deheubarth,
diheuborth kerdoryon,
ath daryf oth duranogyon,
ath doryf ath deyrnueibyon.

Assǒynaf naǒd haǒd haeloned worsaf
(nyth orseif teyrned)
ar dy doryf, koryf kywryssed,
ar dy deulu teilǒng med.

Medgwyn eu gǒyn eu gǒiraǒt, medgyrn ae gǒarchae,
ae gǒercheidǒ yn eurdyrn,
a gloeǒ yfet yn etyrn,
a glyǒ deǒr, a gleǒ deyrn.

Teyrnweilch Prydein, prydaf aǒch prifgerd,
aǒch prifglot a dygaf,
aǒch bard, aǒch beirnyat vydaf,
aǒch porth perthyn yǒ attaf.

Atteb a ganaf a ganǒyf; arglǒyd,
erglyǒ vi, kan dothǒyf.
Leissaǒn llyǒ, lleǒ glyǒ gleǒ rǒyf,
llaessa dy var, dy vard ǒyf.

Wyf kerdaǒr ym rǒyf rǒysc morgymlaǒd gǒyrd,
rǒysc ffyrd, kyrd kerd wahaǒd.
Assǒyn asserǒ herǒ hirvlaǒd,
assǒynaf ar ud naf naǒd.

X. A RELIGIOUS POEM.

BLACK BOOK.	RED BOOK.
In enu domni meu ẏ. voli. maur ẏ uolaud.	Yn enǒ Dn̄i, meu y moli; maǒr y molaǒt.
Molawe douit. maur ẏ kinnit ar ẏ cardaud.	Molaf Douyd, maǒr y gynnyd ar y cardaǒt.
Duu an amuc. Duu an goruc. Duu an guaraud.	Duǒ an hamuc, Duw an goruc, Duǒ an gǒaraǒt.
Duu an gobeith. teilug pirfeith. tec ẏ purfaud.	Duǒ an gobeith, teilǒng perffeith, tec y purffaǒt.
Duu an dẏli. Duu issi vrẏ. vrenhin trindaud.	Duǒ an dyly, Duǒ yssy bry, brenhin trindaǒt.
Duu a broued in ẏ truẏted *in*[1] ẏ trallaud.	Daǒ a prouet ynn yn drǒydet drǒy y drallaǒt.
Duu a dẏfu. oe garcharu gan vuildaud.	Duw a dyuu oe garcharu gan uvulldaǒt.
Guledic deduit an gunel in rit erbin dit braud.	Gǒledic detwyd an gǒnel ni yn ryd erbyn dyd braǒ[t].

1. drwy M.A.

An duch ir gulet
ir ẏ varet.
ae werindaud.

Ẏm paraduis.
im pur kẏnnuis
rac puis pechaud.

An gunel iechid
ir ẏ penid
ae pimp dirnaud.

Dolur eghirith.
Duu an diffirth
ban kẏmirth cnaud.

Din a collei
bei nas prinhei
diuei devaud.

Or croc crevled
ẏ deuth guared
ir vedissẏaud.

Kadarn bugeil
Crist nid adweil.
ẏ teilẏgdaud

An dǒc yr wled
yr y wared
ae werindaǒt.

Ym Paradǒys,
ym pur gynnǒys
rac pǒys pechaǒt.

An gǒnel iechyt
yr y penyt
ae pym dyrnaǒt.

Dolur eghyrth—
Duǒ an diffirth,
pan gymerth knaǒt.

Dyn a gollei
pei nas prynei—
diuei deuaǒt.

Or groc greulet
y deuth gwaret
yr vedissyawt.

Cadarn uugeil
Crist nyt adueil
y teilyngdaǒt.

XI. A DIALOGUE BETWEEN UGNACH UAB MYDNO AND TALIESSIN.

"Marchauc a girch ẏ dinas,
ae cun gwinion ae cirn bras,
nẏth adwaen, mi ryth welas."

"Marchauc a kirch ir aber
ẏ ar march cadarn kadfer,
dabre genhiw; nẏm gwatter."

"Mi nẏd aw ina in aur,
gotev gueith ẏ godriccaur:
elhid bendith new a llaur."

"Ẏ gur nim guelas beunit
ẏ[1] tebic ẏ gur deduit,
ba hid ei dẏ? a phan doit?"

"Ban deuaw o Caer Seon
o imlat ac Itewon,
it aw Caer Lev a Gwidion."

"Dabre de genhiw ir dinas,
ath uit met ara phellas,
ac eur coeth ar di wanas."

"Mi nẏd adwaen ẏ gur hẏ
a metev tan a gveli:
tec a chuec ẏ diwedi."

1. leg. *vyt.*

"Dabre genhiw im tino,
ath uit guin gorỳsgelho,
Vgnach ỳw vỳ heno mab Mỳdno."

"Vgnach, bendith ith orsset!
ath vo rad ac enrydet!
Taliessin viw inheu, talaw itti dỳ gulet."

"Taliessin, penhaw or guir,
beitad ỳg kert kỳuergir,
tric ima hid dỳv merchir."[2]

"Vgnach, mvihaw ỳ alaw,
ath vo rad ỳ gulad pennhaw:
nỳ haetaw kabil, ny thrigiaw."

2. ir *added in a later hand.*

XII. WINTER.

Llỳm awel, llum brin,
anhaut caffael clid:
llicrid rid, reuhid llin,
rỳ seiw gur ar vn conin.

Ton tra thon toid tu tir,
goruchel guaetev rac bron banev
bre: breit allan or seuir.

Oer lle lluch rac brỳthuch
gaeaw, crin caun, calaw truch,
kedic awel, coed in i bluch.

Oer guelỳ pisscaud yg kisscaud
iaen, cul hit, caun barỳwhaud,
birr diuedit, guit gvỳrhaud.

Ottid eirỳ, guin ỳ cnes,
nid a kedwir oe neges,
oer llinnev, eu llỳu heb tes.

Ottid eirỳ, guin aren,
segur ỳscuid ar iscuit hen,
rỳuaur guiṅt, reuhid dien.

Ottid eirỳ ar warthaw rev[1],
goscupid guint[2] blaen guit tev,
kadir ỳscuid ar ỳscuit glev.

1. In MS. res has been altered later to reo.
2. MS. gint

Ottid eirẏ, tohid istrad,
diurẏssint vy keduir y cad,
mi nid aw, anaw nim gad.

Ottid eirẏ o dv riv,
karcharaur goruit, cul biv,
nid annuẏd hawdit hetiv.

Ottid eirẏ, guin goror
mẏnit, llum guit llog ar mor:
meccid llvwẏr llauer kẏghor.

Glossary

GLOSSARY

The paragraphs refer to the Grammar. voc. = causing vocalic mutation (lenation). nas. = causing nasal mutation. spir. = causing spirant mutation. coll. = collective. n.l. = nomen loci. chw follows c, ð follows d, ng follows g in the order of the alphabet.

1. **a** (voc.) rel. part. § 82 ff. With pers. pron. (§ 48 ff.) sg. 1 **am**, sg. 2 **ath** (voc.), sg. and pl. 3 **ae, ay, as**, pl. 1 **an**, pl. 2 **ach**.

2. **a** (voc.) interr. part. § 239. With pres. of copula **ae**. **ae . . ae** *whether . . or*.

3. **a** (voc.) interj. § 243.

4. **a** (spir.) prep. *with*, see 1. **ac**.

5. **a** (spir.) conj. *and*, see 2. **ac**.

6. **a** (voc.) prep., see 1. **o**.

6. **a-** used to infix pronoun. §94. With pers. pron. sg. 1 **am**, sg. 2 **ath**, sg. and pl. 3 **as**.

abad m. *an abbot;* pl. **-eu**.

aballu *to perish*. 158, 15.

aber *a river-mouth, estuary*.

aber-fa f. *harbour, harbourage*.

aberth *sacrifice*. 150, 17.

abid f. *a habit, monastic dress*.

abreiδ *scarcely, hardly*. 159, 10. 197, 20. 200, 17.

1. **ac, a** (spir.) prep. *with*, §162. With art. **ar**; with poss. adj. sg. 1 **am**, sg. 2 **ath** (voc.), sg. 3 m. **ae** (voc.) f. **ae** (spir.), pl. 1 **an**, pl. 2 **ach**, pl. 3 **ae**.

2. **ac, a** (spir.) conj. *and, as*. § 198. With art. **ar**; with poss. adj. sg. 1 **am**, sg. 2 **ath** (voc.) etc. **ac . . ac** *both . . and*.

1. **ach** (**awch, ych**) *your*. §§ 57, 58.

2. **ach** *lineage, descent*; pl. **-oeδ**.

3. **ach**, see 1. **a**, 1. **ac**, 2. **ac**.

achaws m. *cause, reason*. **pa a.** *why?* 218, 16. **o a.** *because* § 199. Cf. **achwysson**.

achenoctid, see **anghenoctid**.

aches (from Lat. accessus) *flood-tide*. 228, 9. See CZ. V, p. 566.

achlan *entire, all*. 202, 22. 23.

achub *to occupy, seize, precipitate oneself, snatch*. 151, 5. 180, 19. 199, 12. 201, 20 (see **cyfarth**). 207, 17.

achubeid *to seize*. 152, 8.

achwanecäu *to augment, increase*.

achwaneg *more*.

achwanegu *to increase*.

achwysson (pl.) *causes*. 161, 15.

achyfyeith, see **anghyfyeith**.

adan f. *a wing*; pl. **-eδ**. 203, 19.

adar (coll.) *birds*; sg. **ederyn**.

adaw *to leave, allow*. pres. ind. pass. **edir**. 152, 4. 158, 8. 193, 10.

adeilad *to build, a building*; pl. **-eu**. 139, 3.

ad-feilaw *to decay, decline*. 238, 20.

ad-fod *to exist, be*. fut. ind. sg. 3 **adfyδ** 228, 29. 33.

ad-libin *a wretched remnant*. 153, 28.

ad-na-bod *to recognise, know*. §144. pres. ind. act. sg. 1 **adwaen**.

ad-newyδu *to renew*. 155, 4.

adolwyn *to beseech*. 142, 31. pret. pl. 3. **adologyssant**. 149, 10.

adref *homeward*. 196, 9. **atref** 198, 29.

adwaen, see **adnabod**.

adwy *a gap, opening*; pl. **-eu**. 175, 17.

aδas *fit, meet, suitable*.

aδassu *to fit, adjust*. 150, 26.

aδaw *to promise*. 170, 13. 177, 7. 218, 27. pres. ind. sg. 3 **eδew** 239, 20.

aδef *to acknowledge, admit, allow*. 227, 14.

aδfelach? 227, 5.

aδ-fwyn-der m. *gentleness, nobility, honour*. 181, 24.

aδ-oed m. *appointed time; destiny, fate*. 229, 21. 230, 20.

aδurn *adornment*. 163, 29.

aδurnaw *to adorn, decorate*. 155, 5.

1. **ae**, see 1. **a**. 2. **ae**, see 2. **a**.

3. **ae**, see 1. **ac**. 4. **ae**, see 2. **ac**.

aed, see **myned**.

Aeδ (Ir. Āed) n. pr. m. 201, 14.

aeδfed *ripe, mature*. 165, 20.

aer *slaughter*; pl. **-eu**.

Aer n. pr. m. 195, 26.

aer-fa f. *slaughter*; pl. **-eu**.

aer-glwyf *dealing wounds in battle.* 233, 5.
aer-llew m. *lion of battle.* 233, 6.
aeth, see myned.
aeth-lym *keen and sharp.* Aeth-lem f. *the name of a sow.* 207, 8.
af, see myned.
Afallach n.l. *Avallon.*
afar m. *grief.* 229, 8.
af-lonyδu *to incommode.* 209, 23.
aflonyδwch *disturbance.* 148, 6.
afon f. *a river;* pl. -oeδ.
afory *to-morrow.* 203, 28.
Affric *Africa.*
affwys m. *an abyss, deep, bottom.* 197, 29. 206, 32. 207, 2.
agalen f. *a whetstone.* 194, 14.
agori *to open;* part. agoredig.
agos *near;* comp. nes; sup. nessaf.
angel *an angel;* pl. engylyon.
angerδ m. *vehemence, force.* 151, 17. 184, 24. 186, 4.
angeu, see angheu.
anghad f. *hand.* 233, 20.
anghaead *unclosed, open, liberal.* 233, 19.
anghen (agen) m. *need, necessity;* a. yn a. *by sheer necessity* 206, 14; cf. Hg. II. 197, 25.
anghenoctid (achenoctid) *want, indigence.* 142, 20. 146, 3.
angheu (agheu, ageu) f. *death.* 150, 15.
angheuawl *deadly; mortally wounded.* 159, 8. 18. 183, 26.
anghlywedig *unheard of, unusual.*
anghreifft (agreifft, agriff) *example.* 165, 12.
anghyf-nerth *helplessness, impotence.* 143, 6.
anghyf-reith *injustice, wrong.*
anghyfreithiawl *unjust, wrongful.*
anghyfrwys *untrained, unskilled.*
anghyf-yeith *alien in speech, foreign.* 191, 19. pl. -yδyon. 153, 17.
anghyolwch? 229, 6.
aho, see myned.
alaf *wealth;* pl. -oeδ. 164, 9.
Alban *Scotland.* yr A. 141, 7.
allan *out, outwards, outside.* o hynny a. *thenceforth.*
allt *a cliff.* A. Clwyd (wrongly, instead of Clud) *Dumbarton.*
all-tud *a foreigner, alien; exile.*
am (voc.) prep. *about, on account of.* § 164. am hynny *therefore.*
am-blygu *to embrace.* 148, 12 v. l.
amcawδ *said (he).* amkeuδant *said they.* § 133 (*b*).
am-δiffyn *to defend, protect; defence.*
amδiffynwr m. *a defendant in a lawsuit.*
am-gadarnedig *confirmed, ratified.*
amgen *different.* nyd a. *namely.*
amherawdyr m. *an emperor;* pl. amherodron.
amherodraeth f. *empire, dominion.*
amheu *to doubt, dispute, call in question.*
amlach, amlaf, see amyl.
amlwg *clear, manifest.*
ammreiniawl (ambreinawl) *without privilege.* 221, 16.
amnad? 227, 4.
amod m. *a covenant, compact.* 149, 17. 150, 20. 158, 24. 159, 10.
amryfael *various, different;* pl. -on.
amryson *a quarrel.* 223, 2.
am-ryw *various, divers.*
am-sathyr *a treading, moving of feet.* 193, 15.
amser m. *time;* pl. -oeδ.
amug, see amwyn.
amws m. *a stallion;* pl. emys.
am-wyn *to protect.* § 133 (*b*). pret. ind. act. sg. 3 amug.
Amwythig *Shrewsbury.* 161, 31.
amyl *frequent; numerous;* comp. amlach; sup. amlaf.
amylder *plenty, abundance, multitude.* 145, 23.
amylhäu *to increase, augment.*
1. an (yn) *our.* § 57.
2. an, see 1. a.
3. an, see 1. and 2. ac.
anadyl *breath.*
anaf m. *a blemish, wound.* 242, 3.
anaw *poetry, muse.* 233, 13.
anawδ, see an-hawδ.
an-dylyedus *illegal, wrong.* 167, 26.
an-eiryf *innumerable, countless; a countless number.* 184, 27.
an-fad *evil, crime.* 231, 14.
an-feidrawl *immense.*
anfon *to send, dispatch.* pres. ind. sg. 3 enfyn 228, 31.
Angiw *Anjou.*
an-hawδ *not easy, difficult.* 241, 2.
anhebig (y) *unlike, dissimilar (to).* 225, 15.
anheilwng *unworthy.*
anher, see hanher.
anifeil m. *an animal, beast;* pl. -eid.

annerch *to greet, address;* pl. -eu *greetings.* 143, 8.
annobeithaw (o) *to despair (of).*
annod *delay.* 171, 27.
annoeth (anoeth) *a precious thing;* pl. -eu. 165, 13. 187, 13. Cf. Arch. I, p. 453.
annog *to urge, encourage, recommend.*
annwyd *nature, temper.* 242, 6.
anolo *void, worthless, nugatory.*
an-osteg f. *disturbance, disorder.*
anreg f. *a dish of meat;* pl. -yon. 163, 31 *(fercula).*
anreithaw *to plunder, ravage.*
anreithwr m. *a plunderer.*
anryδeδ, see enryδeδ.
ansawδ f. *condition, nature, quality, state, station.* 160, 10. 180, 6.
ansoδedig *established, founded.*
ant, see myned.
an-udonawl *perjured, treacherous, wicked.* 149, 31 v. l.
an-uundeb (-dab) *discord, disunion, conflict.* 167, 30.
an-waethach *no less.* 145, 20 v. l.
anwyl *a friend;* pl. -yd. 160, 26.
anyanawl *natural, native, innate.*
1. ar (voc.) prep. *on, over, for, before.* § 165. *within* 146, 25. ar hynt *thereupon. About to, on the point of.* ar gychwyn 225, 2.
2. ar, see 1. and 2. ac.
3. ar = a (rel. part.) + ry, see § 95 note.
4. ar, see 1. o.
aradyr *a plough.*
araf *slow, gentle, mild.* 155, 27.
arall *another, other;* pl. ereill. § 68. ereill . . ereill *some . . others.*
arbed *to spare, save.* 153, 23.
ar-benhig *chief, principal.*
arch f. *a request.* 153, 34. 234, 9.
arch-esgob m. *an archbishop;* pl. archesgyb.
archesgobaeth *an archbishopric;* pl. -eu.
archesgobawd f. *an archbishopric.*
archesgob-dy m. *an archbishop's palace.*
archyssant, see erchi.
ar-dymheru *to temper, warm.* 143, 13.
ar-δelw *a voucher.* 215, 30.
ar-δerchawg *exalted, noble, illustrious.*
ar-δerchocäu *to exalt, honour.*
ar-δyrchafel *to raise, exalt;* part. ar-δyrchafedig.
areith f. *a speech.* 231, 33.
aren (arien) *hoarfrost.* 241, 17.
arf m. *a weapon;* pl. -eu.
arfawg *armed.*
ar-fer *to be wont, be accustomed; use, wont.*
arferu (o) *to use, employ, enjoy, be accustomed.*
arfoll *to entertain, receive.* 148, 10; 231, 12.
ar-gelwch *concealment, seclusion.* 229, 4.
ar-gledyr m. *a protector.*
arglwyδ m. *a lord;* pl. -i.
arglwyδes f. *a lady, mistress.*
arglwyδiaeth f. *lordship.*
ar-gyfreu *a marriage portion.* 140, 12. 24.
ar-gyweδu (y) *to injure, hurt.*
arnaf etc., see ar § 53.
aros *to await, expect, wait.* past subj. sg. 3 arhoei; pret. sg. 3 arhoes.
arth m. *a bear.* 172, 27.
aruthreδ *terror, fear.* 172, 28.
aruthyr *terrible, fearful.* 172, 29.
ar-weδu *to bear, wield.* 159, 3.
arwein *to carry, bear.* 163, 3. 10.
arwyδ f. *a token, mark; a battle-standard; signal;* pl. -on. 150, 26. 158, 32. 180, 4. 183, 8. 194, 22.
arwyδocäu *to signify, imply.*
aryant *silver.*
as (es), see 1. and 6. a.
asgell *a wing;* pl. esgyll.
asgell-wrych m. *spray.* 154, 18.
asgrifenu, see ysgrifenu.
asgwrn *a bone;* pl. esgyrn.
asserw *bright, brilliant.* 235, 15.
assw (asseu) *left.*
asswyn *an invocation.* 235, 15.
asswynaf *I invoke, entreat.*
at (voc.) prep. *to.* §§ 53, 166.
attal *to restrain, withhold, hinder.*
atteb (at-heb) m. *to answer; an answer, defence;* pl. -yon. 167, 19. 169, 1.
attregwch *a stopping, delay.* 234, 18. 236, 2.
1. ath, see 1. and 6. a.
2. ath, see 1. and 2. ac.
athechem? 231, 11.
athoeδ, see myned.
athraw *a teacher;* pl. -on. 145, 3. 161, 11. 219, 13.
awdurdawd m. *authority.* 222, 7.
awch, see ach.

awel m. *a breeze, wind.* 241, 1.
awn, see **myned.**
awr f. *hour.* **yn a.** *now.* 239, 7. **yr a. hon** *now.* 142, 15.
awssen *absence.* 177, 6.
awst *August.* 166, 16.
1. ay, see **1. a.**
2. ay, see 1. and **2. ac.**

ba, see **pa.**
bach *a bend, angle.* 198, 8.
baeδ m. *a boar.* **b. coed** *a wild boar.* 184, 12; pl. **beiδ.** 201, 16.
Baδon n. l. *Bath.* 179, 31.
bagyl f. *a crook, crutch.* **Cwrr y Fagyl** n. l. 204, 4.
1. ban *loud.* 227, 18.
2. ban, see **pan.**
bann *a height*; pl. **baneu** 241, 6. **b. y gaer** *battlement*; 196, 1.
banw *a pigling.* porchell . . hyt tra uo en denu . . ac o henne eny el e moch yr coet banu vyt BCh. 92, 28.
bar m. *wrath, anger.* 229, 10. 233, 1.
baraf, see **baryf.**
baran *wrath, fury.* 280, 8.
baran-res *rank of soldiers, host.* 228, 10.
Barberfloi n. l. *Barfleur.*
barδ m. *a poet, bard*; pl. **beirδ.**
barδ-eir *song, panegyric.* 235, 14.
barfawg *bearded.* 199, 31.
barn *judgment.* 188, 6 v. l.
barnu *to judge, decide, fix, pass judgment, deem.* past. part. **barnedig.**
barwn m. *a baron*; pl. **-eid, -yeid.**
baryf (baraf) *a beard.*
baryfhäu *to grow a beard.* 241, 12. Cf. baryf-lwyt rew FB. 244. 9.
bathoriaeth f. *mintage, mint.* 223, 14.
bedissyawd f. *the universe.* 238, 18.
bedw f. (coll.) *birch-trees.* 225, 9.
Bedwyr n. pr. m.
beδ m. *a grave;* pl. **-eu.**
1. bei, bey, see **bod.**
2. bei *a fault.*
beich *a burden, load.* 230, 24.
beiδad m. *a challenger.* 240, 9.
beirnad (beirnyad) m. *a judge.* 235, 7. 236, 19.
bendigedig *blessed.*
bendyth (bendith) f. *a blessing.*
bennwig f. *a young sow.* 205, 19.
ber *a spike, lance*; pl. **-eu.** 231, 5.
beth, see **peth.**
beunyδyawl *daily.* 190, 9.
biw f. *cattle.* 242, 5; *a standard of value.* **teirbuw** 211, 5.
blaen m. *point, top, end, front.* **or b.** *in front,* **oe f.** *before him,* **ym b. pawb** *before any one else,* **yn ol ac ym b.** *behind and before.*
blaen-weδ *highest state, summit.* 169, 21. RB. II. 41, 33.
blawδ *tumult, commotion.* 235, 15.
bleiδ-ast f. *a she-wolf.*
blin *weary, wearisome.*
blinaw *to weary, molest, harass.*
blinder *weariness.*
blodeuaw *to flourish, prosper.* 186, 1.
blwch ? 241, 10.
blwyδyn f. *a year*; pl. **-eδ.**
blynghäu *to become angry, to frown.* 140, 7. 172, 23.
blyneδ f. *years* (after numerals).
bo, see **bod.**
bocsach f. *a boasting, vaunting.* 174, 13.
boch, see **bod.**
bod *to be, state of being* (verb subst. and copula) § 152 ff.
boδ *goodwill, pleasure.* **oc eu b.** *of their own free will.* 156, 6. 12.
boδi *to drown.*
bogel f. *the navel.* 174, 25.
Bolwyn n. l. *Boulogne.* 184, 31.
bon *stem, root, stump;* pl. **-eu.**
boneδ *lineage, noble birth.* 162, 1.
bonheδig *hereditary, innate* 180, 15; *noble;* pl. **-yon**; superl. **bonheδickaf.**
bore m. *morning.* **y b.** *in the morning.* 225, 3.
brad m. and f. *treachery, plot.*
bradwr m. *a traitor;* pl. **bradwyr.**
bran m. and f. *a raven;* pl. **brain.**
bras *stout, fat.* 241, 2. 227. 20. Cf. Gnawd buan o vain, gnawd buan o vras MA. 845[b] 15.
brath m. *a stab, wound.* 188, 21.
brathu *to wound, stab, spur.* impf. ind. act. pl. 3 **brethynt**; impf. ind. pass. **brethid**; part. **brathedig.**
1. brawd f. *judgment, day of judgment.* 185, 16.
2. brawd m. *a brother*; pl. **brodyr, broder.**
brawd-le m. *a judgment seat.*
bre *hill, promontory;* 243, 7. **Redyn-fre** n. l.
breich m. and f. *an arm.* 230, 23.
breiδ *hardly, scarcely.* 241, 7.
breiδwyd f. *a dream, vision.* 173, 6; v. l. ib. 14.

breiniawl *privileged.* 219, 14.
breint (bryein, brein) m. *privilege, prerogative; state, condition.* 220, 22.
breisg *stout.* 233, 10.
brenhin, (breenhin, brennhin, brennin) *a king*; pl. **-eδ.**
brenhinawl *kingly, royal.*
brenhines f. *a queen.*
brenhin-wisg *royal robe*; pl. **-oeδ.**
brenhinyaeth f. *kingdom.*
brethid, brethynt, see **brathu.**
breu *brittle.* 200, 1.
breuan f. *a handmill, quern.* 206, 31.
briwaw *to break in pieces, shatter, destroy.* past part. **briwedig.** 147, 3.
broder, brodyr, see **brawd.**
bron (bronn) *breast*; pl. **bronnoeδ**; **dwy-fron** *breasts.* **rac b.** *before, in front of;* **ger b.** *before;* **ym b. y dyδ** *towards day;* cf. ymron y gorffen Hg. II, 248, 17; dynyon ymron agheu, ib. 201, 34.
brwysg *strong, impetuous, swift.* 233, 10.
bry adv. *above.* 237, 15.
bryd *mind, thought;* **o un f.** *with one accord.* 175, 10.
bryn (brin) m. *a hill, mount.*
brys m. *haste;* **ar f.** *in haste.*
bryssyaw *to hasten.*
Brytaen f. *Britain.* **B. Fechan** *Brittany.* **Brytanyeid** *Britons.*
brythwch *tumult, storm* 229, 7; 241, 8. brythwch gaeaf MA. 189a[46].
bu, see **bod.**
bual *a drinking-horn.*
buan *swift, rapid.* 151, 21. 225, 21.
buaned *swiftness, fleetness.* 158, 29.
bucheδ f. *life, salvation.* 150, 15.
bucheδu *to live.* 165, 9.
buδugawl *victorious, gifted.* 164, 28.
buδugolyaeth f. *victory, triumph*; pl. **-eu.** 144, 5.
buδyn ? 229, 3.
bugeil m. *a shepherd.* 238, 19.
bwlch *a gap*; pl. **bylcheu** *embrazures.* 164, 22.
Bwlwyn n. l. *Boulogne.* 162, 14.
bwrδ m. *a table*: pl. **byrδeu.**
Bwrgwyn n. l. *Burgundy.*
bwrw *to throw, cast, strike, hit, overthrow.* impf. ind. act. sg. 3 **byryei**; pret. ind. sg. 3 **byryawδ.**
bwyell-ig *a small hatchet.* 201, 21.
bwyd m. *meat, food.*
bwyta *to eat, act of eating.*
bwyttal *victuals.* 203, 2.
bychan *small.*
bychod *a trifle.* 227, 10.
1. byd m. *world.* **gwyn y** f. *happy he!* 170, 18. **goreu yn y b.** *best of all*; **gwas yn y b.** *any youth.*
2. byd, see **bod.**
bydawl *earthly.* 222, 11.
byδin f. *a troop, division of an army*; pl. **-oeδ.**
byδinaw *to array in troops, to draw up in battle array.*
byhud ? 233, 9.
bylchau, see **bwlch.**
byrr (birr) *short, brief.*
byryei, see **bwrw.**
byth (fyth) *ever.*
byw (1) *alive;* (2) *life.*
bywyd *life.* 193, 9 v. l.

cabil *reproof.* 240, 13.
cad f. (1) *battle,* **roδi c. ar faes** *to give battle;* (2) *a battalion.*
cadarn *strong, firm, powerful.*
cadarnhäu *to strengthen, fortify, confirm, ratify, affirm.*
cadeir f. *a chair, seat.*
Cadell n. pr. m.
cad-ffer *strong in battle.* 241, 5.
cad-lys f. *a fortified court.* 195, 5.
cadw *to keep, preserve, maintain.*
Cad-wallawn n. pr. m.
cadwent f. *battle, fight, contest.* 198, 20; 230, 6.
cad-wr m. *a warrior*; pl. **cedwyr.** 241, 15. 242, 2.—n. pr. m.
cadwyn *a chain*; pl. **-awr.** 228, 16.
cadyr *strong, firm.* 241, 22.
cae m. *an enclosure, fence.* 149, 6.
cael, see **caffel.**
caer f. *a citadel, fortress, city.* pl. **ceyryδ** 156, 31. 193, 2. **C. Alclud** (Ir. Ail Clūaide) *Dumbarton,* **C. Efrawg** *York,* **C. Faδon** *Bath,* **C. Fuδei** *Silchester,* **C. Geint** *Canterbury,* **C. Idor** *Dorchester,* **C. Lew** *Dinas Dinlle*[1], **C. Loyw** *Gloucester,* **C. Lyr** *Leicester,* **C. Lleon** *Chester,* **C. Llion ar Wysc** *Caerleon,* **C. Lwydcoed** *Lincoln*[2], **C. Seon** *Segontium,*[3] **C.**

[1] See Rhys, *Celtic Heathendom*, p. 406.
[2] According to Holder, *Altkeltischer Sprachschatz* II, col. 192, *Lētocētum* is the old British name for Lichfield in Staffordshire.
[3] On p. 239, l. 13 *Caer Seon* is confused with *C. Sion* 'Zion'; hence the mention of Jews in l. 14. Cf. Rhys, l.c., p. 272.

Weir *Warwick*, **C. Wynt** *Winchester*, **C. Wyrangon** *Worcester*.

caeth *captive*; pl. **ceith**.

caeu *to shut, close*. fut. ind. pass. **cayator**. 232, 1.

Cafall *the name of one of Arthur's hounds*. Cabal, Nennius ed. Mommsen, p. 217.

caffel (**caffael**, **cael**) *to get, seize, obtain, succeed* 184, 15. pres. ind. sg. 2 **ceffy**, pl. 2 **ceffwch**, pret. pass. **caffad** (**cahat**), etc. § 145.

calaf (coll.) *stalks, reeds*; 241, 9.

calan m. *Calends*; **c. Awst** *first of August*; **c. gaeaf** *All Saints' Day*; **c. Mei** *May-day*.

calaneδ *corpses*, pl. of **celein**. 188, 12.

caled *hard, severe*; pl. **-yon**.

Caled-fwlch (Ir. calad-bolg) m. *hard in making notches, the name of Arthur's sword*.

calon (**callon**) *heart*; pl. **-eu**, **-oeδ**.

cam *crooked, wrong*; *wrong, injustice*; **gan g.** *wrongfully, unjustly*.

camgwl *a fine, penalty*. 225, 3. v. l. for **camlwrw** Leg. Wall. 40b2.

camlwrw *a fine, penalty for the lesser offences*.

cam-ryfygu *to act arrogantly*. 166, 10. Cp. Hg. I. 219, 28.

cam-weδ *sin, iniquity*. 229, 28.

1. **can** (**gan**) (voc.) prep. *with, by*. § 167. With pron. end. § 53. gellwng y eneit gan yr wybyr *spiritum in auras emisit* 159, 25; yr yscymunedickaf vradwr gan Vedrawt *that most accursed traitor of a Medrawd* 189, 15.

2. **can** (**gan**) conj. *since*. § 202.

3. **can**, see 1. **cant**.

canal, see **cynhal**.

canfed *hundredth, a hundredth part*. 230, 5.

can-fod *to perceive*. § 160.

canhorthwy *help, aid*. 178, 8. 10.

canhorthwyaw *to help*. 176, 8.

canhwyf, see **canu**.

canhym-deith *to accompany, keep up with*. 208, 28.

cani, see **cany**.

can-lyn *to follow*.

can-llaw m. *a supporter*. 212, 11; 213, 21; 214, 10.

can-mawl *to praise, commend*.

canonwr m. *a canon*; pl. **-wyr**.

cans, see **canys**.

1. **cant** (**can**) (nas.) m. *a hundred*.

2. **cant**, see **canu**.

canu *to sing, celebrate in song, recite, play*; pres. subj. act. sg. 1 **canwyf**; impf. ind. pl. 3 **cenynt**; pret. ind. sg. 3 **cant**.

can-wlad *a hundred countries*. 232, 3.

can-wr *a hundred men* 151, 25. 172, 15.

cany (**cani**), before vowels **canyd**, conj. *since not*. § 202.

canyad *permission, consent*. 217, 13.

canys (**cans**) i.e., **can** with the present of the copula, *for, since*. § 202.

caplan m. *a chaplain*. 155, 3.

car *a friend, relative*; pl. **-ant**.

Caranwys *Carnotensis*. 179, 21.

carchar m. *a prison, gaol*.

carcharawr m. *a prisoner*; pl. **carcharoryon**.

carcharu *to imprison*. 242, 5.

cardawd *charity, alms*. 237, 7.

carn *a cairn*.

carreg *a rock*; pl. **cerrig**.

carn-wyn *having a white hilt*. Hence **carnwennan** f., the name of Arthur's knife. 207, 31.

caru *to love*. impf. ind. act. pl. 3 **cerynt**; past part. **caredig**.

carw *a stag*. 196, 29.

caryad m. *love, affection*. 233, 15.

caryant 140, 4, either miswritten for **caryat** or formed like **mol-yant**, **meδ-yant**, &c.

cassäu *to hate*.

casseg f. *a mare*.

castell m. *a castle, fortress*; pl. **cestyll**.

cathyl f. *a song, lay, poem*; pl. **cathleu**. 229, 17.

Catyneis n. l. *Caithness*. 145, 11.

Caw n. pr. m. 201, 19.

cawn m. (coll.) *reed grass, stalks, coarse grass*; 241, 9; 12; sg. **conin**.

cawr m. *a giant, mighty man*; pl. **cewri**.

cawssei, see **caffel**.

cayator, see **caeu**.

cedernid *strength, force, security, violence*.

cedig *battlesome, boisterous*. 241, 10.

cedwyr, see **cadwr**.

cedymdeith, see **cydymdeith**.

cefeis, see **caffel**.

cefyn (**keuen**) *back*; pl. **cefneu**; **dangos eu cefneu** *to flee, take to flight*. **drachefyn** *behind, back, again*; **traegefyn** *behind him*; **dyfod t.** *to return* 213, 8; **trach-eu-cefyn** 221, 21; **drae-cefyn wynteu** *behind them*. 179, 26.

cefynderw *a cousin*. plant yr henvam a uyd kenyn-dyru BCh. 75, 28.

cegin f. *a kitchen*.

Cei n. pr. m. *Caius*.

ceidwad m. *a witness*; pl. **keidweid**.

ceing f. *a branch*. 165, 21. 197, 3.

cein *beautiful, fair, delightful*.

Ceint (**Cent**) *Kent*. 189, 19.

ceissaw *to seek, fetch, endeavour*.

ceirch *oats*. 196, 4.

ceith, see **caeth**.

celfyδ *skilful, ingenious*; *an artist*.

celfyδyd f. *an art*; pl. **celfyδodeu**.

celi *the heavens*. 231, 25. **Celi** *God*. 231, 24.

celu *to hide, conceal*.

celwrn m. *a piece?* 207, 32.

celwyδawg *lying, false*. 190, 10.

Celyδon: llwyn C. 148, 25 = coit Celidon, Nennius, p. 199.

Celli-wig f. *the name of Arthur's court in Cornwall*, now *Callington*.

cenedlaeth f. *a race, kind*.

cenedyl f. *a race, kind*; pl. **cenedloeδ**.

ceneu m. *a whelp*. 198, 32. 199, 4. 32. **Ceneu** n. pr. m. 162, 3.

cennad m. and f. *a messenger, emissary, embassy*; pl. **-eu**.

cennadwri f. *a message, tidings*.

cenfeint *a convent*; pl. **cenveinoeδ**.

cenwch, see 1. **can**.

cerδ *craft, art, song*; pl. **cyrδ**.

cerδawr m. *a craftsman, minstrel, bard*; pl. **cerδoryon**.

cerδed *to walk, travel, journey, go*.

cerδedyad *a course, motion*. 161, 11.

Ceredigyawn *Cardigan*. 205, 28.

cerenhyδ *relationship*. 168, 20.

Cernyw *Cornwall*.

cerwyd *a stag*. 226, 1.

cerwyn f. *a caldron*. **Cwm C.**, n. l. 204, 15.

cesseil *the armpit*. 194, 14.

cethr *a spike*; pl. **-awd**. 230, 29.

cethron *a spike*. 230, 27.

cewilyδ *shame*. 141, 8. 142, 31.

cewssynt, see **caffel**.

ci m. *a hound*; coll. 205, 9; pl. **cwn**.

cicwr *a footsoldier*; coll. *infantry*. 202, 29.

cig m. *flesh*.

ciglef, see **clybod**.

cil *a recess, nook*.

Cil-gwri n. l.

cilyaw *to retreat, desert, fail*.

cilyδ *a mate, fellow*. § 72.

ciwdawdwr m. *a citizen, inhabitant*.

claδu *to bury*.

claf *sick*. 143, 13. 149, 28.

cleδyf m. *a sword*; pl. **-eu**, per metathesim **clefyδeu**.

clefyd m. *sickness, disease*. 161, 27.

clefyδeu, see **cleδyf**.

cleigaw *to plunge, immerse*. 206, 21.

cleis *a stripe*. 194, 14. Cf. **maen cleis**, *marble*. Lhwyd.—**Porth Cleis** n. l. 204, 1.

clid *a shelter*. 241, 2.

clod m. and f. *fame, renown*.

clod-fawr *famous, celebrated*.

clodfori *to make illustrious, render famous*. 165, 15.

cloff *lame*.

clomen (**colomen**) f. *a dove*. 163, 10.

clust m. *an ear*. 201, 29. 203, 26.

clwm *a tune*; pl. **clymeu** *moduli* 147, 14.

Clwyd *a river-name*. 204, 17.

clybod *to hear*. impf. ind. act. sg. 3. **clywei**; impf. pass. **clywid**; pret. ind. sg. 1 **ciglef**; sg. 3 **cigleu**. § 133 b. **clybod ar** *to hear of*.

clymeu, see **clwm**.

cnawd *flesh*. 238, 12.

cnes *skin*. 241, 14.

cneuen *a nut*. 196, 23.

cnithiaw *to pluck*. 200, 9.

coch *red*.

cochi *to redden, become red*. 173, 16.

coδyant m. *provocation, offence*. 166, 4.

coed (**coyt**) m. (coll.) *a wood, trees*; **baeδ c.** *a wild boar*. pl. **coydyδ**.

coeth *pure, fine*. **eur c.** *refined gold*.

cof *memory, recollection*.

coffäu *to remember, to call to mind*.

cog *a cuckoo*; pl. **-eu**.

congyl f. *a corner, angle*. 204, 9.

colled m. *loss*; pl. **-eu** 175, 31.

collen *hazel*. **c. derwen** *an oak sapling*. 197, 2.

colli *to lose, be lost*. 238, 13.

conin, see **cawn**.

corff *a body, corpse*.

corn *a horn, trumpet*; *a drinking horn.* pl. **cyrn, cirn.**
coron f. *a crown.*
coryf *pommel, saddle-bow*; metaph. *stay, support.* 233, 20; 234, 23. Arch. I, p. 487.
cosb *punishment, fine.* 217, 18.
craff *firm, steadfast.* 140, 5.
cras *hard, dry.* 225, 20.
crawn, see **croni.**
credu *to believe.* pres. subj. pl. 2 **crettoch.**
crefyδus *devout; a religious person.* pl. **-son.** 155, 5.
crefyδwr m. *a religious person.* 144, 13 (miswritten for **crefftwyr** = *operarii* Geoffrey II, 14).
Creiδylad n. pr. f.
creir m. *a relic*; pl. **-eu.** 153, 26.
creirhäu *to cause to swear by relics.* 221, 2.
crettoch, see **credu.**
crëu *to create.* 227, 19. 228, 18.
creu *gore, blood.*
creu-lawn *blood-thirsty, cruel*; compar. **creulonach.**
creulon-der *cruelty, tyranny, oppression.*
creu-lyd *blood-stained, gory*; f. **creuled.** 231, 20. 238, 16.
crib f. *a comb.* 203, 25.
crin *withered, brittle.* 241, 9.
Crist Christ.
cristawn *a Christian;* pl. **cristonogyon.**
cristonogawl *Christian.*
crog f. *a cross.*
crogaw, crogi *to crucify, hang.*
croni *to hoard, amass, accumulate.* pres. ind. act. sg. 3 **crawn** 233, 12.
crwm *bent.* 225, 11.
crychyad *a shake* (in music); pl. **-eu.** 147, 14 v.l.
cryd *a trembling, tremor.* 231, 22.
cryfang *a talon*; pl. **-heu** 197, 28.
cryn *a trembling, quaking.* 228, 33.
cryno *suitable.* 156, 32. compar. **-ach.** 169, 2.
crynu *to tremble, quake.* 184, 22. past part. **crynedig** 152, 16.
cuan *an owl* 197, 8; 9; *a rock-owl,* Lhwyd.
cuδyaw *to cover, hide.* 154, 13.
cul *lean, thin, emaciated.*
Culwyδ *God.* 228, 24. 231, 25.
Custenhin n. pr. m. *Constantine.*
cwbwl (cwbyl) *entire, whole.*
cweiraw, see **cyweiryaw.**
cwfeint (cwfent) f. *convent, assembly*; pl. **cwfenoeδ.**
cwm m. *a valley.* 197, 12.
cwnsli m. *counsel.* 148, 2.
cwrr *an edge, corner.* **C. y Fagyl** n.l. 204, 4.
cwymp m. *a fall.* 225, 22.
cwynaw *to lament.*
cwyn-fan f. *a lament, wailing.*
cychwyn, cychwynnu *to set out, move, start.* deil ar gychwyn = dail yn syrthio MA.361 b, n. 8.
cyd (ced) conj. *though*; § 205.
cyd ac, y gyd ac *together with.* **y gyd yg cyd** *together* 155, 2. § 171. **y gyd a hynny** *likewise* 204, 26. 218, 20.
cyd-δioδef *to suffer.* 142, 14. past. part. **-edig (y)** *suffering (with).*
cyd-δiolch *to congratulate.* 180, 10.
cyd-farchawg m. *a knight-comrade.*
cyd-gynghor *joint counsel.* 155, 2.
cyd-synyedigaeth f. *consent.* 145, 4.
cyd-tywyssawg m. *a joint leader.* 178, 1.
cyd-ym-deith m. *a companion, comrade*; pl. **-on.**
cydymdeithocäu *to accompany, associate with.* 146, 4.
cyf-agos *near.*
cyfan *whole, entire.* 183, 32.
cyfar *trouble, anger;* 230, 7. Cf. Rhyfedd ym fyw llyw llawged gan gyfar o gwyn gofid MA. 301 a 17.
cyf-arch (keuarch) *to request, ask;* c. **gwell** *to greet;* **geir cyfarch** *a supplementary question asked after the trial, before the verdict is given.*
cyf-ar-fod *to meet, encounter, touch*; § 160.
cyfarth *to bark, bay;* **roδi** c. *rendre les abois, to stand at bay.* **achub yr** c. (sic leg.) *to be first at the charge.*
cyf-arwyδ m. *a guide.*
cyf-ar-wyneb (ac) *opposite (to)* 210, 5.
cyf-eillt m. *a friend.*
cyf-eir f. yn y gyfeir *straight before him, headlong.* 207, 6.
cyf-enw *a namesake.* yg kyuenw yr vn dyd ym phen y vlwydyn *that day a year.* 195, 19.
cyf-ergir m. and f. *a conflict, contest.* 240, 9.
cyf-ing *narrow, strait.* 175, 17.
cyf-lawn *full, complete.*

cyflafan f. *an outrage, slaughter.*
cyf-le m. *an opportunity.* 159, 16.
cyflehäu *to dispose, arrange, place.* 163, 27.
cyf-lym *sharp, quick, speedy.*
cyf-newid (O.W. **cyfnofud**) f. *coin, merchandise.* 223, 13. Cf. ef a holltir furyf y gyfnewit; haner crwn a vyd RB. 2. 146, 19.
cyfodi *to arise.*
cyf-oed *having the same age, so old.* 141, 28.
cyf-oeth m. *power, dominion, kingdom, wealth*; pl. **-eu.**
cyfoethawg *powerful, wealthy.*
cyfoethogi *to enrich.*
cyfranc f. *an encounter, fight, combat.* 178, 12.
cyf-red *equally swift.* 225, 6.
cyf-reith f. *law, right*; pl. **-eu.**
cyfreithiawl *legal, lawful.*
cyfreu *plumage?* 225, 17. *action?* 229, 30.
cyf-rin *a confidant.* 225, 5.
cyfrwch *a meeting.* 147, 5 (v.l.).
cyfrwng m. *mean, interval.* **yg** c. *in the midst of* 184, 9.
cyfrwys *trained, expert.* 186, 19. 190, 9 v.l. 191, 21.
cyf-ryw m. *the same kind.* 181, 27. *a kind* 161, 27. *similar, like, such.*
cyf-uch *of equal height.* **yn g. ac** *on a level with.* 174, 30.
cyf-un-deb *unity, concord.* 167, 23.
cyf-yawnhäu *to adjust, arrange.* 163, 27 v.l.
cyf-yeith *having the same language.* 196, 13.
cyf-yl *nearness, proximity.* **yn y gyfyl** *near him.*
cyff m. *stock, trunk, stem;* pl. **-yon.**
cyffelybu *to compare, imitate.*
cyffredin *common.* **yn g.** *in common* 185, 25. 223, 12.
cyffro m. *excitement.* 164, 27. 176, 6.
cyffroi (kefroy) *to excite, arouse, disturb;* c. **cyfreith (hawl)** *to institute a legal action (a claim).* past part. **cyffroedig.** 184, 10.
cyffur *occasion, opportunity.* 147, 9.
cynghaws m. *a counsel, advocate.*
cynghellawr m. *a chancellor, the king's principal steward or receve.*
cynghelloraeth f. *chancellorship.*
cyngheusaeth f. *a pleading.*
cynghlodforussed *equally renowned.* 186, 5.
cynghor (keghor) m. *counsel, advice;* **caffel yn y gyghor** *to decide.*
cynghorfynt *envy, malice.* 156, 20. Cf. LA. 12, 19.
cynghori *to advise.*
cynghreir f. *a covenant, truce.* 159, 12.
cyngwastad *constant.* 234, 6. 235, 27.
cyhoeδ *public.* 222, 12.
cy-hyd *having equal length.* **yn gyhyd ac** *as long as.*
cyhydeδ *equality, parity.* 221, 6. 7.
cylch m. *a circle.* **yg** c. *around, about, towards, concerning*; **yn eu** c. *about them, around them;* **yg** c. **hynny** *about that.*
cylchynu *to surround, encompass, besiege.* 146, 17 v. l.
cyllell f. *a knife, dagger.*
cyllell-bren *the wooden lath of a scabbard*; pl. **-eu** 195, 14. *wooden tweezers* 200, 5.
cyllell-fawr *big-knived.* 206, 19.
cymhell *to compel, force, drive, exact.* **c. y law** *to force one to surrender.*
cymenn *wise*; compar. **cymhennach.** 175, 28.
cymer, see **cymryd.**
cymmeint *of equal size, as much, as many, so great, so many.*
cymmwd m. *a commote, a division of country.*
cymod *to propitiate, make peace.* 197, 32. 201, 7.
cymodawg *a neighbour*; pl. **cymodogion.**
cymod-loneδ *a concord, agreement.*
cymrwd *mortar.* 193, 2.
Cymry (pl. of **Cymro** m. *a Welshman*) *Wales.* 154, 10. 203, 31. 222, 4.
cymryd (kemyrit) *to take.* pret. ind. sg. 3. **cymerth, cymirth.** c. **arnaw** *to feign;* c. **eu ffordδ (hynt)** *to set out;* c. **ffo** *to take to flight.*
cymyn *to entrust.* 157, 10.
cymynediw *a command, injunction;* pl. **-eu**; 150, 24; 166, 26.
1. **cyn (cynn)** prep. *before.* § 170.
2. **cyn (gynn)** conj. *sooner, before.* § 204. **gynn noe fyned** *before he goes.* 225, 3.
3. **cyn** *a stump*; pl. **-yon.** 197, 14.
cynadyl *a meeting, assembly.* 171, 19.
cyn-deced *as fair.* 163, 14.

cyn-digrifed *as pleasant.* 163, 14.
cyn-dosted *equally harsh.* 198, 17.
Cyn-δelig n. pr. m. 162, 7.
Cyn-δelw n. pr. m.
Cyn-farch n. pr. m.
cynefawd *custom, usage.* 163, 24. 167, 1.
Cyn-felyn n. pr. m.
cynhal, cynnal (kanal) *to sustain, support, maintain.*
cynhebig *similar, like.*
cynhebygu *to compare.* 161, 2.
cynhelu *to support.* 220, 30.
cynhen *contention, strife, contest;* pl. **cynhenneu.**
cynhyrfu *to excite, move.* 173, 27.
cynired *to come together, assemble; bring together; a concourse.* 162, 20.
Cyn-las n. pr. m.
cynllwyn *an ambush, waylaying.* 223, 1.
cyn-llyfan *a leash, a slip.*
cynna *equally good, peer.* 227, 9.
cynnal, see **cynhal.**
cynnelw *pattern, example, model.* 233, 16.
cynnifywr (coll.) m. *combatants, warriors.* 202, 27.
cynnig *to propose, proffer, suggest.*
cynnullaw *to collect, call together.*
cynnwys *to receive, admit, adopt.* 238, 5. Ar sawl a oed dan geithiwet heuyt ef ae kynnwyssawd ym paradwys LA. 133¹²; Creawdyr celi an kynnwys ni yn trugared, FB. 199⁶.
1. **cynnyδ** m. *a huntsman*; pl. **-yon.** 205, 4. 7.
2. **cynnyδ** *increase, prosperity.* 237,6. ef a doeth att Walchmei. Ac a gyuarchawd gwell idaw. Duw a ro kynnyd arnat, heb y Gwalchmei Hg. I. 223, 2.
cynnyδu *to increase.* 180, 12.
cyn-ran m. *a first or chief part; a leader.* 231, 27.
cynt adv. *formerly, before.* **yn g.** *sooner, rather* 181, 8.
cyntaf *first;* **yn gyntaf** *first, at first.*
cyntefin (Ir. cētemuin) *the beginning of summer.* 225, 14.
Cyn-was n. pr. m. 204, 4.
cyny (kene) conj. *though not.* § 205.
cyrch m. *an attack, onset, raid.*
cyrchaw *to fetch, bring.* 231, 18.
cyrchu *to attack, set upon, march upon, make for, approach.*
cyrn, see **corn.**
cyryscwyδad *a quarrel, contention?* 230, 9.
cysgawd m. *shade, shelter, shadow.* 241, 11.
cysgu *to sleep.*
cystal *equally good, as good.*
cy-war-sangu *to trample upon, oppress, crush.* 149, 26. 152, 16. 180, 32.
cy-weir *prepared, equipped, complete.* 158, 29. 179, 16.
cyweiryaw *to prepare, equip, lay out.*
cy-weithyδ *a company.* 194, 3.
cy-wir *true, just.* 234, 6.
1. **cy-wlad** f. *a neighbouring territory, borderland.* 233, 18. Rybu Vran vab Llyr llu rwymadur mat ygkamp ygkyulat ygkur MA. 180 b 13.
2. **cy-wlad** m. *a compatriot.* 230,10.
cywrein *skilful, cunning.*
cy-wrisseδ *contention, strife.* 234, 23. 236, 11.
cy-wyδ-ol-(y)aeth f. *harmony, music*; pl. **-eu** 163, 14. Used also as sg. pa gywydolyaethev yw honn? LA. 82, 10.
chwaer f. *a sister;* pl. **chwioryδ.**
chware *to play; play;* pl. **chwaryeu.**
chwech, chwe (whe) (spir.) *six.*
chwedyl m. *a story, tale, news, tidings;* pl. **chwedleu.**
chweg *sweet.* 239, 21.
chwerthyn *to smile.* **chwerδiδ** (§ 129) 225, 22.
chwerw *bitter.* 230, 7.
chwi *you.* Emphatic **chwichwi,** conjunctive **chwitheu, chitheu.** § 45.
Chwintus n. pr. m. *Quintus.*

da (1) *good, profitable*; (2) *goods, wealth, benefit.*
dabre *come!* § 141.
dad-ganu *to recapitulate, rehearse, recite.* 173, 6.
dadolwch *intercession, invocation.* 235, 17.
dad-rithaw *to re-transform.* 199, 8.
dadyl m. and f. *a meeting, dispute, suit, judgment;* pl. **dadleu** (used as sg. masc. and pl.) *a dispute.*
dadyl-fa *a meeting-place, court.* O.W. **dadlma** 222, 13.
dafad f. *a sheep;* pl. **defeid.**

daffar *provision.* 225, 19; cf. gwnaeth Duw trvgar gardaud FB. 15, 14.
dangos (dankos) *to shew, disclose, produce.* **d. cefneu** *to flee;* **d. bronnoeδ** *to face;* **d. deheuoeδ** *turn the right to, face;* **d. ysparduneu y** *to spur.*
dala (daly) *to hold, seize, retain, hold back, capture.* act. pret. ind. sg. 3 **delis (dellis),** past subj. pl. 3 **delhynt,** pluperf. pl. 3 **dalyassant.**
dam-gylchu *to surround;* past part. **damgylchedig.**
dam-gylchynu *to surround.* 142, 17.
damunaw *to desire, wish, seek for;* part. **damunedig.**
damwein m. *accident, chance, fortune, event;* pl. **-eu; o δ.** *by chance.*
damweinaw (y) *to happen to, to befall.* 173, 11.
danfon *to send, dispatch.* 178, 7.
dar f. *an oaktree.* 197, 2.
dar-estwng *to subdue, subjugate, yield;* past part. **darestyngedig.**
dar-fod *to cease, end, come to pass, happen.* pres. ind. act. sg. 3 **deryw;** fut. ind. sg. 3 **dervyδ;** impf. ind. sg. 3 **daroeδ;** cond. sg. 3 **darffei.** § 160.
dar-lleaw *to read.* 231, 29.
darmerth *provision, preparation.* 162, 19.
dar-o-gan *prophecy, prognostication;* pl. **daroganneu.**
darpar (am) m. *preparation (for), provision, project.*
darparu *to prepare, intend.* 196, 7.
dar-ym-red *to pass to and fro;* 210, 7.
dathoedd, see **dyfod.**
1. **daw** m. *a son-in-law;* pl. **dofyon.**
2. **daw,** see **dyfod.**
dawn *gift, mental endowment;* pl. **donyeu.**
dayar (dayr, dair) f. *earth, land, ground.*
dayar-dy *a subterranean vault.*
dayar-gychwyn *an earthquake;* 229, 1.
dayoni *goodness, virtue, valour.*
dayrawl *earthly, mundane, material.* 164, 9.
de, see **dy.**
dechreu *to begin, inaugurate; a beginning, origin.*
dedwyδ *happy, blessed, virtuous.*
dedwyδyd *happiness, felicity.*
defawd f. *custom, practice, habit, ordinance;* pl. **defodeu.**
defnyδ m. *material, element, substance, cause;* pl. **defnyδeu, defnyδyeu** *witnesses, guarantors, etc. in a lawsuit.*
deg, deng (nas) *ten.* § 41.
deheu (1) *right (dexter), righteous;* (2) *the right hand or arm, the right side of the body, south, South-Wales;* pl. **-oeδ.**
Deheu-barth *South-Wales.*
dehongyl (dehogyl) *to interpret; interpretation.* 173, 8. 13.
dehol *to expel, banish.* 143, 21. 155, 7.
deifaw *to roast.* 199, 28.
deil (coll.) *leaves.*
deissyfeid (deissyfyt, dissiuit) *to demand, request, seek, merit.*
deissyfyd (dysseifyd) *sudden, unexpected.* 147, 3. 187, 23. 208, 17.
1. **delhynt,** see **dala.**
2. **delhynt,** see **dyfod.**
delw f. *image, form.*
delwad m. *creator.* 227, 1.
delwyd, see **dyfod.**
deni, see 1. **tan.**
derwen f. *an oak-tree.* **collen d.** *a young oak.*
dethol *select, picked.* 202, 29.
deu m. *two;* f. **dwy (dui, du).** § 42 (a).
deubi, see **dyfod.**
deu-δeg (nas.) *twelve.*
deu-δeg-mlwyδ *twelve years old.*
deu-δyblig *double, two-fold.* 214, 29.
deugeint *forty.*
deugeinfed *fortieth;* **ar y d.** *with forty men.* § 165.
Deu-gleδyf *the name of a cantref in Pembroke.* 204, 5.
deu-hanner *divided in two equal halves.* 221, 7.
deuth, see **dyfod.**
Dewi n. pr. m. *David.*
dewin m. *a magician.* 225, 16.
dewis *to choose, prefer.*
dewr *brave.*
dewreδ *prowess, valour, prime of life.* 140, 6. 180, 10. 186, 1. 4. *warriors* 144, 1, (*omnem armaturn militem*).
Dews (Deus) Lat. *Deus.* 227, 1. 20.
1. **di,** see **ti.**
2. **di (dy)** (voc.) O.W. = later **i, y,** prep. *to.* **diδi** *to her.* § 195.
di-aerfa *without slaughter.* 170, 10 (sic leg.)

di-afael *exempt from seizure.* 223, 32.
di-angc *to escape.* pret. ind. act. sg. 3 **diengis (dihegis).**
di-al *to avenge; vengeance.*
di-am (O.W.) *for.* § 164.
di-amheu *undoubted, certain, evident.* 235, 18.
di-anaf *flawless, whole.* 202, 5.
di-annod *without delay.*
di-anrydeδu *to dishonour.* 142, 6.
di-arfeu *unarmed.* 156, 1.
di-arfod *unprepared.* 177, 30.
di-arfu *to disarm.*
diawd *drink.* 170, 16.
did, see **dodi.**
di-drifwr m. *a hermit.* 165, 8.
di-dryf *a solitary place, hermitage.* 165, 9.
di-δarbod *to consider, care.* **heb δ.** *parum cogitans* 184, 14. impf. ind. act. pl. 3 **diδorynt** 175, 26. § 147.
di-eithyr *outside.* § 172. **yn y d.** 222, 14.
diën *buds.* 241, 19. Arch I. p. 503.
dieu, dieuoeδ, see **dyδ.**
difa *to destroy, annul.* 197, 13.
di-fanw (O.W. **dimanw**) *to disparage, slight.* pres. subj. act. sg. 3 **difanwo.** 224, 7.
di-farnu *I judge, decide against.* 140, 9. 220, 13. 16. fut. sg. 3 **diwarnawd** 228, 20.
di-fei *faultless, perfect.* 238, 15.
di-fetha *to destroy.* 197, 31.
di-fryssio *to hasten, speed.* 242, 2.
di-funer *exempt from allegiance to a lord.* 223, 31.
di-fwlch *without a notch.* **Cleδyf D.** n. pr. m. 204, 12.
di-fwyn *void, idle, unused, untouched (of a virgin).* 201, 4.
di-fwynyant *profitless.* 211, 8.
diffeith *waste.*
diffeithaw *to lay waste.*
diffeithwch m. *a waste, wilderness.*
differei, see **diffryd.**
diffryd (rac) *to defend, protect (from).* past. subj. act. sg. 3 **differei**; pret. ind. sg. 3 **diffyrth, diffirth.** § 133a.
diffurn? 228, 11.
di-garyad *unloving, unkind.* 142, 4.
1. **digawn** (**dygawn**) m. *a sufficiency; sufficient.*
2. **digawn** *to be able, to effect, do, accomplish;* pres. ind. sg. 1 **digonaf.**
di-gribyaw (y) *to attack.* 205, 5. Cf. **ym-gribiaw.**
digrif *pleasant, agreeable.*
digrifwch *pleasure, enjoyment.*
di-gyfoethi *to dispossess, deprive of territory.* 191, 17.
diheu *undoubted, certain,* **d.-porth** *firm support.* 234, 14.
di-hewyd *affection, inclination, desire.* 175, 25. 180, 32. 182, 11.
dilëu *to exterminate, annihilate.*
dilid *to pursue.*
di-luyδ *exempt from hosting.* 223, 31.
dillad (coll.) *clothes, dress.* 154, 8.
dim *a thing, something; nothing, naught.* **dilëu hyd ar δim** *to annihilate;* **dilid hyd ar δim** *to pursue to extinction;* adv. *at all.*
din *a fortress.* **DinTywi** n. l. 205, 27.
Din-dagwl n.l. *Tintagel.*
dinas m. *a city, citadel;* pl. **dinassoeδ.**
di-obeithaw *to despair.* 190, 13.
di-od *to take off, divest, extract.*
di-oδef (O. W. **diguadef**) *to suffer, undergo, withstand.*
dioer *verily, certainly.* 176, 1.
di-o-gel *safe, secure.*
diogelwch *safety, security.*
diolch (i) *to thank.*
dipynwys, see **dybynu.**
dir *necessary.* 190, 10.
dir-fawr *very great, huge, enormous.*
dirieid *wicked.* 225, 12.
dirwy f. *a fine, mulct.*
di-rybuδ *without warning.* 158, 12.
disgyblu *to study, imitate (like a disciple).* 156, 22. Cf. Hg. I. 208, 5.
disgynnu *to dismount, descend, alight, land, put up at.*
dispeilaw *to unsheathe.* 199, 13.
dissifid, see **deissyfyd.**
distryw *to destroy, demolish.*
ditheu, see **titheu.**
dithwn (O.W.) *this day.* 208, 15. 16.
di-wall *careful, unceasing.* 164, 5.
1. **diwarnawd** m. *a day.*
2. **diwarnawd**, see **di-farnu.**
diwedyδ m. *evening.* 241, 13.
diweδ *end* or **d.** *at last.*
di-weir *chaste.* 164, 15.
diweir-deb *chastity.* 190, 16.
diwethaf *last.* 154, 30.
di-wreiδ *an uprooting.* 233, 3.
di-wreiδedig *uprooted, demolished.* 155, 4.
di-wyll *cultivation.* 167, 8.

dodi (dody) *to place, put, give, charge.* pres. ind. act. sg. 3 **did**; **dodi ar y gyfraith** *to appeal to the law;* **dodi ym mhen un** *to suggest, submit, entrust, hand over.*
doδyw, doent, see **dyfod.**
1. **doeth** *wise, sage.* 143, 3.
2. **doeth**, see **dyfod.**
doeth-ineb *wisdom.* 142, 32.
Dofyδ m. *the Lord, God.*
Dofyδyad m. *the Lord.* 231, 15.
dofyon, see 1. **daw.**
dogyn *portion, share.* 202, 14.
doiδ, see **dyfod.**
dolur *grief, anguish.* 144, 20.
doluryaw *to grieve.* 154, 25. 204, 20.
domni = Lat. Domini. 237, 2.
donyawg *gifted, endowed.* 235, 19.
donyeu, see **dawn.**
dos, see **myned.**
dothuif, doy, doynt, see **dyfod.**
drachefyn, see **trachefyn.**
dragon, dreig f. *a dragon;* 172, 29. *a battle standard.* pl. **dreigeu.** 150, 26. 180, 2. 184, 3.
drein (coll.) *thorns.* 230, 32.
dros, see **tros.**
drud *bold, arrogant, wicked.* 186, 13. 232, 8.
drudannaeth f. *arrogance.* 165, 28 *(protervia).*
Drud-wyn m. *the name of a hound.* 204, 8.
drwg *bad, evil; mischief, harm.*
drws *door, entrance;* pl. **drysseu.**
drwy, see **trwy.**
drycin (i.e. **dryg-hin**) *foul weather.* 225, 6.
drychafel *to raise, lift; rise.*
dryg-δamwein *misfortune, ill-luck.*
dryll m. *portion, fragment;* pl. **-eu.**
dryllyaw *to break in pieces, shatter.*
dryssawr m. *a doorkeeper.* 234, 8.
drysseu, see **drws.**
du *black.*
duc m. *a duke.*
duch, dug, see **dwyn.**
du-hunaw *to awake.* 173, 6.
Du-las (Ir. **Dub-glas**) *a river-name.* 146, 14.
du-un *accordant, agreeable.* 216, 23.
duw (dyw): pob **d.** *on every day.* 201, 5. **d. Sadwrn** *on Saturday.* 228, 21. 240, 10.
Duw m. *God.* pl. **dwyweu** 142, 21.
dwfrein, see **dwyrein.**
dwfyr (dwfwr) m. *water.*
dwrn *a fist, hand*; pl. **dirn.** 235, 2.
dwy, see **deu. dwyweu**, see **Duw.**
dwywawl *divine.*
dwy-law (pl. of **llaw**) *hands.*
dwyn *to take, carry, bring, capture;* § 133 (b). **d. ar gof** *to call to mind.* **d. ruthur** *to attack.* **d. yr dygyn** *to affirm on oath.* pres. ind. act. sg. 1 **dygaf**; fut. ind. pass. **dygetawr** (§ 129. n.); imper. sg. 2 **dwg**; pres. subj. sg. 3 **duch** (§ 110 n. 2); pret. ind. sg. 3 **dug.**
dwyrein (**dwfrein, dwyfrein**) *the east.* 172, 1. 181, 17.
1. **dy**, see 2. **di.**
2. **dy** (**de**) (voc.) poss. adj. *thy.* § 57.
3. **dy** (**de**), see **ti.**
dy-borthi *to carry, inflict.* 180, 26.
dy-bryd *ugly, foul, base.* 178, 6; 180, 19; 190, 26.
dybynu *to hang down.* 230, 18.
dycco, dyccwy, see **dwyn.**
dychymyg m. *invention, device*; pl. **-eu, -yon.** 164, 26.
dyδ (O.W. **did**) m. *day, daytime, daylight, date;* pl. **dieu** (after numerals), **dieuoeδ, dyδyeu**; **d. brawd** *Doomsday*; **hanner d.** *mid-day.*
dyδ-gweith *on a certain day, one day.* 199, 10.
dy-δwyn *to bring.* 194, 13.
Dyfed *Demetia.*
Dyfnarth n. pr. m. 200, 28.
Dyfneint n. l. *Devon.* 206, 5.
dyfod (deuod, douot) *to come.* § 141.
dyfodedigaeth f. *a coming, arrival.*
dy-fryssyaw *to hasten.* 242, 2.
dyfuant, dyfyδ, see **dyfod.**
dyfynnu *to summon.* 201, 1. 205, 2.
Dyfyn-wal n. pr. m.
dyffo, see **dyfod.**
dyffryn m. *a valley.* D. Llychwr *the valley of Loughor.*
dyffygyaw *to fail, lack.* 145, 24. 180, 11.
dy-gaboli *to belabour, beat soundly* 207, 21.
dygaf, dygetawr, see **dwyn.**
dygonho, see 2. **digawn.**
dy-gryn *terror.* 228, 33.
dygrynnyaw *to seize, clutch.* 206, 20.
dy-grynöi *to avail, profit.* 153, 10. 175, 30.
dy-gwyδaw *to fall, chance.*
dygwyδedigaeth f. *setting (of the sun).* 151, 4.

dygyn *hard, severe; a test, proof.* See **dwyn.**

dy-gyrchu *to make for, set upon; draw.* 194, 23. 202, 12. 206, 24.

1. **dy-heδ** *discordant, strange? piteous, a pity?* 194, 19.[1]

2. **dyheδ?** 228, 27. Here MA. 73 b 6 has the variant *tuedd,* pl. of *tu* 'country-side, country.'

dy-leith *death.* 232, 1.

dylyed f. *due, claim, right, title.*

dylyedawg *high-born, noble;* pl. **dylyedogyon.** 140, 29. 155, 14. 156, 24.

dylyedus *due, proper.* 182, 20.

dylyu (deleu) *to have a right to, deserve, be due, owe.* 171,26. 208,20. 23. 217, 25. 237, 19.

dyn m. and f. *a human being, man;* coll. *men* 204, 5. pl. **-yon** (deneon).

dy-nessäu *to approach, draw near.*

dyn-y-orn (cf. Ir. duin-orgun) *homicide, murder.* 222,17.

dyrchefynt, see **drychafel.**

dyrn-awd m. *a blow;* pl. **dyrnodeu.**

dyrn-feδ *a handbreadth.* 197, 24.

dy-roδi *to give.* pres. ind. act. sg. 3 **dere, dyry;** imperat. sg. 2 **dyro.**

dyrys (1) *difficult, intricate;* (2) *adversity.* 162, 20. 167, 16. 175, 18.

dysg m. *teaching, instruction, example, behaviour.* 164, 12. 182, 19. 184, 23 (*hortamen*). 187, 7.

dysgu *to teach, instruct.*

dysseifyd, see **deissyfyd.**

dywad, see **dywedud.**

dywal *fierce.* 183, 13. 233, 4.

dywalhäu *to harass.* 185, 26.

dyfyδ, see **dyfod.**

dyw, see **duw.**

dywedud *to say.* § 133.

dywygyad (di-) *manner, fashion.* 164, 12.

1. **e,** see **yδ.**

2. **e,** see 4. **y.**

eb-rwyδ *swift, quick.* 176, 11.

ebryn? 228, 27.

ech *outside of, beyond?* 228, 16. Cf. FB. 66, 8; 106, 30; 140, 31; MA. 208a 49.

Echel *Achilles.*

echenawg *needy, destitute.* 143, 5.

echwrys *violent, fierce.* 227, 22; Cf. FB. 159, 5; 199, 20. MA. 247, 24. 36.

ed, see **yδ.**

ederyn, see **adar.**

edifar *repentant, sorry.* 149, 17.

edir, see **adaw.**

edirn (etyrn) *sovereignty, supremacy.* 235, 3. 236, 15.

edrych *to look, see.* 164, 23. 220, 9.

ed-rif *descent, lineage.* 212, 29. Cf. MA. 168a 51.

ed-ucher (= hyd ucher) *till evening.* 193, 1. 203, 5.

edyw, see **ydyw.**

eδewis, see **aδaw.**

ef (eff) *he, it.* §§ 45; 47. Emphatic **efo** (effo); conjunct. **ynteu.** § 45 (b).

efelly *thus, so.* See **felly.**

efo, effo, see **ef.**

Efyas n. l. *a cantred in Herefordshire.* 206, 4.

effeiryad m. *a priest;* pl. **effeiryeid.**

eglur *clear, bright, brilliant, renowned, famous.* 167, 1. 169, 22.

eglur-der *brightness, brilliance.* 173, 1.

eglwys f. *church;* pl. **eglwysseu.**

egnad (O.W.), pl. **egneyd,** see **ynad.**

englyn m. *a stanza of three or four lines.* 200, 13.

engylyon, see **angel.**

enghyrth (eghirith) *terrible, painful.* 238, 10. FB. 177[2]; MA. 351b 21.

ehang *unrestricted, free.* 173, 29.

ehawg m. *a salmon.* 197, 28.

ehedeg *to fly.* 172, 29.

ehofyn-der *fearlessness, confidence, courage.* 187, 4.

ehunan *himself;* pl. **ehunein** § 60.

ei, see **myned.**

eiδaw *his;* **eiδunt** *theirs.* § 55.

Eifft *Egypt.* **yr E.** 172, 18.

eigawn *ocean, sea.* 161, 18.

eingon f. *an anvil.* 196, 21.

1. **eil** *second, next.* **eil hynaf** *eldest but one;* **eilweith** *a second time, again;* **bop eilwers** *alternately.*

2. **eil** *a son.* 200, 28; 205, 24.

eilenwi *to fulfil, accomplish.* 152, 14. 169, 22.

eillaw *to shave, to cut (hair).*

einym *ours.* 169, 14. § 55.

eirant *they will arise.* 229, 19; 20. See RC. VI, 27.

eirchad *a suitor, suppliant.* 234, 5.

eir-m-oed *since my time.* 198, 9. § 197 n.

[1] For *oed dyhed kelu y ryw was hwnn* WB. 475, RB. 116 has *ys oed gryssyn kelu* &c.

eiry *snow.*

Eiryawn n. pr. m. 204, 30.

eiryf *number.* 172, 14.

eir-y-oed (eiroed) *ever, always.* § 197 n. 140, 3.

eisseu *want, indigence.* 146, 2. 199, 19.

eissoes *yet, nevertheless.*

eissyfflad *hell.* 231, 13. v. l. **issaf wlad,** MA. 74b 14. **eissyflat,** FB. 161[34]. v. l. **Eissyf wlad** MA. 27a[56]. See FB. 302[28].

eissyllud *progeny, followers.* 232, 9. Cf. FB. 44, 2; 203, 24; MA. 143a 39. 169a, 35.

eisteδ (eyste) *to sit;* **e. wrth y gaer** *to besiege the city.*

eisteδ-fa f. *a seat, throne;* pl. **-eu.**

eithaf *end, extremity;* pl. **-oeδ.**

eithyr prep. *except.* § 172.

el, see **myned.**

el-chwyl *a second time, again.* 141, 22. 142, 22.

elhei, elhid, elhynt, eloch, see **myned.**

Elen n. pr. f. *Helen.*

ell (ill, yll) *all,* see § 67.

ellwng *to dismiss, dispatch, let; shed (blood).* past. subj. act. sg. 3 **ellygei,** pret. ind. sg. 3 **ellygwys,** etc. past part. **ellyngedig.**

ellyn *a razor.* 203, 25.

em, see **yn.**

emelldigedig *accursed.*

Emrys n. pr. m. *Ambrose.*

Emyr n. pr. m.

en, ena, see **yn, yna.**

encil, encilyaw *to retreat.* 185, 1.

encyd *space of time.* 184, 8.

ene, see **yny.**

eneid (eneyt) m. *life, soul;* pl. **-eu;** **myned e. dros e.** *to engage in a life-for-life struggle.*

enfyn, see **anfon.**

enguis (O.W.), see **enwi.**

enill *to gain, win.* 145, 18.

enneint *an ointment, a bath.* 143, 13. Cf. RB. 76, 11.

Enoc n. pr. m. *Enoch.*

ennynnu *to kindle, fire; be inflamed.*

enryδeδ (anryded) m. *honour, dignity.* 142, 16. 144, 11. 145, 21.

enryδeδu (anrydedu) *to celebrate.* 154, 23. pres. subj. act. sg. 3 **enryδeδocao.**

enryδeδus *honourable, noble, venerable, dignified.* 143, 24.

enteu (entheu, entehu) pers. pron. sg. 3 m. §§ 45(c); 46(c).

enw (heno) m. *a name.*

enwi *to name.* pret. ind. act. sg. 3 **enguis** (O.W.) 218, 5.

eny, see **yny.**

enywed (ennuet) *damage, injury.* Sew y turyw ac enwywet llosgy tey a thorry aradyr BCh. 63, 8.

1. **er,** see 1. **yr.**

2. **er** (yr) prep. *for.* §§ 53, 197.

3. **er,** see 1. **y.**

er-byn *against;* **yn erbyn** *to meet, against, by.* § 173. **yn awch e.** *against you.* 180, 19.

erbynyaw *to receive; withstand.*

erbynyeid (erbyneid) *to receive.* 141, 16. 143, 25.

erchi (hercki) *to ask, request, bid;* pres. ind. act. sg. 1 **archaf.**

eregthun, eregthunt, see **rwng.**

ereill, see **arall.**

ereint *silver.* 200, 24. 203, 19. 205, 5. Cf. Rhys, Celt. Heathendom, p. 125.

erestyn m. *a juggler.* 147, 13. The parallel passage in M.A. 531a 55 has: ac en rith kroesan ac arwestdyn ac gwareyt.

ereu 230, 1 = **eireu** MA. 73b[46], see **geir.**

er-gelu *to hide.* fut. ind. pass. **ergelawr** 227, 28. **ergelhawr** ib. 29.

er-glybod *to listen to.* imper. sg. 2 **erglyw** 235, 10. 236, 22.

er-gryn *dread, fear.* 202, 31.

er-gyd m. *a stroke, blow, cast;* pl. **-eu.**

er-hyl *hunt, chase.* 201, 18; 204, 8.

er-lid *to pursue.*

er-lysu *to reject, deny.* 229, 30.

ermid m. *a hermit.* pl. **-wyr.**

ermud? 232, 10.

ermyn-wisc *a robe with border of ermine.* 161, 29.

eryf? 229, 4. 9.

eryr m. *an eagle;* pl. **-od** 154, 3. metaph. *a leader.*

es, see §§ 94; 159 n. 2.

Esgeir Oervel n. l. *Seiscenn Uarbcōil* in Ireland. 201, 32. 203, 3.

esgob m. *a bishop;* pl. **escyb.**

esgobaeth f. *a bishopric;* pl. **-eu.**

esgobawd *a bishopric.*

esgolheig m. *a scholar, clerk;* pl. **-ion.**

esgyll, see **asgell.**

esgyrn, see asgwrn.
esgynnu *to ascend, mount, climb.*
esmwyth-der m. *ease, rest.*
estrawn *a stranger.* 225, 4.
estwng=gestwng *to let down.*
e. gantunt *incumbentes* 176, 30.
etifeδ m. *an heir;* coll. *heirs.* 141, 1. pl. -yon 181, 26.
eto, see etwa.
etheuis, see aδaw.
ethol *to choose, select.*
ethynt, see myned.
etwa (eto) *yet, still.* ettwa 191, 7.
eu *their.* § 57. eu hun *themselves.*
eur m. *gold.*
eur-δwrn *golden-handed, liberal.* pl. -δirn 235, 2. 236, 14.
eureid *golden, gilt, set with gold.* 184, 3 (*aureus*).
eur-gleδyf-ruδ *golden-sword-red.* 233, 9.
euryn *golden.* 201, 11.
ewin f. *a nail, talon, claw.* 201, 9.
ewythyr m. *an uncle (brother of one of parents, grand-parents, or great-grand-parents);* pl. ewythreδ 206, 2.
eyl-weyth, see 1. eil.

fal (mal) conj. *as.* § 216.
felly *thus.* yfelly 164, 30. 166, 20.
fi, fifi, see mi.
fry *above.*
fyhud? 231, 9.
fyn (nas.) *my.* §§ 57, 59.

ffalst *cunning.* 147, 16.
Ffichteid *Picts.*
fflam f. *a flame, fire.* 160, 4. 185, 4.
fflamychedig *inflamed, flaming.* 159, 20.
Fflandrys *Flanders.*
ffo *to flee.* ar ffo *in flight.*
fforδ f. *a road, way, passage, means;* pl. ffyrδ.
fforest f. *a forest;* pl. -i.
Ffreinc f. *France.*
ffuruf f. *form, manner;* pa ff. *how?*
ffustaw *to strike, beat.* 175, 2.
ffwrn f. *a furnace.* 228, 22.
ffyδ *faith.* 149, 31.
ffyδ-lawn *faithful.* 181, 3.
ffynhawn f. *a fountain, spring.*
ffyrδ, see fforδ.

gadael (gadayl) *to leave, allow.* 215, 29. See gadu.
gadaw *to leave.*
gadu *to leave, allow, permit.* pres. ind. act. sg. 2 gedy; § sg. 3 gad 146, 2; pl. 2 gedwch; imper. pass. gat-her.
gafael (gafayl) f. *a seizing, holding; seizure.* 222, 15.
gafael-fawr *of mighty grip.* Glewlwyd G., 204, 24.
galar *sorrow.* 229, 9.
galw *to call, summon, name.* pres ind. pass. gelwir; imper. pl. 2 gelwch.
gallel, gallu *to be able; power, might.* pres. ind. act. sg. 2 gelly; sg. 3 geill, etc.
gan, see can.
ganed, see geni.
garscon? 199, 12.
garth *a mountain ridge.* 205, 29.
garw *rough.*
gast f. *a bitch.*
gawr f. and m. *a shout, cry; battle.* 205, 10. 229, 23.
gayaf (gaeaf) m. *winter.* 156, 14.
gefeil *tongs, pincers.* geffeil 194, 14.
1. geir (geyr) m. *a word, request.* pl. -eu; o un eir *with one accord.*
2. geir (gyr, ger) *near.* g. llaw *near, close by.* g. bronn *before.* § 168.
gelfin *a beak.* 196, 23.
gelyn m. *an enemy;* pl. -yon.
gelynawl *hostile.*
gellwng *to loose, let loose, let, dismiss, deliver up, draw (a sword).* pret. ind. act. pl. 3 gellygassant.
geneu m. *jaws, mouth.* 229, 31.
geni *to be born;* pret. ind. pass. ganed. 227, 12.
genthi, genti, see can.
ger, see 2. geir.
Gereint n. pr. m. 203, 9. 211, 8.
Gillamor (Ir. Gilla mōr *Big Lad*) n. pr. m. 192. 14.
Gillamwri (Ir. Gilla Muire *the servant of Mary*) n. pr. m. 192, 13.
Gilpadrig (Ir. Gilla Pādraig *the servant of Patrick*) n. pr. m. 192, 13.
gilyδ, see cilyδ.
girad *lamentable, piteous, terrible.* 173, 3. 192, 9.
glan f. *a bank, shore;* pl. glanneu.
glanhäu *to clean, polish.* 194, 16.
gleif m. and f. *a lance, spear.* Hg. II. 91, 12=paladyr onn CM. 87, 32.
gleis, see cleis.
glew *brave, stout; a brave man, hero.*—n. pr. m. 204, 20.

glew-der *bravery, boldness, valour.*
Glew-lwyd n. pr. m. 204, 24.
glin m. *a knee;* pl. -yeu.
gloew *bright, sparkling.* 235, 3.
glud *tenacious, fast, diligent.* 175, 5. MA. 285 a 1.
glyn (wrth) *an adhering (to), following close.* 195, 4.
glynn m. *a valley, glen.* 197, 12. 204, 14.
Glyth-myr n. pr. m. 201, 12.
Glythfyr ib.
glyw m. *a ruler.* 233, 3. 235, 4.
gnawd *customary, usual, common.*
gnotäedig *accustomed, usual.* 142, 11. 145, 22.
gobeith *hope.*
go-bedr-or *the four-corners (of the world).* 228, 3. FB. 199, 20. 160, 19. MA. 236b 28.
go-ben-yδ m. *a pillow;* pl. -eu.
go-byr m. *a fee, pay.* 221, 25.
go-chel *to avoid, ward off, shun, escape.* 148, 30. 150, 21. 159, 3. 169, 28.
Godlont *Gothland.* 156, 11.
go-driccawr m. *a lingerer, sojourner.* 239, 8.
go-dwrδ m. *a rumbling noise.* 172, 28.
go-δef *to suffer, allow, permit.* 233, 8.
goδeith m. *a heath.* 185, 5. 226, 4.
goδeu *purpose, design.* 239, 8. yg g. gweith Mynaw FB. 187, 29.
gof m. *a smith.* 196, 21.
gofal m. *anxiety* 147, 6; pl. gofeilon 156, 30.
gofalus *anxious.* 149, 27. 160, 3.
gofud m. *affliction, injury.* 143, 6.
gofwy *to visit.* 142, 3.
gofyn (wrth) *to ask (of), seek.* 199, 2.
gofynnyad *an asking; demand.* 205, 20.
Gogigwr n. pr. m. 204, 23.
go-gleδ m. *the North.* 145, 12. 200, 32. 201, 15.
go-gof f. *a cave;* pl. -eu.
go-gyfarch *prominent, conspicuous.* Read with Add. gogyfurδ (*duodecim pares*), q. v. 162, 16; 171, 11.
go-gyf-urδ *of equal rank, peer.* 171, 11, v.l.
go-hir *to delay; delay, respite.*
golchi *to wash, polish.* 194, 6.
go-leith *to dissolve.* 233, 7. FB. 58, 30.
goleuhäu *to light up, illumine,* 173, 1.
golud *wealth.* 198, 20. 233, 12.
go-luδ *to hinder, obstruct.* 233, 12.
golwg f. *a look, glance.*
gor-alw *to cry or call aloud.* 184, 18. pret. ind. act. sg. 3 gorelwis. 231, 24. FB. 283, 10. MA. 195 a 54.
gor-cheidwad m. *a guardian, custodian;* pl. gwercheidwcid 208, 17.
gor-chyfygu *to overcome, conquer.* 155, 26.
gor-chymyn (gorchymun) *to command, commend, commit to; a command, injunction;* pl. -eu.
gorδerch-wraig f. *a concubine;* pl. -wrageδ 164, 12.
gorδeri m. *a shrieking, noise, disturbance.* 176, 19. 183, 22.
gor-δifwng *very steady, steadfast.* 233, 1.
Gor-δu n. pr. f. 207, 12.
gorδwy *oppression, violence.* 233, 2.
gor-δyfneid *to experience, enjoy habitually.* 142, 14. FB. 28, 18; 44, 13; 88, 27; 258, 22.
gorelwis, see gor-alw.
gor-esgyn *to invade, overrun.*
1. goreu *best.*—n. pr. m. 195, 8.
2. goreu, see gwneuthur.
gor-flwng *very severe, austere.* 233, 3.
gor-fod *to overcome, conquer.* g. ar 181, 4. pres. ind. sg. 3 gor-yw 230, 13. § 160.
gor-ffowys *to cease, rest.* 157, 25.
gor-hoffder m. *a boasting, vaunting.* 174, 34.
gor-hoffeδ *a boasting, affectation.* 174, 13.
gor-llewin *the West.*
gormes f. *oppression, tyranny.*
gormod *excess;* 164, 6. yn o. *too much,* 176, 6.
gor-or m. *a border, side.* 242, 7.
gor-seδ (gworsseδ) f. *a seat, throne, court.* 234. 21. 240, 4.
gor-sefyll *to withstand, stand.* pres. ind. act. sg. 3 gorsseiw 234, 22. pres. pass. gorseuir 241, 7. Cf. MA. 160 b 2.
gor-uchel *very high or loud.* 150, 7. 241, 6.
gorug, see gwneuthur.
Gor-wen n. pr. f. 207, 12.
gorwyδ m. *a steed, warhorse.* 242, 5.

*gor-ysgelu *to overflow (the bowl).* pres. subj. sg. 3 gorysgelho 240, 2.
Ni ddodai eirif ar ra dillad
Na gwin grysgelo nac ysgarlad
MA. 222 b 18.
Cf. gwin gorysgalawc RB. 103,18. gorysgalauc *in large bowls* E. Lh.
gosgorð *retinue.* 141, 9.
go-sgubaw *to sweep.* pres. ind. act. sg. 3 gosgupið 241, 21.
gosgymonn (literally *fuel, food*) *occasion.* 174, 5. RB. 114, 4; Hg. II. 34, 30; FB. 6, 8; 306, 16.
gossod *to put, establish, set, attack, thrust.* g. ar *to attack;* g. drwy *arrange.* past part. -edig 148, 16.
gosteg f. *silence, the proclaiming of silence in court.* 211, 3. 8. 234, 20.
gostegu *to proclaim silence.* 234,19.
gostegwr m. *a silencer.* 234, 19.
grað f. *a step;* pl. -eu. 166, 27.
grawn m. *grain* (coll.) 225, 1.
Greid n. pr. m. 198, 18.
Greidawl n. pr. m. 199, 10.
grið-fan *to groan, a groaning.*
Groeg f. *Greece.*
Gruffuð n. pr. m. 162, 4. 235, 17.
Grugyn n. pr. m. 203, 19.
grwm-seid *having a dark-coloured haft.* 194, 15; MA. 954a 2. Cf. gwrym-dudet FB. 83,19; gweilch gwrym-de 84, 4.
grym *force, strength, effort.* 151,13. 184, 24.
gwad m. *a denial.* 231, 12.
gwadu *to deny, refuse;* pres. subj. pass. gwatter 239, 6.
gwae *woe!* g. a. *woe to him who..* 225, 4. 10. g. wann *woe to the weak!* 226, 2.
gwaed m. *blood.* 150, 10.
gwaed-lyd *bloody.* 184, 9.
gwaeð *an outcry, cry of distress;* pl. -eu.
gwaeth *worse;* gwaethaf *worst.*
gwa-hanu *to separate.* past. subj. pass. gwehenid 183, 5. pass. part. gwahanedig.
gwa-hawð *to invite.*
gwal *a lair.* 202, 1; 203, 15.
gwala f. *a fill, sufficiency.* 200, 3.
gwalch *a hawk;* metaph. *a leader;* pl. gweilch.
gwalch-lan *a band of heroes?* 233,23. MA. 150a, 40; 161 B 20.
Gwalchmei n. pr. m. 173, 31.
gwal-par *strong-speared.* 233, 24.
gwalstawd m. *an interpreter.* MA. 128a, 42. Cf. Rhŷs, Celt. Heathendom, p. 489.
gwallaw *to serve liquor.* 235, 1. Anc. Laws, I. 32. § viii.
gwallt *the hair of the head.*
I. gwan *to pierce;* pret. ind. act. sg. 3 gwant, § 133 a; past. ind. pass. gwanpwyd, § 134, (f).
2. gwan (gwann) *feeble, weak.*
gwanar *a chief, lord.* 233, 24. MA. 181 a 40; 203 b 19; 220 a 34; 221 a 45; b 37.
gwanas *a clasp, buckle.* 239, 18. FB. 250, 21. 18, 19; 23, 16; 59, 14; MA. 144 b 26; 177 a 19; 205 b 4; 269 a 29; 299 b 46; 48.
gwanhäu *to weaken.* 178, 6.
gwanwyn m. *spring.* 155, 27.
gwaradwyð m. *disgrace, shame, reproach.* 150, 12.
gwaradwyðus *disgraceful.* 180, 29.
gwarafun *to forbid, refuse.* 168, 25.
gwarandaw *to listen, hear.*
gwarawd, see gwa-red.
gwar-chadw *to guard, protect;* g. ar *to besiege.* 146, 18.
gwarchae *to besiege;* m. *a siege.*
gwar-der *humanity, pity.* 153, 33.
gware *to play;* m. *a game, play;* pl. gwary-eu. Cf. chware.
gware n. pr. m.
gwa-red *to succour, help, rescue; help, deliverance.* pret. ind. act. sg. 3 gwarawd.
gwar-eð *meekness.* 238, 2. RB. 1I. 1223.
gwarth *disgrace, shame.* 233, 23.
gwarthaf *upper part, surface.* ar w. *on the top of* 241, 20.
gwartheg *kine, cattle.*
Gwarthegyd n. pr. m. 204, 9.
gwary-yð m. *a juggler.* 147, 13. Hg. II. 10, 15.
gwas m. *a youth, lad, servant;* pl. gweis.
Gwasgwin *Gascony.* 160, 4.
gwassanaeth *service, attendance.*
gwassanaethu *to serve.*
gwassanaethwr m. *a servant.*
gwa-sgaru (tr. and intr.) *to disperse, scatter.* past part. gwasgaredig.
gwa-sgawd *shelter, protection.* 148, 28; 156,2.
gwasgu *to press, crush.*
gwastad *level, even, constant, temperate;* yn w. *constantly.*

gwastadawl *constant.* 169, 4. v.l. (sic leg.)
gwawr *dawn.* 173, 15. metaph. 234, 8.
gwayw (gwaew) m. and f. *a lance, spear;* pl. gwewyr. 175, 2.
gwðam, gwðost, see gwybod.
gwedi prep., conj. *after.* § 174. 210
gweð f. *form, fashion.* pa (py) weð *how?*
gweði f. *a prayer.* 161, 28.
gweðiaw *to pray.* 215, 1.
gweðu *to befit, to submit.* 144, 6. 148, 11. 165, 5.
gweðus *fitting, meet, seemly.*
Gweðw n. pr. m. 201, 8.
gweðw *deserted, desolate, lonely.* 225, 9.
gwehenid, see gwahanu.
gweilch, see gwalch.
gwein f. *a sheath, scabbard.*
gweir-glawð f. *a meadow;* pl. -gloðyeu.
gweis, see gwas.
1. gweith m. *work, task,* yg g. *at work.* 226, 5.
2. gweith f. *a turn, time;* dyð-g. *once;* weithon (weithyon) *this time, now;* pl. -eu *sometimes.* -eu . . . -eu ereill *now . . . again.* 187, 18.
gweith-red m. *an action, deed;* pan del ar weithred *cum ad actum accedit* 167, 21. RB. II 846.
gweled *to see, provide, arrange.*
gweledigaeth f. *a vision, dream.*
gweli f. *a wound;* pl. -eu, -oeð.
gwely m. *a bed.* 241, 11.
gwell *better;* 204, 26. cyfarch g. *to greet.*
gwellău *to improve, amend.* 214,12.
gwelleu *shears, scissors.* 203, 25.
gwellig leg. gwelling? *to distribute?* 235,2. FB. 45,15. MA. 172 b 15; 181 b 39 v.l., 140 b 12.
gwellt (gwell) *grass.* 223, 12. Cf. Peredur, ed. K. Meyer, § 80, 16.
gwen *a smile.* 225, 22.
gwen-gan *white and fair.* 227, 26.
Gwen-hwyfar (Ir. Find-abair) n. pr. f. 172, 20.
gwenith m. *wheat.* 196, 3.
gwenn, see gwynn.
Gwenn f. *the name of Arthur's shield.*
gwen-wlad f. *a happy land.* 234, 8. = *Heaven,* MA. 173 b 24; 177 a 42; 189 b 20; 222 b 38.
gwenwyn m. *poison.* 202, 4.
Gwenwynwyn n. pr. m. 233, 24.
gwer-, see gor-
gwerin-dawd f. *virginity.* 238, 3. LA. 17, 4; 65, 21.
gwern (coll.) *alder-trees.* G. Abwy n. l.
gwers f. *a while, space of time.* 197, 29. 194, 6. pob eil-w. *alternately, in succession.* gwers . . g. arall 175, 29.
gwersyll *a camp;* pl. -eu.
gwerth m. *price, reward.*
gwerth-fawr *valuable.* comp. gwerthfawrogach 169, 1.
gweryð f. *a virgin.* 161, 5; pl. -on.
gwestei m. *a guest.* 193, 9.
gwewyr, see gwayw.
gwiðon f. *a witch.*
gwin m. *wine.*
gwir (1) *true, truly.* g.-aberth 150, 17. g. gwell *truly better.* 226, 3. (2) *justice, right.* 223, 27.
gwirawd *a beverage, drink;* pl. gwirodeu. 164, 2. 235, 1.
gwisg f. *dress, clothing;* pl. -oeð.
gwisgaw *to put on, wear;* part. gwisgedig *dressed, clad.*
gwlad f. *a kingdom, country;* pl. -oeð, gwledi; g. pressent *the present world.* G. yr Haf n. l. 202, 29.
gwledig m. *a ruler.*
gwledychu *to rule, reign.*
gwleð f. *a feast, banquet.* 238, 1.
Gwndy n. l. 223, 10.
gwnel, see gwneuthur.
gwneuthur *to make, do, form.* § 142.
gwnn, see gwybod.
gwor-saf *support, bulwark.* 236, 9.
gworsseð, see gorseð.
gwosparth *support* 233, 23. Cf. gosparth Brython MA. 124 b 38.
gwr m. *a man, husband, vassal;* y gwr *he who* 239, 10; (applied to God) 203, 17. pl. gwyr *men, soldiers* 179, 11.
gwrach f. *a hag, witch.*
gwrageð, see gwreig.
gwrawl *manly, brave, stout;* pl. gwrolyon. 139, 3.
Gwrbothu n. pr. m. 206, 3.
gwr-da m. *a noble.* pl. gwyrda; gwyrda seint *holy men;* MA. 142a.
gwrð *strong, vehement.* 233, 1. 235, 13; g.-fleið *a fierce wolf* 233, 3.
gwreig f. *a woman, wife;* pl. gwrageð.

gwreigawl *womanish, cowardly;* pl. **gwreigolyon.** 186, 17.
Gwr-gi (Ir. Fer-chū) n. pr. m.
Gwr-gwst (Ir. Fer-gus) n. pr. m.
gwrhäu *to pay homage.*
gwr-hyd *manliness, valour, bravery, strength.*
Gwrhyr n. pr. m.
gwrteith *to dress, mend, temper; a dressing*; 195, 10. Cf. Hg. 38, 37. pl. **-yeu.**
gwrth (wrth) voc. (1) prep. *against, towards, for, for the purpose of;* **wrth hynny** *because of that, therefore;* **y-wrth** *from, of; in comparison with.* §§ 53, 194. (2) conj. *because.* § 231.
gwrth-dir *borderland.* 207, 12.
gwrth-eb *to answer, reply.*
gwrth-gassedh *rebellion, dissension.* 174, 4. Hg. 276, 2. LA. 15, 26; CM. 110, 28.
gwrth-od *to give back, reject, renounce* 165, 7. pres. ind. act. sg. 3 **gwrthyd** 154, 14.
gwr-thrwm *very heavy.* 149, 28. 172, 26.
gwrthryn *resistance, opposition.* 233, 23.
gwrth-wyneb *opposite, adverse;* **yg g. y mynydh** *facing the mountain;* **talu yn y g.** *to pay in return.* 142, 23.
gwrth-wynebu (y) *to oppose, resist.*
gwrthyd, see **gwrth-od.**
gwrych (coll.) *bristles.* **G. Ereint** n. pr. m. 203, 19.
gwrys *strife, hostility.* 197, 31. FB. 63, 25; 85, 12; 159, 5; 193, 6; 199, 20; 200, 9.
gwrysg (coll.) *the smaller branches of a tree.* 225, 11.
Gwy *the Wye.* **Aber G.** 206, 17.
Gwyar n. pr. m. 173, 31.
gwybod *to know, recognize; knowledge, courtesy.* § 143.
gwybydiad m. *an eye-witness;* pl. **gwybydyeid.**
gwychyr *stout, resolute, bold;* superb. **gwychraf.** 183, 13; 191, 4; 192, 10.
Gwydre n. pr. m. 204, 19.
1. **gwyd** m. (coll.) *wood, trees* 241, 13. 21. *mast of a ship* 242, 8.
2. **gwyd** *presence;* **yny vyd, hyny vyd** *lo! behold! thereupon;* 193, 1; 198, 13. 199, 27. **yn eu g.** *at once* 202, 24.
gwydad, gwydyad, see **gwybod.**
gwyd-bwyll *some game like chess;* 164, 24; 167, 3. See RB. 153, 5.
Gwydel *an Irishman;* pl. **Gwydyl.**
gwyl-fa f. *festival, watch, ward;* pl. **-eu.**
gwyliad m. *a guardian.*
gwyllt *wild;* **aeth yg g.** *he became mad.* RB. 100, 6, 8. **Cyledyr W.**
gwyneb (wyneb) *face.* 209, 23. 216, 27.
Gwynedh *Venedotia, North Wales.* 161, 22.
gwynn m., **gwenn** f. *white, blessed;* pl. **-ion. gwyn y fyd** *happy he!* 170, 18. **Gwynn** n. pr. m. 200, 25. **Avon Wenn** 173, 23.
gwyn-seid *having a white haft.* 194, 15. Cf. Laws I. 586, 726. II. 866, cvii.
gwynnyeith *pain, torture.* 231, 32. FB. 185, 5. FB. 303, 3; MA. 193 a 13.
gwynt m. *wind, favourable wind.*
gwyr, see **gwybod.**
Gwyr n. l. *Gower.* 205, 24.
gwyrdh *green, fresh, vigorous.* 236, 25.
gwyr-häu *to incline, bend.* 241, 13. FB. 241, 8.
1. **gwys** f. *a summons, command.*
2. **gwys,** see **gwybod.**
3. **gwys** *a sow.* 205, 17.
gwyssyaw *to summon.* 198, 24.
gwystyl m. *a hostage;* pl. **gwystlon.**
gwystyn m. *a withered stump.* 197, 4.
Gwythyr n. pr. m. *Victor.*
gynn, see **cyn.**
gynt, see **cynt.**
gyr, see 2. **geir.**
gyrru *to send, despatch, drive, hasten* 199, 6; **ry-yrru (reherru)** 213, 4.
gyt, see **cyt.**
1. **ha,** see 2. **ac.**
2. **ha** interj. § 243.
hac, see 2. **ac.**
haedu *to deserve, claim, merit.*
hael *generous, liberal;* pl. **-on.**
haelder m. *generosity.* 145, 17.
hael-fonedh *one of noble descent.* 234, 21.
haf *summer.* **Gwlad yr H.** 202, 29.
haf-dydh *a summer's day.* 242, 6.
hafod *a summer dwelling.* 225, 9. Cf. RB. II. 277, 5.
Hafren f. *the Severn.*
hagen *however, yet, indeed.*

han-bwyllaw *to consider, remember* 190, 27. RB. 120; 17315.
handit, see **hanfod.**
han-denu *to have leisure, linger.* 190, 27 v. l.
han-fod *to arise, issue; proceed from, descend.* § 160.
hanner (hanher) m. *a half, middle.* 140, 20. 179, 20. **h. dydh** *midday;* **h. nos** *midnight;* **h. gwr** *a coward* 170, 24. 180, 32.
hardh *fair, beautiful, comely.*
hawdit, see **haf-dydh.**
hawdh *easy, pleasant;* compar. **haws.**
1. **hawl** f. *a claim.*
2. **hawl,** see **holy.**
hawlwr m. *a claimant.*
haws, see **hawdh.**
hayach *wellnigh, almost.* 167, 6. 192, 15.
hayachen *almost.* 207, 23.
hayarn *iron, sword.* 160, 4.
1. **heb, hebyr** *says.* § 151.
2. **heb** (voc.) prep. *without, besides.* §§ 16 (i); 53; 175.
hebrwng *to conduct, escort.*
hebyr, see 1. **heb.**
hedhiw *to-day.*
hedhwch *peace.*
hedhychu *to make peace, pacify.*
hefyd *also, in addition.*
hegarwch m. *kindliness.* 226, 3.
heibaw adv. *past, by.* 156, 14. 204, 3.
heint m. *a sickness, disease.* 149, 28.
hela *to hunt, chase.*
helw *possession;* **ar y h.** *in his possession.* 152, 11; 204, 25.
helym f. *a helmet.* 159, 22.
hen *old; an old man.* superl. **hynaf.**
hen-dad m. *an ancestor;* pl. **-eu.**
heneint (henein) *old age.* 139, 9.
1. **heno,** see **enw.**
2. **heno** *to-night.*
henw, see **enw.**
herw *a plundering, pillaging.* 235, 15. Cp. **Gwynfyd herwr ywr hirnos** MA. 361 a 17.
herwydh *according to, by;* **yn h.** *according to;* **yn h. y nerth** *with all his might.* **h. fal** 165, 2.
hestawr, *a corn measure of about two bushels.* 199, 17.
heul f. and m. *the sun.*
heussawr m. *a herdsman.* 195, 3. FB. 174, 1.
hi *she, her.* Emphatic **hihi,** conjunct. **hitheu.** § 45.
hin *weather.* 209, 22.
hir *long, tall;* **drwy h. o amser** *for a long time* 141, 5. Compar. **hwy.** **Hir** n. pr. m. 206, 1.
hir-flawdh *a long tumult.* 235, 15.
Hir-las n. pr. m. 178, 16. 184, 10.
hitheu, see **hi.**
hob : dan eu hwb ac eu h. *pushing and kicking them.* 207, 22.
hoedel *lifetime, life.* 152, 18.
hoff-der m. *a boasting.* 174, 34. LA. 143, 22.
holy (holi) *to claim, ask, search, demand*; imper. sg. 2 **hawl.**
holl, see **oll.**
hollawl *whole, entire;* **yn h.** *completely, altogether.*
hollti *to split, cleave.*
honni *to proclaim.* 159, 25.
honno, see **hwnnw.**
Howel (Hywel) n. pr. m.
Humyr *the Humber.* 145, 11.
Huandaw n. pr. m. 204, 23.
1. **hun** *sleep.* 172, 26.
2. **hun,** pl. **hunein** *self.* § 60.
hwb, see **hob.**
hwch m. and f. *a pig.* 203, 11.
hwnn m., **honn** f., **hynn** n. *this.* pl. **hynn.** §§ 61; 62.
hwnt *yonder;* **h. ac yman (yma)** *here and there.* 185, 25.
hwnnw m., **honno** f., **hynny** n. *that.* pl. **hynny.** §§ 61, 62.
1. **hwy (wy), hwynt** *they, them.* Emphatic **(h)wyntwy,** conjunct. **(h)wynteu.** § 45.
2. **hwy,** see **hir.**
hwyl f. *a sail;* pl. **-eu.**
hwylaw *to sail.* 157, 28.
hwynt, see 1. **hwy.**
hwyred *slowness, tardiness.* 151, 19.
hy *bold.* 239, 19.
1. **hyd** f. *length;* prep. *as far as, up to,* § 177; conj. *as long as, as far as,* § 214; **h. na** *so that not* § 214; *until almost* 154, 13; **h. pan** *until, so that* § 225; **h. tra** *while.* § 230. **ba h.** *whither?*
hy-dwf *well-grown, tall.* 158, 18.
hydh *a stag;* pl. **-od.** 241, 12.
Hy-gwydh n. pr. m. 202, 19.
hynaf, see **hen.**
hynefidh m. *an elder.* 210, 3.
hynn, see **hwnn.**
hynny, see **hwnnw.**

hynt f. *a course, path, journey.* **ar h.** *immediately.* 174, 16. 175, 6.
hyny vyδ, see 2. **gwyδ**.

1. **i** (voc.) prep., see 1. **y**.
2. **i**, see **mi**.
3. **i**, see **yδ**.
iach *sound, whole.* 200, 16.
iachäu *to heal.*
iad *the upper part of the head.* 230, 32.
iaen *ice, a sheet of ice.* 241, 12.
iarll (jarll) m. *an earl;* pl. **ieirll.**
iawn (yaun, jaun) (1) *right, just;* **ymlaδ yn i.** *to fight in reality.* superl. **-haf, -af** 198, 30. 31. (2) *a recompense, satisfaction.* 166, 15. 18.
iawnder m. *right.*
iδaw, iδi, see 1. **y**.
Iδew *a Jew;* pl. **-on.**
iechid *health, salvation.* 158, 21.
ieith f. *language;* pl. **-oeδ, -eu.**
Iessu *Jesus.*
ieuanc *young;* superl. **jeuaf.**
ieuenctid *early manhood; youth.*
Ieuan n. pr. m. *John.* 231, 26.
in, see **yn. ima, ina**, see **yma, yna.**
inheu, inneu, see **mi.**
ir-lloneδ m. and f. *wrath.* 159, 20.
is *below, beneath.* §§ 53, 178.
Iscawyn n. pr. m. 204, 20.
Islont *Iceland.*
issod *below.* 199, 5.
Iwerδon f. *Ireland.* 155, 28.

llad (Ir. laith) *liquor, drink.* Sic leg. 230, 31? Cf. FB. 204, 22; 23.
lladrad *robbery.* 222, 17.
llaδ *to strike, slay, cut, cut off, kill.* impf. ind. pl. 3 **lleδynt**; impf. pass. **lleδid**; pret. pass. **llas.** p. part. **llaδedig.** § 134(a).
Llaesgenym n. pr. m. 204, 25.
llaessäu *to relax, abate, moderate.*
llafur m. *labour, exertion, toil, effort.*
llafuryaw *to labour, endeavour, attempt.* 140, 13. 159, 15. 166, 21. 180, 32. 186, 9.
llafuryus (llafurus) *laborious.* 191, 27.
llafyn *a blade*; pl. **llafneu, llafnawr.**
y llall *the other*; pl. **y lleill.** § 70.
Llamrei *the name of Arthur's mare.* 201, 20.
llann *an enclosure, land.* 223, 5; **Ll. daf** n. l. *Llandaff.*
llanw (1) *to fill.* 175, 7. (2) *tide.* 198, 7. 209, 4. 216, 11.
llary *generous, gracious, gentle.* 233, 31. MA. 249 b 48; 247 a 48; 241 b 42.
llas, see **llaδ.**
llathru *to glitter, glisten.*
llaw f. *a hand*; pl. **dwy-law. cymhell y l.** *to force to surrender*; 152, 23; **rag ll.** *at hand, imminent.*
llawch *protection.* 233, 6. MA. 192 b 8; 247 b 6.
llawen *glad, gay, merry.* **ll. yw genyf** *gaudeo* 170, 13.
llawer *many, much.*
llawhethan 227, 28 = **llywethan**[1] MA. 73 a 18 v.l. *one of the constellations.* Cf. Barddas I., 404.
llaw-hir *long-handed.*
llawn *full.*
llawr m. *the ground; the earth*; 239, 19. 234, 10. 239, 9. **yr ll.** *to the ground*; **y lawr** *down.*
lle m. *place*; pl. **-oeδ.** *where* 225, 13. **yn lle** *instead of, for* 180, 2; **yn y lle** *immediately*; **yssid le iδaw gwynaw** *he has reason to lament*; **pa le** *where?* with subjunctive clause, *where.* 225, 13.
llechu *to lurk, hide.* 177, 22.
lled m. *breadth.* 154, 7.
Lledewig, see **Llywedig.**
lled-lwm *half-bare, half-naked.* **Gwrgwst Ll.** n. pr. m. 200, 28.
llefaru *to speak.* 229, 31.
llef m. *voice, sound.*
llefein *to shout, cry*; m. *a shouting.*
lleferyδ *to say*; *speech, utterance.* 139, 22. 202, 16. 220, 4.
lleng *a legion.*
Llengrys n. l. *Lengriae.* 179, 6.
llei *less, inferior.* 162, 1.
lleidyr m. *a thief*; pl. **lladron.**
1. **lleill**, see **llall.**
2. **lleill: y ll.** *one of two.* 194, 17. §71.
lleis *voice.* 153, 4.
lleissawn *generous, liberal.* 235, 11. MA. 154b 11; 159b 8.
lleith *death.* 232, 2. 233, 7.
llemenig *striding, bounding.* **Cadwr Ll.** n. pr. m. 161, 23.
llenwi *to fill.* 206, 22.
Lles n. pr. m. *Lucius.* 157, 31.
llesg *feeble, faint.* 191, 20.
llesgeδ f. *feebleness, sloth, cowardice.* 166, 30; 167, 5. 9. 180, 23.
lletty m. *a lodging*; pl. **-eu.** 195, 9.

[1] A popular etymology for *Leviathan.*

lletty-wr m. *a host.* 195, 9.
Lleu n. pr. m.
lleufer f. and m. *light*; pl. **-eu.**
llew m. *a lion.* 186, 30. 235, 11.
llewenyδ *joy.*
llewychu *to shine.* **llewychi** 232, 7, leg. **llewychei**? MA. 243 b 9.
lleyg m. *a lay-man*; pl. **-yon.**
lliaws m. *a multitude, host.*
llicriδ, see **llygru.**
llid m. *anger, indignation.*
llidyaw *to become angry.*
llin, see 1. **llynn.**
llinad (llin-had) coll. m. *linseed*, sg. **llin-hedyn.** 199, 18. 20.
llithraw *to slip, glide along, pass by.* **ll. at** *to flock to.* 145, 23. **llithrei** 203, 20 leg. **llathrei** *glistened*; cf. RB. 2, 2.
1. **lliw (llyw)** m. *colour, hue.* 164, 13. 241, 16. 2. **lliw**, see 1. **llyw.**
llof-ruδ (lit. *red-handed*) *a slayer of men.* 233, 10.
llong f. *ship*; pl. **-eu.**
lloneid *fill, the full of anything.*
llosg *arson.* 223, 1.
llosgi *to burn, set on fire.*
llu m. *a host, army*; pl. **-oeδ.**
lluched *lightning.* 227, 25. pl. **llucheid.** 185, 27.
Lluδ n. pr. m. 198, 18. See Rhŷs, Celt. Heath. p. 125.
lluδed *fatigue.* 207, 9.
lluδyas *to hinder.* 208, 21.
lluest *a camp*; pl. **-eu.**
Llundein *London.*
llunyaethu *to arrange, dispose, array.* 146, 5. 165, 19. 182, 14.
llunyeithaw *to arrange, put in order.* 178, 2.
lluoss-og-rwyδ *a multitude.* 141, 28.
llurug f. *a coat of mail.* 150, 25.
llu-yδ m. *a hosting, military expedition.* 222, 14; 223, 32.
llw m. *an oath.* 221, 4.
llwch *a lake.* 229, 5. 241, 8. **Ll. Tawy** 205, 25.
llwdyn m. *the young of animals*; pl. **llydyn.** 203, 4.
llwfyr m. *a coward.* 242, 9.
llwgyr *harm, damage, disadvantage.* 218, 25.
llwm *bare, poor.* 226, 4. 241, 1. 242, 8.
llwrw (Ir. lorg *track*): **yn ll.** *as regards?* 198, 17. *loco, vice*, Davies.
llwyd *grey.*
Llwyδawg n. pr. m. 205, 6.
Llwyδeu n. pr. m. 202, 25.
llwyn (lluhyn) m. *a wood, grove, bush*; pl. **-eu.**
llwyr *complete*; **yn ll.** *wholly, completely.*
llwyth m. *a tribe, people.* 227, 27.
Llychlyn *Norway.* 157, 9:
Llychlyn-wr m. *a Norseman.* 157, 11.
Llychwr n. l. *Loughor.* 205, 5.
llydan *broad, extensive.*
Llydaw *Armorica, Brittany.*
Llydewig *Armorican, Breton.* **Glythmyr Ll.** 201, 12.
llydw *a host, household, community*; 223, 10; 13. See MA. 308 b 28, 249 a 14, 343 a 51.
llyfyr m. *a book.*
llyfyr-der m. *cowardice.* 233, 7.
llygad m. *an eye.* **taraw l.** *in the twinkling of an eye, immediately.*
Llygad-ruδ n. pr. m. *Red-eye.* 206, 2.
llygru *to corrupt, mar, spoil, violate.* 167, 4. 189, 3. 195, 13; *to become foul* 241, 3.
llyngcu *to swallow.*
llynghes f. *a fleet.* 145, 9.
llym *keen, sharp.* 241, 1.
llyma *lo here!* 169, 17 (*en*). § 244.
llyna *lo there!* 169, 16 (*en*). § 244.
1. **llynn (llin)** f. *a lake, pool*; pl. **llynneu. Ll. Lliwan** 206, 17 = Linn Liuan, Nennius ed. Mommsen, p. 214.
2. **llynn** *a drink.* 193, 15.
llynnwyn m. *a pool.* 225, 1. Leg. Wall. 480 b 4.
Llyr n. pr. m. 139, 1. 206, 19.
llys f. *a court, palace*; pl. **llyssoeδ.**
llyssu *to reject.* 218, 7.
llythyr m. *an epistle, letter*; pl. **-eu.**
1. **llyw (lliw)** m. *a leader.* 235, 11. 236, 23.
2. **llyw**, see 1. **lliw.**
Llywelyn n. pr. m.
llywodraeth f. *management.*
llywodyr m. *a leader, commander*; pl. **llywodron.**
llywyaw (llywaw) *to rule, direct.*

ma, see **mae.**
mab m. *a son*; pl. **meib, meibon.**
Mabon n. pr. m. 195, 24. See Rhŷs, Celt. Heath., p. 21.

mach m. *a surety, guarantor*; pl. meicheu, meychyeu. 210, 20; 21; 217, 14; 221, 25.
Madawg n. pr. m. 204, 29.
maδeu *to forgive*; *forgiveness*. 231, 4
maδeueint *forgiveness, remission*. 150, 20.
mae (may) *is*; pl. maent. *what is?* 219, 7. §§ 152. 154 (a).
maeδu *to beat, strike, pound*. 159, 24. 183, 23.
maen m. *stone*; pl. mein; m. freuan *quern-stone*. m.-dy m. *a stone house*. 198, 15.
maer (mair) m. *a steward, reeve*; pl. meirri. 202, 7. 219, 9.
maerony f. *stewardship*. 221, 18.
maes (mays) m. *an open field, open court, battlefield*; roδi cad ar f. *to give battle*; cawssant y m. *they won the day*.
maestawd *majesty*; maes m. *field of judgment* 229, 13. MA. 165 a 22; 171 b 51; 195 a 9.
magu *to rear, bring up, to produce, engender, conceive*. pres. ind. sg. 3 mecciδ 242, 9. FB. 244, 21. MA. 363 a 21; 33.
magwyr f. *a wall*. 198, 12.
mal (fal) conj. *as*; *when*. § 216.
malpei (malphei) *as if*. y m. 195, 11.
mam f. *mother*.
man *fine, small, insignificant*. 184, 18; 196, 10.
manach m. *a monk*; pl. meneich.
manachlawg f. *a monastery, convent*; 188, 22. m. gwrageδ 190, 15. pl. -logoeδ 165, 4.
Manawyδan n. pr. m. 206, 19.
march m. *a horse*; coll. *horsemen*. 202, 30. pl. meirch, meirych. 143, 15. 162, 20. ar feirych *on horseback* 174, 18.
marchawg m. *a knight*; pl. marchogyon.
marchogaeth *horsemanship, riding*.
1. marw *dead*; pl. meirw.
2. marw *to die*. 145, 1. 149, 9.
marwawr (pl.) *cinders*. 228, 6.
marwolyaeth (marwolaeth) f. *death*. 145, 7.
mawl, see moli.
mawr *great, big*; compar. mwy; super. mwyhaf, mwyaf.
mawr-fuδ *great gain or advantage*; 233, 11.
Maxen n. pr. m. *Maximus*.
mecciδ, see magu.
meδ *mead*.
meδ-gell f. *a mead-cellar, cellar*. 164, 2. 204, 27
meδ-gorn m. *a mead-horn*; pl. -girn 235, 1.
meδ-gwyn *a mead-banquet*. 235, 1. 236, 13.
meδu *to possess*. 181, 5.
meδwl m. *thought, purpose, mind*.
meδyant m. *possession, power, authority*.
meδylyaw *to think, consider, meditate*.
mefyl f. and m. *disgrace, shame, insult*. 225, 10.
meglyd (yn) *to grip, grasp, cling to*. 176, 14; 202, 20. FB. 51, 12; 141, 29; 183, 24; 247, 7.
megys conj. *as, like, as it were*. § 217: m. na *as if not*; with subj. *so that* 145, 23. 180, 3.
mehyn *place, country?* 229, 2. FB. 123, 28; 133, 25; 169, 1; 190, 29; 202, 8; 210, 10.
Mei *May*. 208, 5.
meicheu, see mach.
mein, see maen.
meint f. *size, number, quantity, length*; *such*. pa f. *how much*.
Meir *Mary (the Virgin)*.
meirw, see marw.
melyn *yellow*.
melys *sweet*. 170, 18.
Mellt n. pr. m. 201, 11.
menegi *to make known, declare*.
meneich, see manach.
Menw n. pr. m. 201, 28.
merch f. *a daughter*; pl. -ed.
Merchyr; dyw M. *on Wednesday*. 240, 10.
meredig *irrational, foolish*. 193, 5. RB. 115, 18. Laws I., 260.
merthyr m. *a martyr*. 161, 4.
messur m. *a measure, impression*. 202, 26.
messuredig *measured, according to measure*. 199, 19.
meu *mine*; § 55.
Meugant n. pr. m.
Meuruc n. pr. m. *Mauricius*.
meycheu, see mach.
mi (fi, fy, i) *I, me*. Emphatic mifi, conjunctive minheu, inneu. § 45.
1. mil f. *a thousand*; pl. -yoeδ.
2. mil m. *an animal*; coll. 204, 5. pl. -eid.

mil-wr m. *a warrior*.
milwryaeth f. *prowess, warfare*. 164, 15; 175, 25; 177, 8; 185, 30.
mill-dir f. *a mile*.
minheu, minneu, see mi.
mis m. *a month*.
moch (coll.) *swine*.
moδ m. *manner*. 191, 30.
modrwy f. *a ring*; pl. -eu.
moes *custom*. 193, 7. RB. II. 300, 1.
molawd *praise*. 237, 4.
moli *to praise, commend*. pres. ind. sg. 3 mawl. 233, 11.
molyant *praise, fame*. 146, 2. 4 (*probitas*); 156, 21; 181, 19; 185, 17.
1. mor (voc.) with adjectives, *how, so, as*.
2. mor m. *sea*; pl. -oeδ.
morδwyd m. *a thigh*. 205, 23.
Morgannwg *Glamorgan*.
mor-gerwyn f. *a maelstrom, whirlpool*. 154, 13.
mor-gymlawδ *the raging of the sea*. 235, 13. MA. 173a 31; 193b 7; 254a 44; 266a 29.
mor-grug (lit. *anthill*), *ants*; sg. -yn m. 199, 20.
Moruδ n. pr. m.
morwyn f. *a maiden*; pl. morynyon.
mud *dumb, mute*.
mul m. *a mule*; pl. -yoeδ.
muner m. *a lord, king*.
mur m. *a wall, rampart*; pl. -oeδ.
y Mureif *Morray*. 152, 28.
murmur *a growling*. 172, 27.
mwg m. *smoke*. 199, 23.
mwy, mwyhaf, see mawr.
mwyalch f. *a blackbird*. 196, 17. 20.
mwyhäu *to increase, augment*.
mwynhäu (muenhau) *to use, employ, enjoy, profit*. 199, 33; 216, 4; 217, 26; 218, 1.
Myg-δwnn *smoke-dun*, or for Myng-δwn *dusky-maned, the name of a horse*. 201, 8. Gwynn m. 206, 15.
myhun *I myself*. § 57.
myn (in oaths) *by*. 203, 1. 206, 7.
mynaches m. *a nun*; pl. mynachesseu.
myned *to go*; m. dros *to break through, penetrate*; § 140.
mynnu (mennu) *to desire, wish, seek, endeavour*.
mynwent f. *a graveyard*, 188, 17. LA. 84, 8.
mynwgyl *neck*. 176, 14.
mynych *frequent*.
mynyched m. *frequency*. y m. hwnnw *so often*. 191, 1. v. l.
mynyδ m. *a mountain*; pl. -eδ. y fynyδ *upward, up*.
Mynyw *Menevia, St. David's*.
mysg *midst*.
y mywn (mewn) *within, in*; o f. *inside, within*. § 181.

1. na (spir.), before vowels nad *not*. § 236.
2. na (voc.), before vowels nag *not*. § 237.
3. na (spir.), before vowels nac *nor*. § 238. na . . na *either . . or* 168, 2.
naccäu *to refuse*.
nachaf *lo, behold!* 187, 21. (voc.) 153, 16. 189, 3. 193, 2.
1. nad (nat), see 1. na.
2. nad *is not* (dependent). § 155 (e).
Nadolig *Christmas*. 154, 23.
Naf m. *the Lord*. 235, 16. 236, 28.
1. nag *a refusal*. 202, 10. 16.
2. nag, see 2. 3. na.
nam, see 1. 3. na.
namyn, namwyn conj. *except*; after a negative, *but*. § 219.
nant *a valley*; pl. nanheu 229, 32.
1. nar = na + def. art.
2. nar = ra + ry. 184, 1. § 95 N.
naw (nas.) *nine*.
nawδ m. *protection, sanctuary*.
nawfed *ninth*. 208, 5.
neb *any*; *any one, someone*. y neb a *who*. § 64.
nef m. *heaven*; pl. -oeδ.
neges f. *a business, affair, quest*.
nei m. *a nephew*; pl. nyeint.
neill *one (of two)*; ar neill-du *on one side*. § 69; 71
neill-du-edig *apart, aside*.
neirthyad m. *a strengthener, stay*. 227, 2; FB. 241, 21; MA. 193b, 1.
neithawr *a wedding feast*; pl. neithoreu, -yeu 189, 9.
ner m. *a lord*. 233, 5.
nerth m. and f. *support, help, strength, power*; pl. -oeδ.
nerth-fawr *mighty*. 233, 5.
1. nes prep. *until*. § 182.
2. nes, nessaf, see agos.
nessäu *to draw near*. 147, 16.
nessed *nearness*. yr n. *however near*. 154, 20.
Nethawg n. pr. m.
1. neu (voc.) *or, nor*. § 220.
2. neu *now*, before vowels neud; with ry, neur. § 221.

newidyaw *to exchange (blows).* 186, 8; 191, 24. tra newityww an deheuoeδ *quando dextras conferemus.* 170, 19.
newyδ *new.* **o n.** *anew, again, recently.* 178, 28. 179, 4. 195, 15 v. l.
newyn m. *hunger.* 149, 5; 186, 30.
ni (ny) *we, us.* Emphatic **nini**, conjunct. **ninneu.** §§ 45 (a).
nifer m. *a number, host, retinue*; pl. **-oeδ.**
no (spir.), **nog**, with def. art. **nor**, conj. *than.* § 222.
nodi *to mark, notify, specify.* 199, 18. pluperf. pass. sg. 3 **ry nodyδoeδ.** 205, 10.
noδi *to protect, preserve*; pres. subj. sg. 3 **notho (nodho)** 193, 8.
noe, see **no.**
noeth *naked, bare, unprotected, unarmed*; pl. **-on.**
noethi *to bare, to unsheathe.*
Normanyeid *Normans.*
nos f. *night.*
nottäu *to mark, specify.* 201, 24.
Nuδ n. pr. m. 200, 25.
Nwython n. pr. m.
1. ny (spir.) before vowels **nyd**, *not.* § 235.
2. ny, see **ni.**
1. nyd, see **1. ny.**
2. nyd *is not.* § 155 (δ).
nyeint, see **nei.**
Nyfer *the river Nevern.* 204, 12.
nym, nys, see **1. ny.**
1. nyth m. *a nest*; pl. **-od.** 154, 3.
2. nyth, see **1. ny.**
nyw, see § 49 (c). 233, 2. 8. 12.

1. o (a) (voc.) prep. *of, from, with, for;* with passive verb, *by.* **o gyfreith** *according to law* 211, 17. § 183. with def. art. **or (ar).**
2. o (spir.), before vowels **od, or, os** conj. *if*; neg. **ony, onyd**; with the pres. of copula **os**, neg. **onyd.** § 224.
obry *below.*
1. oc prep. = **1. o** before pronouns beginning with a vowel. § 183.
2. oc ? 230, 16.
och *ah! alas!* **o. fi** *ah me!* 142, 21.
odi *to snow.* 241 passim.
odid *scarcely, hardly, rarely.* 226, 6. 232, 11; 13.
odolygyssant, see **adolwyn.**
oδieithyr *outside* 158, 26; 164, 19; **o. hynny** *besides.* 161, 34, 162, 21.
oδyma *hence.*
oδyna *thence, from that time.*
oδyno *from there.*
oδy-rwng *from between.* 196, 19.
oδy-uchtaw *above it.*
oe, see **1. o. oeδ, oeδynt**, see **bod.**
oed (oyd) m. *age*; *appointed time, respite, delay.* 208, 20.
oer *cold*; *dire, cruel, deadly.*
o.-grynedig *fearfully trembling.* 152, 16.
1. oes f. *life, lifetime, age, generation*; pl. **oessoeδ.**
2. oes (oys) *there is.* §§ 152, 154 β.
oestru ? 230, 33.
ofn-awg *timorous.* 184, 21.
ofyn m. *fear.* 148, 22. 187, 31.
ofynhäu *to fear.* 142, 4. 167, 26.
offeren *mass*; pl. **-eu.** 162, 29.
ohan-, ohon-, see §§ 53, 183.
oia interjection. § 243.
ol *track*; **yn ol** *after, behind.* **a oeδ yn ol or dyδ** *what remained of the day.*
olyf-wyδ (oliwyδ) m. coll. *olive-wood.* 165, 21.
oll, holl, *all.* § 67.
onaδunt *of them.* § 53.
oni, onyt, see **ny.**
or, see **1. 2. o.**
Orc, Orch *the Orkneys.* 156, 12. 162, 11.
organ f. *a musical instrument, organ.* 163, 6. 15.
orig (dimin. of **awr**) *a short hour.* 230, 13.
os, see **2. o.**
osid *if there is.* 213, 22, 28. §§ 152, 154
osp m. *a stranger, guest.* 193, 7.
ottid, see **odi.**
Owein n. pr. m.

pa, ba (voc.) *what?* § 80.
pab m. *a pope.* pl. **-eu** 220, 8.
Pabo n. pr. m.
pader f. *the Paternoster.* 215, 4. 5.
pagan *a pagan, heathen*; pl. **-yeid.**
paladyr m. *a spear-shaft.* 194, 23.
pallu *to fail.* 180, 11.
pan (pann) (1) *whence,* § 225. (2) (voc.) *when,* § 226. (3) *that*; **pan yw** 155a (β); **hyd pan** *until, so that.* **yr pan** *since.* 170, 5.
parabyl m. *a speech.* 170, 4.
paradwys f. *Paradise.* 238, 4.
parattöi *to prepare.* 148, 7.
parawd *prepared, ready, easy.* 144, 3. 158, 24. 30.
parchell m. *a young pig.* 203, 10.

pared m. *a wall, partition.* 196, 20.
parhäu *to remain, continue.* 180, 15.
parth m. and f. *part, direction*; 149, 2. 201, 5. **p. ac** *towards.* 139, 9.
Parth *Parthia.* 172, 6.
parth-gleδ *left-hand side*; sic leg. 229, 29. MA. 274a 25.
pawb *everyone, everybody.*
pebyll m. *a tent*; pl. **-eu.**
pebyllaw *to pitch a tent or tents, encamp.* 173, 24.
pechawd m. *sin*; pl. **pechodeu.**
pedeir, see **pedwar.**
pedr-ongyl *square.* 154, 7. RB. II. 12, 31.
pedwar m. **pedeir** f. *four.*
pedwyryδ m. **pedwareδ** f. *fourth.*
peδyd *infantry.*
peδydgant *a troop of infantry.* 171, 5.
Pedyr *Peter.* 228, 19.
pei *if he were.* 200, 16. conj. *if.* § 227.
peidaw (peidyaw) (ac) *to cease (from).* 140, 4. 179, 3. 190, 21; p. o 167, 3 v. l.; p. yn 178, 24. RB. II. 253, 10.
peir m. *a cauldron.* 202, 7. 14.
peiss-awg *coated.* **Hir P.** n. pr. m. 206, 1.
pell *far, distant*; **ym p.** *far off*; **o b.** *from afar.* comp. **bellach** *further.* 193, 16 v. l.
pellenhig *a stranger.* 193, 7.
penn *a head, top, point, end*; *mouth.* 225, 12. pl. **-eu. am b.** *against* 146, 26. **uch b.** *over, above*; **ym p.** *at the end.*
Penn n. pr. m.
pennaf (penhaf) *foremost, chief.*
Penn-beiδ *chief of boars.* 201, 16.
penn-cawr *chief giant.*
Penn-dragon *chief leader.*
penn-ffestin *a helmet.* 150, 25; 159, 17. RB. II. 55, 19; 155, 7; 162, 14.
penn-saer m. *a chief craftsman.* 204, 27.
penn-swyδwr m. *a chief steward.* 160, 13.
penn-trullyad m. *a chief butler.* 160, 12.
penyd *penance.* 150, 20. 238, 8.
Peredur n. pr. m.
perfeδ *middle, centre.* 176, 26. 183, 3. 29. 210, 10.
perffeith *perfect.* 237, 12.
peri *to cause, make, create.* 190, 19. 234, 10.
perigyl m. and f. *a danger*; pl. **perigleu.** 151, 30. 153, 30.
perthcled, see **parth-gleδ.**
1. perthyn (at) *to belong (to).* 155, 21.
2. perthyn *appropriate, pertinent.* 234, 18. 235, 8. MA. 191a, 26; 228a, 26.
peryf m. *the Creator.* 234, 9. MA. 228a 18.
petrus m. *a doubt.* 150, 4 v. l. 167, 4.
pettrussaw *to doubt.* 169, 7.
petrusder *hesitation, doubt.* 147, 28. 150, 4.
peth *a thing, something, somewhat.*
peth, beth = **pa beth** *what?* §§ 74. 79. 203, 11.
peunyδ adv. *daily, everyday.* **beunyδ** 239, 10.
peunyδ-yawl *daily.* 190, 9.
phellas: ara phellas 239, 17. "*which I have set apart,*" Skene, FB. I., 289; Pughe s.v. gwanas has: a ryfullias "*which I have prepared.*"
pieu *whose is?* 193, 5. 6. *to whom it belongs,* 16, 7. §§ 83, 161.
pigo *to peck at.* 197, 23.
pimp, see **pump.**
plant (coll.) *children.*
pleid f. *a side, party*; **o b.** *on the side of.*
plith: **o blith** *from among*; **trwy blith** *through the midst of*; **ym plith** *among.*
plwyw *people.* 227, 12. LA. 106, 19; 22. RB. II. 270, 24.
pob *each, every*; **bob un, bob deu** *in ones and twos*; **pob eilwers** *alternately*; § 43. **pobmynnig** *any place.* 223, 8.
pobyl f. *people*; pl. **pobloeδ.**
poen f. *pain*; pl. **-eu.** 142, 13.
poened *pain, torment.* 230, 21.
pony, before vowels and with pres. of cop. **ponyd**, interrog. part. = Lat. *nonne?* § 240.
1. porth m. *a gate, gateway*; pl. **pirth.** 193, 11. 194, 3. 234, 12.
2. porth f. *help, assistance, support.* 175, 6. 176, 18. 196, 8. 208, 20. 25.
3. porth *a port, harbour.* P. **Cerδin** n. l.
porthawr m. *a doorkeeper.* 193, 12. 17: 234, 12.
porth-fa f. *a port.* 172, 21.
post *a post, pillar.* **Pabo p. Prydein** 162, 3.
pren m. *a tree, cross.* 230, 17.

Presseleu n.l. 204, 6.
pressennawl *pertaining to this world.* 198, 20. LA. 130, 31; 142, 4.
pressent *present.* gwlad p. *this world,* 230, 5; 232, 10. MA. 272a, 16; 281, 36.
priawd *own.* 181, 18.
prif-gerδ *a panegyric.* 235, 5.
prif-glod *loud praise, eulogy.* 235, 6.
priodas f. *marriage.* 141, 2.
priodawr m. *a proprietor, landowner.* 212, 24. 27; 213, 8; 220, 28. 31.
priodol-der m. *proprietary right.* 212, 28; 213, 1. 20. RB. II. 341, 21.
processio (procesiwn) *procession.*
profi *to try, test, tempt.* 139, 11. 237, 17. p. part. profedig 146, 1; 164, 15; 206, 13.
1. pryd *aspect, beauty.* 140, 22; 155, 25.
2. pryd m. *time*; pa bryd *when?* p. pan *when* 229, 25. p. na *since not.* § 228.
prydu *to sing, compose poetry.* 235, 5.
pryder *care, anxiety*; pl. -eu.
pryderus *anxious.* 190, 29.
Prydein f. *Britain.*
Pryd-wenn f. *(fair-shaped) the name of Arthur's ship.* 199, 6; 202, 12.
prynu *to buy, redeem.* 238, 14.
Pumlumon n. l. *Plimlimon.* 199, 22.
pump (nas.) *five.*
pur *pure, perfect.* 238, 5.
pur-δu *jet black.* 225, 21.
pur-ffawd *pure, perfect happiness.* 237, 13. MA. 315 b 14.
pur-wynn m. -wenn f. *pure-white.*
pwll m. *a pit, hole.* 200, 6.
pwy *who? which?* 139, 11. 194, 14. *who*; p. bynhac *whoever.* § 81.
pwys *a weight, burden.* 238, 6.
pwystyr *why?* 193, 14.
py (voc.) *what?* § 185; pyr *why?* § 229. py diw (O.W.) *to whom.* 146, 1. § 80 n. 4.
pyd m. *a pitfall, snare.* 177, 25. MA. 231 b 4; RB. II. 76, 10.
pylu *to make blunt.* 159, 17. RB II. 106, 31; 56, 33; 71, 19; 161, 1.
pym, see pump.
pymhed *fifth.*
pymtheg (nos.) *fifteen.*
-pynhag *-soever.* § 81.
pyr, see py.
pysg m. *a fish*; pl. -awd. 154, 8. 198, 26. 241, 11.
pythew-nos *a fortnight.* 209, 6. 216, 13. 16.

racco (racko) *yonder.* § 63.
rad f. *grace, favour, blessing.* 140, 5. 12. 145, 18.
raff *a rope*; pl. -eu. 147, 4.
rag prep. *before, for, from.* §§ 52, 186. yn r. 195. 28. p yr. *wherefore?* 193, 13 v. l. r. wyneb *following, next.*
rag-δywedud *to foretell.* 176, 15. p. part. ragδywededig *aforesaid.* 173, 3.
rag-feδylyaw *to consider, provide.* 167, 18. 20; 169, 4
rag-flaenu *to excel,* 164, 8. RB. II. 293, 29; 350, 11. r. y fforδ *iter praecedere.* 179, 7.
ragod (rachod) *to waylay*; *an ambush.* 147, 1; 177, 16; 206, 12; 223, 6.
rag-weled *to forsee, provide.* 167, 20. 169, 4. part. weledig 169, 2 v. l.
rag-ynys f. *an adjacent island.* 202, 28.
ranc: r. boδ *content, satisfaction.* 195, 12.
ranghei, see rengi.
rann f. *a division, part, portion, share.* ran 228, 7. pl. -eδ. 227, 6.
rannu *to divide.* 141, 5. 179, 14.
redeg (rydec) *to run, race, pass by.*
redyn *fern.* Redyn-fre n. l. *(Fernhill)* 196, 29.
Reged f., n. l. 152, 29. 155, 16.
reges *ebb-tide*; *adversity.* 228, 11. CZ. V, p. 566.
rengi boδ *to satisfy, please.* pres. ind. sg. 3 reinc 194, 18; past subj. sg. 3 ranghei 195, 11. RB. II. 329, 18. MA. 321b, 31.
rei (rey) *some, few.* y rei *those, such*; pob rei *both sides* § 66; rei . . rei (ereill) *some . . some* § 75.
reid (wrth) *need (of), necessity, trouble.*
reiδ (reit) *a shaft, antler.* 197, 1. MA. 148 b 58.
Reiδwn n. pr. m. 204, 17.
reinc, see rengi.
Rein n. pr. m. *Regin.*
reolawdyr *regular.* 161, 8. RB. II. 171, 16; CM. 14, 15.
restru *to range.* 204, 11.
rew *frost, ice.* 241, 20.
rewi *to freeze.* pres. ind. act. sg. 3 rewhiδ 241, 3. 19. § 129.

rewinyaw *to cause to perish, destroy, ruin.* 3 sg. pret. ind. act. rewinywys 229, 22. cp. MA. 140a, 33; FB. 146, 6.
rid, see ryd.
riein-gadeir f. *a queen's throne.* 189, 8.
rieni pl. *ancestors.* 168, 13; 170, 12. 22.
rif *number.* 171, 16.
ringhyll (ringyll) m. *an apparitor, a beadle.* 210, 12. 18; 214, 21.
riheδ ? 228, 30. FB. 11, 10; 174, 2.
rihyδ *splendour, splendid?* 227, 4. MA. 195a, 12; 229, 21; FB. 6, 24; 8, 5; 110, 12; 112, 3; 211, 15; 212, 17; 305, 7.
rin *a secret.* 225, 7.
rith *form, guise.*
rithaw *to shape, create, transform.* 196, 27; 197, 7.
riw *a slope.* 242, 4.
ro prep. *between.* § 53.
rod f. *a wheel.* gellwng cleδyf ar y r. *to brandish a sword in circle.* 202, 21. MA. 286a, 35. L. Glyn Cothi 92, 10.
roδ m. and f. *a gift*; pl. -yon.
rofi, see ro.
roδi (roy, rohi) *to give, put, place, grant, surrender.*
Ron *the name of Arthur's lance.*
ruδ *red, ruddy.* 228, 15.
Ruδ-fyw n. pr. m. 205, 31.
Rufein f. *Rome.* 181, 4.
Rufeinawl *Roman.*
Run n. pr. m.
ruthur (rythur) f. *a rush, onset.* 151, 21. 24. 176, 12. 24. 178, 21. 182, 6. 8.
Ruthyn n. l.
rwng (yrwng) prep. *between.* §§ 53, 187.
rwyδ *easy, free, prosperous, favourable*; 172, 24. ar r. *in prosperity*; glew-r. 235, 11.
rwyf m. *a ruler, leader,* 236, 23. 25.
rwygaw *to rend, break.* 198, 27. r. (y) mor *to plough the sea* 149, 16. 172, 25.
rwymaw *to bind, gird.* 150, 29. 188, 5. p. part. rwymedig *bound, attached.* 162, 25. 158, 6.
rwysg *sway.* 227, 4. 235, 13.
ry verbal particle. §§ 95, 96, 97.
ry- intensive prefix, *very, too.*
ry-fawr 241, 19. ry-hir 162, 8.
rych *a furrow.* 226, 5.
ryd *a ford.* 241, 3. R. Ychen *Oxford* 161, 34.
rydec, see redeg.
ryδ *free.* 198, 29. 237, 24.
ryδaw, see ro.
ryδhäu *to free, liberate.*
ryδid f. *freedom, franchise, privilege.* 186, 23. 221, 19.
ryδynt, see ro.
ry-feδ *a wonder*; *wonderful.* 162, 23. compar. -ach, 154, 5.
ryfeδu *to wonder.* 149, 23. 154, 4.
ryfel m. *war.* 167, 25.
ry-gosswy, ry-gossys? 231, 31.
Rymhi n. l.
rynawd *awhile.* 142, 1.
ryodres *magnificence, pomp.* 156, 21. 161, 2.
ryrys? 231, 30.
Rys n. pr. m. 205, 31. 235, 17.
rysswr m. *a warrior, champion.* 199, 26; 29; 204, 16; 206, 18. CM. 1, 25; 2, 3.
rythur, see ruthur.
ryw m. *kind, sort*; *such*; 167, 7. 174, 33. 186, 2. neb ryw *any.* 140, 10.

Sadwrn: duw S. *on Saturday.* 228, 21.
saer m. *a craftsman, wright.*
Saesneg f. *the English language.*
Saeson, see Seys.
saeth *an arrow*; pl. -eu. 176, 23.
saethu *to shoot with arrows.* 164, 24.
safant, see sefyll.
safedig (p. part. of sefyll) *established, fixed, valid.* 218, 11.
Salsbri n. l. *Salisbury.*
salwen *vain, needless.* 201, 29.
Samsun n. pr. m. *Samson.*
sant m. *a saint*; pl. seint. 202, 32.
sarff *a serpent*; pl. seirff.
sarhaed f. *an insult, affront*; pl. -eu. 166, 1. 223, 21.
sawdl *a heel*; pl. sodleu. 159, 24. 183, 23.
sawl *a many, multitude*; y s. *those.* § 77.
sef *that is, this is.* § 47.
sefir, see sefyll.
sefyll (trans. and intrans.) *to stand, to stop, stand fast, fix.* pres. ind. sg 3 seif, pass. sefir, pl. 1 safwn, pl. 3 safant (sauahant), pret. sg. 3 safawδ
segur *disengaged, idle.* 241, 18.
seguryd m. *ease.* 167, 7. 180, 13.
seif, see sefyll.

seilaw *to found, establish; remain?* perf. sg. 3 **ry seilas.** 232, 3.
sein *a sound.* 183, 8.
seint, see **sant.**
seith *seven.* **s.-lydyn** *seven young ones.* 203, 4. 15.
Seith Pedyr *Saint Peter.* 228, 19. Cf. Rhŷs, Lect. p. 371.
seneδ f. *a senate.* 166, 4. 15.
seneδwr m. *a senator.* 172, 11.
ser, see **syr.**
serch *love.*
Seys m. *a Saxon, Englishman;* pl. **Saeson.** 146, 12.
Sibli f. *the Sibyl.* 169, 17.
sodlau, see **sawdl.**
son f. *a sound, noise.* 183, 22.
sorri *to be angry, frown.* 141, 19, 142, 32. pres. ind. sg. 3 **syrr.** 226, 2.
sugnaw *to suck.* imperf. ind. sg. 3 **sucknei** 154, 19,
Sul-gwyn m. *Whitsunday.* 160, 19.
swllt m. *money, treasure.* 149, 12. 202, 24.
swyδ *an office.* 202, 19.
syberw *stately, noble.* 143, 15.
syberwyd *pride, arrogance.* 180, 17.
syched m. *thirst.* 170, 15.
syllu *to gaze, look.* 154, 1; 199, 26.
symudaw *to change.* 143, 14.
syr (coll.) *stars.* 161, 11. 197, 23. 227, 29.
syrr, see **sorri.**
syrthaw *to fall.* 159, 10. pret. pl. 3 **syrthassant** 185, 21; 187, 25.

tad m. *a father;* pl. **-eu; hen-dad** *an ancestor.*
tafaw ? 230, 19 sqq.
tafawd *a tongue;* pl. **tafodeu.**
tafawd-leferyδ *spoken word, verbal evidence.* 139, 22; 220, 4.
tangnefeδ *peace.* 201, 2.
tangnefeδu *to make peace, pacify, appease.*
tangnefeδus *peaceful.* 144, 16.
1. **tal** m. *forehead.* 159, 16.
2. **tal** *payment, value.* **tu a thal** *an equivalent?* 221, 12.
talawr, pl. of **tal?** 228, 13.
Taliessin n. pr. m.
talu *to pay, give in return, requite, give, forfeit; reckon.* 209, 12.
talym m. *a while, period.* **ar dalym** *for a time* 146, 2.
1. **tan, dan** (voc.) prep. *under;* **deni** *under her.* § 188,
2. **tan** m. *fire.*
tanawl *fiery.* 173, 4,
tannu *to stretch.* **t. pebylleu** *tentoria figere.* 173, 17 v. l.
taplas f. *tables, backgammon.* 164, 25; 167, 4.
taraw *to strike.* **t. lygad** *in the twinkling of an eye.* 203, 32.
tarδu *to flee, run away, start,* pres. ind. sg. 3 **terδiδ;** pres subj. sg. 3 **tardho** 228, 13; 14. FB. 93, 18; 94, 27; 104, 29; 125, 6; 151, 5; 163, 16; 198, 21.
tarren f. *a plot of uncultivated land.* 196, 3.
1. **taryan** f. *a shield;* pl. **.eu.**
2. **taryan** *thunder.* 227, 25; 229, 7. FB. 171 22; MA. 287 b 11.
taryanawg m. *a shield-bearer;* pl. **-ogion.** 234, 15. 236, 7.
taryf, leg. **toryf?** 233, 17. 236, 7.
tawl, see **toli.**
tebig *similar, like.* 239, 11.
tebygu *to deem, think, suppose.*
teccäu *to adorn, decorate.*
tecced *beauty.* 140, 26.
teg *fair, pleasant.*
tegwch m. *beauty.* 140, 22. 155, 25.
Teilaw n. pr. m.
teilwng (y) *worthy of, meet, fit for, deserving, acceptable.* 150, 17.
teilyng-dawd f. *dignity.* 155, 22. 164, 7.
teir-gweith *three times.*
Teir-gwaeδ "*Three-shouter*" n. pr. m. 201, 28.
teir-nossig *three nights old.*
teithyawg *moving, in motion.* 229, 8. mal ton teithiawc llwyfenyd FB. 192, 26.
Teithyon n. pr. m. 204, 29.
telediw *handsome, fair.* 140, 29.
telediwed *fairness.* 140, 27 v. l.
telyn *a harp.* 147, 12.
telynawr *a harper.* 147, 15.
temyl (temhyl) f. *a temple;* pl. **temleu.** 144, 10. 12; 152, 27.
Temys *the Thames.* 189, 27.
terfyn m. *an end, limit, boundary, term;* pl. **-eu, -heu.** 166, 16. 20.
terfynu *to end, finish.* 168, 27. 183, 24; p. part. **terfynedig** *appointed.* 171, 28.
terfysg m. *trouble, conflict, uproar.* 141, 18; 167, 29; 225, 12; 233, 20.
terfysgu *to disturb.* 141, 12.
tes *heat, hot weather, sunshine.* 241, 16.

1. **teu** *thine.* § 55.
2. **teu** *silent?* 231, 2.
teu-lu *a household, retainers, community;* pl. **-oeδ.**
tew *thick, dense.* 151, 22; 241, 21.
tewhäu *to thicken, to close up the ranks.* 151, 26; 176, 24; 187, 24.
teyrn (teërn, teëirn) *a king, ruler;* pl. **teernεδ; t.-fab** m. *a king's son;* **t.-walch** m. *a royal hawk, hero;* **t.-wialen** f. *a sceptre.*
teyrnas m. and f. *a kingdom;* 144, 9. 162, 31. pl. **-ssoeδ.**
teyrn-ged f. *tribute.* 166, 6.
ti (di) *thou, thee;* emphat. **tydi,** conjunct. **titheu.** § 45 (a)
tino *a valley, vale.* 240, 1. FB. 157, 7; 210, 8.
tir m. *land;* pl. **-eδ.**
tir-diwollawdr *a husbandman;* pl. **-odron.** 149, 20.
tireδ, see **tir** and **twr.**
titheu, see **ti.**
tlws m. *a jewel;* pl. **tlysseu.**
toδi *to melt.* 228, 26.
töi *to cover;* pres. ind. sg. 3 **töiδ, tohiδ** 241, 5; 242, 1. FB. 157, 4.
toli *to curtail, diminish;* pres. ind. sg. 3 **tawl** 233, 12.
ton f. *a wave.* 229, 6. 241, 5.
tor *belly;* **ar eu t.** *against them.* 181, 14. RB. II. 48, 12; 97, 30; 157, 23.
torri *to break, violate.* 183, 12. 223, 4.
toryf *multitude, host;* pl. **torfoeδ.** 151, 26. 233, 20. 234, 16. 23.
tost *hard, severe.*
Totneis n. l. *Totness.*
1. **tra** (spir.) prep. *beyond, across, over.* § 189.
2. **tra** (voc.) conj. *while.* § 230.
tra-chefyn *backwards, back, behind, again.* § 189 N. See **cefyn.**
Trach-myr n. pr. m. 204, 8.
traeth m. *a shore, coast;* pl. **-eu.**
traethu *to utter, declare.* 168, 29. 170, 7.
trafferth *trouble.* 207, 27. 28.
tragywyδ *eternal.* 232, 13.
tragywyδawl *eternal.* 150, 11.
trallawd f. *persecution, trial.* 237, 18. LA. 19, 27; 21, 27; 28, 25.
tra-mor *over-sea.* 156, 28.
trannoeth (lit. *over night*) *next day.*
traws *transverse.* **ar t.** *across.* 149, 3 v. l.
traws-brenneu pl. *lateral branches of a tree.* 149, 3. Cf. trauskeyg, Anc. Laws I. 290, 3.
trayan (traean) m. *a third.* 139, 17; 157, 5; 201, 31.
trebelid *swift, dexterous.* 201, 22. RB. II. 56, 27. MA. 279a 35
trechaf (superl. of **tren**) *strongest.* 187, 19. § 37 (b).
tref f. *a dwelling-place, home.*
tref-tadawg m. *an inheritor.* 218, 18.
tref-tadawl *inherited.* 146, 8
trei *ebb.* 209, 4; 216, 11.
treiaw *to ebb.* 154, 14.
treiglaw *to travel;* pres. ind. sg. 3 **treigyl.** 197, 18.
treigyl m. *a course, journey.* 197, 26.
treis f. *violence, rapine, rape.* 200, 28. 222, 17.
tremygu *to despise.* 140, 8. 166, 9.
treth f. *a tribute.* 188, 9.
trethawl *tributary.* 168, 2. 186, 23.
treulaw *to spend, consume, wear.*
tri (spir.) m. **teir** f. *three.*
tri-dieu *three days.* 149, 8. 164, 29. 209, 1.
triganeδ *a trumpet blast?* 228, 29. A thriganed kyrn a gwerin trygar FB. 2117; Cf. 68; MA. 124b 46.
trigiaw *to dwell, remain.* 162, 22. 240, 10. 13.
trindawd f. *the Trinity.*
trist *sad.* 179, 2.
tristäu *to become sad, grieve.* 142, 2.
tristaw *to become sad, grieve.* 141, 21.
tristyd m. *grief.* 147, 6.
Tro *Troy.* 163, 24.
troed m. *a foot;* pl. **traed. ar traed** *on foot.* 174, 18.
troed-noeth *bare-foot;* pl. **-on.** 153, 27.
troed-feδ m. *a foot (measure).* 154, 6.
tröi *to turn* (tr. and intr.).
tros, dros (voc.) prep. *across, over;* **myned dros** *to break through;* **eneid dros eneid** *a life for life struggle.* §§ 53; 190.
trossi *to turn, move* (tr. and intr.) 149, 18. 151, 4. 199, 24.
tru *sad, wretched.* 230, 20.
truan *miserable, wretched; a wretch.*
trueni m. *wretchedness, misery.*
tru-gar *merciful.* 225, 19.
trugareδ f. *mercy.* 227, 7.
trugarhäu (wrth) *to commiserate.*
trugeint (trugein) (nas.) *sixty.*
trwch *cut, broken.* 241, 9.
trwm m., **trom** f. *heavy, sad.*
trws 227, 21 = **trwst** *noise?* Cf. yna byδ mawrdrwst MA. 73a.

trwssyad (trwssad) m. *one who arranges, or disposes.* 234, 7; 235, 28. Cf. **trwssyaw, trwssa,** Hg. I., 214,37.
trwy (drwy) (voc.) prep. *through.* § 191. **drwy y hun** *in his sleep* 172, 27.
trwyδed *to visit, pass, sojourn.* 237, 18. FB. 59 12. MA. 844a,21.
try-chan (nas.) *three hundred.*
trychu *to cut down.* 149, 1.
trydyδ m. **tredeδ** f. *third, one of three*; **ar y d.** *with two others.* 142, 9. § 165.
try-fer *a trident.* 197, 33. MA. 317b 13.
trym-der m. *gravity, seriousness.* 166, 14.
try-wyr *three men.* 174, 7. 193, 3.
tu m. *side, region, part*; **or tu yn eu hol** *from behind them*; **tu ac** *towards*; **pa du** *where?* 198, 32.
tud *people, country.* 231, 9.
twng, see **tyngu.**
twll *perforated, pierced.* 205. 23,
twr m. *a tower*; pl. **tyreu.** 156, 32; 166, 25. 27. **tireδ** 181, 6.
twrch m. *a boar.*
twrwf m. *a host, multitude.* 234, 15.
twyll m. and f. *deception, treachery.* 178, 9.
twyllwr m. *a traitor.*
twynpath m. *a mound.* 199, 14.
1. **ty**, see **ti.**
2. **ty** m. *a house*; pl. **tei.**
tybygu, see **tebygu.**
tybyaw *to suspect.* 177, 27.
tyfu *to grow.*
tynghedfen f. *fate, fortune*; pl. **-nneu.** 142, 10.
tyngu *to swear, take an oath.* pres. ind. act. sg. 3. **twng** 220, 27. 233, 4.
tyllu *to pierce, make a breach.* 183, 15.
tyllweδ (tellweδ) f. *stillness.* 211, 2.
tynnu *to pull, drag, draw, retreat*; 147, 18. 162, 25. 228, 9. **t. pebylleu** *to pitch tents.* 173, 17.
tyreu, see **twr.**
tyrnged, see **teyrn-ged.**
tyst *a witness*; pl. **-on, -ion.**
tywyδ *a tempest, storm.* 228, 25.
tywyll *darkness.* 229, 33.
tywyssawg m. *a leader, prince, chief*; pl. **-ogion.**
tywyssogaeth *leadership, dominion.*

uch (voc.) prep. *above*; **uch ben** *above, over.* § 193.
uched *height.* 197, 24.
uchel *high, tall, loud.* 150, 32; 186, 16; 234, 3.
ucher *evening.* 196, 23. 197, 24.
uchod adv. *above.* 187, 22; 198, 8.
uδ (uut, wut) m. *a lord, king, the Lord.* 235, 16; 236, 28.
uδunt *to them*, see 1. **y.**
ufuδ-häu *to obey.* 150, 23. 189, 22.
ufull-dawd *humility, lowliness.* 237, 22.
uffern *hell.*
ugeint (ugein) m. *twenty.* **deg ar hu.** *thirty.*
Ugnach n. pr. m.
Ul-Cessar *Julius Cæsar.*
un *one*; *same.* 163, 29. 221, 13. *any.* 164, 14. § 164 (4).
un-ben m. *a chieftain.*
un-fam *having the same mother.* 202, 18.
un-ryw *of the same kind, similar.*
un-tu: ar u. *at a stretch.* 156, 17. RB. II. 308, 33.
urδas m. *a rank, order, dignity*; pl. **urδasseu, urδassoeδ.**
urδasseiδ *dignified.* 161, 6.
urδaw *to ordain.*
urδawl *ordained.*
Uryen n. pr. m. *Urbigenus.*
Uthur n. pr. m.

weithon, weithyon, see **gweith.**
wrth, see **gwrth.**
wut, see **uδ.**
wy (hwy) *they, them*; emphat. **wyntwy,** conjunct. **wynteu.**
wybyr *sky, heaven.* 159, 25. See 1. **can.**
wyf, see **bod.**
wyneb *face*; **rac w.** *following, next.* 151, 9. 153, 6. 155, 27. **w. yn w.** *face to face.* 216, 27.
wyth *eight.*

whe, see **chwech.**
whedleu, see **chwedyl.**
whioryδ, see **chwaer.**

1. **y** (voc.) prep. (1) *to*, (2) *from, of.* § 195.
2. **y** def. art., see 1. **yr.**
3. **y** verb. particle, see **yδ.**
4. **y** (voc.) *his*, (spir.) *her, their.* § 57.
y-am (voc.) (1) *from off*; (2) *including.* § 164.
y-ar (1) *from*; (2) *upon.* § 165.
1. **ych** m. *an ox*; pl. **-en.**
2. **ych** *your.* §§ 57, 58.

ychydig *some, a little, a few.*
y-dan (voc.) prep. *under.* § 188.
ydys, ydyw, see **bod.**
yδ verb. particle, before consonants **y.** § 91.
yfed *to drink.* 202, 14.
yfelly, see **felly.**
y-gan (voc.) prep. *from.* § 167.
yng *a strait, difficulty, distress.* 150, 29.
ynghyd (ac) *together (with).*
yll (ill, ell) before numerals, *all.* § 67.
1. **ym**, see **yn.**
2. **ym**, see **bod.**
yma *here, hither.*
ym-adaw (ac) *to part with, leave, desert*; past subj. pl. 3 **ymedewynt.**
ym-adrawδ m. *to speak*; *speech, discourse*; pl. **ymadroδyon.** 142, 10.
ym-aδassu (ac) *to adapt oneself.* **y. ar δayar** *to meaure one's length on the ground.* 174, 26.
ym-afael (yn) *to take hold of, grasp.* 202, 17. 206, 21. 207, 17. 19.
yman *here.* **hwnt ac y.** *nunc hac nunc illac* 185, 25.
ym-ar-δisgwyl *to watch.* 199, 27.
ym-ar-δyrchafel *to exalt oneself.* 157, 4.
ym-baratöi *to prepare oneself.* 171, 19.
ym-ben-tyr(r)-yaw *to rush together.* 176, 17; 186, 10; Hg. II. 163, 1.
ym-choelud (-chaelud) *to return, turn.* 189, 11. 206, 12. 229, 27. 29. **y. ar** *to turn upon, set upon.* 174, 29. 207, 20. y. y arfeu yn y Gwyδyl *to attack the Irishmen.* pret. ind. sg. 3 **ymhoeles.** 160, 17.
ym-da, see **ym-deith.**
ymdan (voc.) prep. *about.* § 164.
ym-daraw (ac) *to contend (with).* 201, 29.
ym-deith *to go about, to go, go away.* 141, 14. pres. ind. sg. 3 **ym-da** 199, 4.
ym-dynnu (o) *to retreat (from).* 174, 17.
ym-δianc *to escape.* 154, 18. 197, 30.
ym-δiδan *to converse.* 147, 9. 203, 18.
ym-δifad (o) *bereft (of)*; pl. **-δifeid.** 176, 28.
ym-δifedi *destitution.* 145, 14.
ym-δiffyn, see **am-δiffyn.**
ym-δired *to trust.* **y. y** 225, 4, **y. yn** 151, 7. 158, 20.
ym-δwyn *to carry about.* 202, 20.
ym-δywedyd *to discuss, argue.* 211, 16.
ymeith (o) *out (of), away (from).* 174, 8.
ym-eneinaw *to anoint oneself.* 207, 9.
ym-erbynyeid *to encounter, combat.* 186, 6.
ym-ffust m. *a conflict, struggle,* 187, 20; RB. II. 84, 24; 90, 31; 162, 10.
ym-gaffel (ac) *to get hold of, engage in battle.* 185, 19. 186, 2.
ym-garu *to caress one another.* 147, 19. 148, 12.
ym-geffelybu (ac) *to imitate.* 156, 25. Hg. II. 89, 14; 102, 2; LA. 44, 8; RB. II. 80, 12.
ym-geis (ac) *to seek.* 202, 31.
ym-gelu (rag) *to hide (from).* 146, 27.
ym-golli (ac) *to lose sight (of).* 205, 1.
ym-gribyaw (ac) *to wrangle (with).* 207, 25.
ym-gyf-ar-fod *to encounter.* 146, 14. 169, 15. 170, 14. 174, 6.
ym-gyffelybu (ac) *to compare oneself, vie (with).* 156, 25.
ym-gynghor (ac) *to consult.* 148, 1.
ym-gym-mysgu *to engage each other.* 183, 20. Hg. I. 55, 26; 282, 19. RB. II. 28, 12.
ym-gynhal *to resist.* 151, 17. 192, 8,
ym-gynull *to gather together.* 148, 25.
ym-gynullaw *to flock together.* 145, 1. 152, 20. 173, 20. 192, 7.
ym-gyrchu *to attack.* 173, 2.
ym-gyweiraw (o) *to equip oneself (with).* 172, 16.
ymhoeles, see **ym-choelud.**
ym-laδ m. *to fight*; *a fight*; pl. **-eu.**
ym-lid *to pursue.* 148, 24. 188, 2. fut. sg. 1 **ymlidyaf** 206, 9.
ym-lynu *to follow, pursue.* 152, 7. 22. 191, 1.
ym-o-glyd (rag) *to guard against.* 176, 3; RB. II. 46, 34; Hg. I. 28, 5.
ym-orδiwes (ac) *to overtake, come up with, touch.* 174, 20. 28. 202, 4. 204, 3. 28. 207, 3.
ym-rithaw *to transform oneself.* 201, 33.
ym-roδi *to give oneself up, surrender, devote oneself.* 145, 22. 149, 5. 150, 12. 156, 6. pres. ind. sg. 3 **ymryδ** 150, 17.

ym-ryδhäu (o) *to free oneself (from).* 147, 22.
ym-tynnu, see **ym-dynnu.**
ym-wasgu (ac) *to rejoin.* 174, 34; LA. 100, 6; Hg II. 272, 29.
ym-weled *to see one another*; **y. ac** *to visit.* 147, 20. 203, 32. 205, 12.
ym-wneuthur *to effect mutually.* 164, 16 v. l.
ym-yrru (gyt ac) *to concern oneself (with), help.* 200, 20. RB. II. 19, 8; CM. 77, 17.
ym-ysgydyaw *to shake oneself.* 202, 4.
1. **yn** (nas.) prep. *in, into, upon.* 173, 5. § 196.
2. **yn** (voc.) forming adverbs and with predicative noun and adjective. § 16 (d).
3. **yn (an)** *our.* § 57.
yna *then, there, thither.*
ynad (O.W. **egnat**) m. *a judge.* 209, 24; pl. **yneid.** 210, 5.
ynfyd *foolish.* 231, 33.
ynni *vigour.* 174, 19. 27. 186, 1.
yno *there, thither.*
ynt, see **bod. ynteu,** see **ef.**
yny (hynny) conj. *until.* § 234. For **yny vyδ** see 2. **gwyδ.**
ynyal *desert, wild.* 228, 7.
ynys f. *an island*; pl. **ynysseδ. Ynys Daned** *Thanet.*
Ypolit *Hippolytus.*
1. **yr,** before consonants **y** (voc. before fem.) def. art. *the.*
2. **yr** prep. *for the sake of; for; since.* §§ 53; 197. **yr na** *since not, though not.* § 234. **yr hynny** *nevertheless*; **yr pan** *since*; **pyr (py yr)** *why?* 193, 13.
yrof, see **ro.**
y-ryngtunt, see **rwng.**
1. **ys** *is.* §§ 152; 155; 159 N2.
2. **ys: ys pump mlyneδ** *since five years.* **ys gwers** *for some time.* 194, 6. **yr ys pell o amser** *long ago.* 197, 22.
ysgar (ac) *to leave, part with.* 205, 25.
Ysgawd n. pr. m. 204, 20.
ysgawn *light, slight, easy.* 180, 31. 202, 11.
ysgithyr *a fang, tusk.* 201, 23. **Y.-wynn** *white-tusked.* 201, 16.
ysglyfyaw *to snatch.* 202, 2; RB. II. 151. 8; Hg. I. 296, 22.
ysgol *a school.* 161, 10.
ysgolheig m. *a scholar, clerk, priest*; pl. **-on.** 147, 29. 153, 25. 160, 9.
ysgrifenu *to write.* 164, 6.
ysgrybul (coll.) *cattle.* 199, 4.
ysgwyd *a shield.* 241, 18. 22.
ysgwyδ f. *a shoulder.* 174, 31. 198, 10. 241, 18. 22.
ysgymun (ysgymyn) *accursed.* 191, 16.
ysgymun-dawd *villany.* 149, 24.
ysgymunedig *accursed*; pl. **-yon.**
ysgythredig *chased, engraved.* 150, 26. CM. 34, 32; 104, 19.
yslipanu *to burnish, polish.* 194, 5. 12.
yslipanwr m. *a burnisher.* 193, 18.
yspardun f. *a spur*; pl. **-eu.**
yspeid f. *a while, a space of time, respite.*
Yspaδaden *(Hawthorn)* n. pr. m. 199, 18. Cf. Rhŷs, Celt. H., p. 373.
Yspaen *Spain.* **yr Y.** 182, 23.
yspeil *spoil*; pl. **-eu** 177, 3.
yspeilaw *to despoil.* 176, 31. 188, 3.
yssid *there is.* 198, 15. 233, 5. pl. **yssydynt.** 194, 2. § 154 (a); ib. n. 1.
yssigaw *to shatter.* 147, 4.
yssu *to eat, consume.* 200, 3. 31.
yssyδ (yssy) *who, which is.* §§ 152. 154 (β); 155 (κ).
ystondard *a battle standard.* 183, 20.
ystorya *history, story.* 164, 7.
ystrad *a vale, valley.* 205, 32. 242, 1.
ystryw *device, stratagem.* 147, 22.
ystwng *to lower, overcome.* 233, 2.
ystynu *to extend, prolong.* 188, 7.
ystyr *story; meaning, import, reason.* 203, 11. **pwystyr (py y.)** *why?* 193, 14.
yswein m. *esquire.* 143, 10.
ysym *there is to me, I have.* 233, 1. § 155 B, note 1.
1. **yw,** see **bod.**
2. **yw** *yew trees.* **Ystrad Yw** 205, 32.
3. **yw,** see 1. **y.**
1. **ywch,** see **bod.**
2. **ywch,** see 1. **y.**

APPENDIX

Additional Variants to "Lear and his Daughters" from MSS. at Peniarth.

P¹, P², P³, P⁴ = MSS. No. 22, 44, 45, 46.

Ch. 1.—l. 2, thrugein mlyned: dev vgeỳn P²—l. 3, ef a adeilvs P²—a thri ugein mlyned y gỏledichỏys (gỏledychỏs P³) ef yn ỏraỏl ac yd adeilỏys (adeilỏs P³) dinas P³ P⁴—l. 4, leỳrcester P².

Ch. 2.—l. 2, yd adaỏhei P⁴.

Ch. 3.—l. 4, leueryd *om.* P² P⁴—l. 5, adaỏ y rodi hitheu yr gỏr P³.

Ch. 4.—l. 3, y rygaru: yr caru P³—l. 11, nas rodi hi P³—l, 12, damweinhei P⁴.

Ch. 5.—l. 2, yr Alban: e gogled P²—l. 8, y rodei . . . genti: ỳ rodeỳ heb tỳr na daỳar na ssvllt P²—l. 15, kadarnhawyt: gỏnaethpỏyt P³.

Ch. 6—l. 12, ellvng er reỳ ereỳll ỳ emdeỳth P².

Ch. 8.—l. 5, gellygassei y ỏrthaỏ P³.

Ch. 9.—l. 1, ydoed P³—l. 3, Or* tỳghetven lỳtỳavc ep ef pa brỳd edav dỳd e gallwỳf ỳ talu vdvnt wỳ hỳn P². O chwichwi yr tyghetueneu P³. Oiar teghetuenneu py le, &c. P⁴—l. 4, pa achos y kyffroassoch uiui yar &c. P³—l. 7, gytdiodef P³—l. 14, traet P³ P⁴—ib. Owi P³—l. 16, talu yny gỏrthỏneb yr gỏyr hyny P³ P⁴—l. 21, vy rodyon: vyn da P³ P⁴—l. 25, yn gam P³.

*Strachan says: "I can't read the second letter except as r."

Ch. 10.—l. 1, aghyfnerth : trueni P^3—l. 2, ef a doeth, &c. : dẏnessav parth ar dẏnas edoed ẏ ver (*sic*) endav P^2—ib., ym Paris : ẏg cariz P^3 P^4—l. 4, ar gyuaroed P^3—l. 5, namẏn vn marchavc ac essweẏn P^2 ; namyn ef ae yswein P^3 P^4—l. 7, mynet ae that, &c. : dwẏn ẏ that hẏt en dẏnas arall ac eno dywedwẏt ẏ vot en glaf P^2—l. 16, wedy yr dehol P^3.

Ch. 11.—l. 11, a ỽnaeth : re gwnathoed P^2—a wnathoed P^3 P^4—l. 12, anryded Bifrontisiani : anrẏded ẏr devforvavl ianus P^2—l. 13, delhei P^4—ib. ac ena ed emkẏnvlleẏ holl seẏrẏ a chreffdwẏr e dẏnas P^2—gredyfwyr (*sic*) P^3—crefuydỽyr P^4.

Index

INDEX

The references are to paragraphs. n. = note.

ā, causing vowel-change 7 (a).

a, rel. part. 82-83; with infixed pron. 49 (b), 50 (a); usage 83 (a); expressing subj. or obj. 86; gov. by prep. 87 (a); without antecedent 87 (b).

a, infixing part. 50 (c); 94; 159 n. 2; superseded by *yd* 85 n.

a, interrog. part. 239; lenat. after 18 (g).

a, *ac*, conj. 198; mutat. after, 21 (d).

a, *ac*, prep. 162; after adj. 34 (b); mutat. after, 21 (c).

a, prep. = *o* 183.

a, *ha*, interj. 243.

absolute ending *-sit* 132 n.

accent, 4; 11 n. 1; shifting of 8; vowel variation due to 8; secondary acc. 11 n. 1.

accusative 26; traces of 25; in poetry 26; of relative 51.

ach, prep. 163

achaws, conj. 199.

adjective, 30-39; lenat. of 16; lenat. after positive 16 (c) (*a*); after compar. 16 n. 4; endings of 27 (c); gender in 30; stems in *-i-*, *-o-*, *-u-*, 30 note; plur. forms 31; attributive 32; predicative 32; number in 33; inflected adj. 34 (a); order in sentence 34 (a); foll. by prep. *o*, *a* 34 (b); concord 35; predicative adj. with *yn* 35; adj. phrases 36; comparison 37; construction of compar. and superl. 38; equative 39; with *mor* 39 n. 2; adv. use 40; poss. adj. 57: poss. adj. with prep. 58 (a), with conj. 58 (a), with *y* 58 (b), anticipating genit. 59 n.

abnabot, paradigm of 144.

adverb 40; lenat. 16 (h); adv. phrases 16 (h); with demons. force 63.

-adwy, verbal in 117.

ae, interrog. of copula 155 (a)(*η*)

ae, interrog. part. 239 (c).

agent, expression of with verb noun, 122

am, prep. 164; lenat. after 16 (i); with pron. end. 53; *yam* 164.

am (*na*), conj. 200.

amal, conj. 216.

analogy, in verb. conjugation 7 n. 1; in mutat. 12; 16 n. 7; 39 n. 1; in plural formations 27 (d); in pronouns 45 n. 2; in formation of subjunctive 110 n. 1.

answers, 241.

apodosis, imperfect in 107 (d)(*β*)(*γ*).

apposition, lenation in 16 n. 4; 17 (b).

ar, prep. 166; lenat. after 16 (i); with pron. end. 53; *or a*, *ar ny*, 87 (a); *yar*, 165.

arall, use of 68.

arganvot, paradigm of 160.

article, 23; lenat. after 16; fused with conj. or prep. 23; syntax of 24.

as, *as* (*ys*) *oed* 159n. 2.

-at, ending of imperf. ind. 3 sg. 131 (b).

att, prep. 166; lenat. aft. 16 (i); with pron. end. 53.

attributive adj. 32; 33.

awr, *yr awr* conj. 201.

-awr, *-iawr*, plur. suff. 28 B. (a).

-awt, plur. suff. 28 B. (b).

behet, prep. 177 n.

bot, lenation after, 16(g)(*β*); paradigm of 152; usages of 153; *bydwn*, etc. 107 n. 3; special fut. form 152 n. 2; *bit*, consuetudinal 152 n. 3; *bydaf*, use of 156 (a); *bydwn*, use of 157; *bewn*, 158; past subj. 158; compounds of 160; *boet*, after *kyt* 205 n.

caffael, cael, paradigm of 145.
can, gan, prep., lenat. after 16 (i); with pron. end. 53; with vb. noun 126 (c); use of 167; *y gan* 167.
can, conj. 202; not foll. by *yd* 93 (l).
canvot, paradigm of 160.
canys, copula 155 (a)(α); 202 n.
canys, conj. 202 n.
cardinals, see numerals.
caru, paradigm of 127.
case, 25; traces of lost case-endings 25; syntax of cases 26; expression of case in relative 86.
cer, ger, prep. 168.
clauses, subjunct. in main clauses 113; in subord. cl. 114; concessive cl. 114 (c); conditional cl. 114 (d); cl. of comparison 114 (e); temporal cl. 114 (f); final cl. 114 (g); relat. cl. 114 (h).
clybot, use of imperf. of 107 n. 2.
collective nouns, 29.
com-, Celt. prep. 39 n. 1.
command, subjunct. in 113 (b); in indirect speech 113 (b)(β).
comparison of adj. 37; lenat. after 16 n. 5; no plural 33; construction of compar. 38; foll. by *no* (*c*) 38 (a); clauses of comparison 114 (e).
composition, lenation in 16 n. 6.
concessive clauses, 114 (c).
concord, of vb. and subject 101; 103; of adj. with noun 32, 33; of adj. after *yn* 35.
conditional of *bot* 107 n. 3; impf. in conditional sentence 107 (d); plupf. in condit. 109 (b); subj. in condit. cl. 114 (d); impf. condit. 131.
conjugation of verb 98 sq.; analogy in 7 note 1.
conjunctions, 198-234; lenation after 16 (l); lenation of init. cons. 16 n. 13; spirant mutat. after 21 (d); with poss. adj. 58 (a).
consonants, classification of 3; graphic representation of 3 n.; orthog. variation 3 n.; consonantal changes 11; infl. of accent on cons. changes 11 n. 1; mediae > tenues 11 (g)(α); mutation of cons. 12; consonants vowel-flanked 12; table of cons. mutations 13.
consonantal stems, 27 (d).
consuetudinal present, 106 (b).
copula, 155; *yttiw* etc. 154 n. 4; *nat* 155 (a)(ϵ); *nyt* 155 (a)(δ); position of 159; preceding pred. 159 n. 2; with *neu* 221; *os, onyt* ....
customary action in past time, 107 (c).
cwt, cw, conj. 203; mutat. aft. 21 n. 1.
cyvarvot, paradigm of 160.
cyvrwng, prep. 169.
cyn-, in equative 39;
cyn, conj. 204; not foll. by *yd* 93.
cyn, prep. 170.
cyt, cyn, conj. 205; not foll. by *yd* 93 (l).
cyt ac, prep. 171; *y gyt ac*, conj. 206.
chwech, nas. mutation after 20 (c).

darvot, paradigm of 160.
dative, traces of 25; expressed by infixed pron. 51.
declension, in Old Celtic 25.
deng, usage of 41 n.
delw, nom. conj. 207.
denominative vb. 128 (b).
deponent, 99.
di, O.W. prep. 195; and n.
diam, O.W. prep. 164.
diar, O.W. prep. 165.
dieithyr, prep. 172.
dim, used as pron. 73.
diphthongs, 1 and n.
distributives, 43.
diuch, prep. 193.
do, in answers, 242.

dual, 25; 42 (a); lenation of adj. after dual noun, 16 (b)(α); lenat. of genit. after dual 16 (b)(β); traces of dual inflection 25.
duch, 110 n. 2; 138 n.
dy- before infixed pron. 50 f.
dyvot, paradigm of 141.
dylyu, with vb. noun 121.

-e- infixed pron. 48; use of 49 (b).
-edic part. end. 116.
-ed, pl. suffix 28 B (d).
einom etc. 55.
-eint, 3, plur, end. impf. ind. 131.
eissoes, conj. 208.
-eit, -ieit, plur. suff. 28 B (e).
eithyr, prep. 172.
eithyr na, conj. 209.
ell, ill, yll, 67.
emphatic pronoun 45.
endings of verb, 3 sg. of simple vb. 129; 3 sg. conjunct. 129; 3 pl. primary ending 129; see imperat. indicat. subjunct. vb. noun.
epenthetic vowel 10.
equative in comparison of adj. 39.
erbyn, prep. 173.
et, in *nocet* etc. 222 and n.
-et, pl. suffix. 28 B (c).

final clauses, 114 (g).
future 105; exp. by pres. tense 106 (e); special future endings 130.
futurity, subj. of 113 (c).

gallu, to express passive with vb. noun 121.
gender, in nouns 25; in adjs. 30; 32;
genitive, lenation of noun in gen. 16 (b) (β); traces of gen. case 25; syntax of gen. in prose 26; in poetry 26; gen. of rel. pron. 88.
ger, see *cer*.
gilyδ, 72 and n.
gorvot, paradigm of 160.
guar, prep. 165 n. 3.
gwares, 110 n. 2; 138 n.
gwedy, wedy, prep. 174; with preverb. *yd* 93 n. 3; with vb. noun = perf. part. 126 (b).
gwedy, conj. 210.
gwelet, use of imperf. of 107 n. 2.
gweith, with card. numbers 44.
gwneuthur, with vb. noun 123; paradigm of 142.
gwrth, O.W. prep. 194, see *wrth*.
gwybot, paradigm of 143.
gyt, see *cyt ac*.

h, sign of subjunctive 110; history of *h* in subj. 110 n. 2.
h, in sentence constr. 22; after infix. pron. and possess. *m* 22 (a); after infix. pron. *e* 22 (b); after 3 sg. f. poss. *y* 22 (c); after 1 pl. poss. *an* 22 (d); after *eu* 22 (e); after *ar* bef. *ugeint* 22 (f).
ha, interj. 243.
hagen, conj. 211.
hanvot, paradigm of 160.
-hau, denom. vb. end. 128 (b); spreading as *-a* to other vbs. 137.
-haw, 3 sg. fut. end. 130 (b).
-hawr, ending of fut. pass. 130.
-hawd, -hawt, fut. end. 3 sg. 130.
-hawnt, fut. end. 3 pl. 130.
heb, prep. lenat. aft. 16 (i); with pron. end. 53; usage 175.
heb, verb 151.
hevyt, conj. 213.
herwyd, prep., usage of 176.
herwyd, conj., usage of 213.
historic infinitive, 125.
historic present, 106 (d).
hollre, 67 note.
hun, hunan, 60.

hwde, 149.
hwnn, etc. dem. pron. 61; usage of 62; *yr hwnn*, foll. by rel. clause, 62 (c).
hwnt, 63.
hwnnw, *hynny*, 61; usage 62.
hyt, *prep.*, lenat. after 16 (i); usage 177; *hyt pan* 226 2 (a).
hyt, nominal conj. 214.

i, causing vowel infect. 6; 7 n. 2; 11 (b); 131; in pl. 27 (a); in pron. prep. 52 (b); infection due to lost *i* 7 b.
-i pl. suffix 28 B (f).
-i- stem in adj. 30 n.
-i ending of 3 sg. impf. 131 (a).
ie, *ieu*, in answers 242 and n.
igridu, 53 n.
ill, *ell*, *yll*, 67.
imperat. mood, 115; pass. of 115; negat. of 115; endings of 137; infl. of denom. vbs. in *-hau* spreads to other verbs 137.
imperf. tense, indic. 105; use of 107; in indirect speech 107 (b); of repeated action 107 (c); as sec. fut. or condit. 107 (d); as sec. tense to a fut. 107 (d)(α); in apod. of fut. or condit. clause 107(d)(β); in apod. of past clause 107(d)(γ); with negat. 107 n. 1; use of impf. of *clybot* 107 n. 2; use of impf. of *gwelet* 107 n. 2; endings of impf. 131.
indicative mood, with *ry* 96 A; pres. ind. with *ry* 97 (c) 1; use of 105–109; pres. 106; plupf. 109 (a); influence of ind. upon subjunct. form 110 n. 1; indic. stem in O.W. 110 n. 1; plup. ind. replacing past subj. 111 and n.; ind. in consec. cl. 114 n. 4; end. of pres. and fut. 128; end. of plupf. 135; past ind. of *bot* used as subj. 152 n. 7; ind. with conj. *hyt* 214; ind. of consequence with *hyt na* 214 2 (a); ind. with *mal* 216; ind. of consequence with *mal na* 216 3 (a).
indirect speech, impf. in 107 (b); pret. in 108 (b); command in 113 (b)(β).
infecting vowel, see *a*, *i*.
infection of vowel, 6; 7 (b); 7 n. 2; 11 (b); 27 (a); 52 (b).
infinitive, in Welsh 104; usage, 120; historic inf. 125; see verbal noun.
infixed pron. lenat. after 18 (a); forms of 48; use of 49–51; after *yny* 49 (b); after rel. *a* 50 (a); with preverbal *yd* 50 (b); 93 n. 2; after infixing part. *a* 50 (c); after *ry-* 50 (d); 93 n. 3; after *neu* 50 (e); after *dy-* of cpd. vbs. 50 (f); after *na*, *ny*, 50 (g); after *tra*, 50 (h); expr. accus. of relat. 51; infix. pron. with pass. vb. 102; with non-rel. vb. 102 n.; meaningless 159 n. 2; with *o* 224 n. 5.
inflected adj., position of 34 a.
inflection, noun 25.
interjection, lenat. after 16 (m). forms of 243–4.
interrogative, lenat. after interrog. pron. 18 (c); interrog. part. *a* 18 (g); interrog. pron., forms of 79; *pwy* 79; *peth*, *beth* 79; *pa*, *py* 80; and n. 1; *pa*, *py*, in earlier lit. 80 n. 2; *pathawr*, *pythawr* 80 n. 2; *pa*, *py* foll. by prep. 80 n. 3; *padiw*, *pydiw* 80 n. 4; *pwy bynnac*, *pa-*, *py- bynnac* 81; indirect interrogation 114 B (b).
is, prep. with pron. end. 53; usage 178.
issem, *ysef* 47.
-it, imperat. end. 3 sg. 137.
ithr, prep. 179.

lenation, = vocalic mutation 12; table of 13; lenat. of *g*, 13 n. 1; of *d* 13 n. 2; exceptions to rules 15; usage 14–18;

noun and adj. after *yr*, 16 (a); noun or adj. after noun, 16 (b); after dual 16 (b)(α); of noun in genit. 16 (b)(β); after prop. nouns 16 (b)(γ); of vb.-noun in genit. 16 (b)(δ); of noun aft. compar. adj. 16 (c)(α); of adj. repeated 16 (c)(β); after adv. *yn* 16 (d); aft. numerals 16 (e); aft. pron. 16 (f); after vb. 16 (g); after parts of *bot* 16 (g) (β); of adverbs 16 (h); aft. preps. 16 (i); after negat. 16 (k); after *mor*, *neu* 16 (l); aft. interj. 16 (m); of vocative 16 (m) (α); aft. superl. adj. 16 n. 5; in composit. 16 n. 6; of noun after adj. 16 n. 5; of noun prec. by depend. genit. 16 n. 7; in poetry 16 n. 7; post-verbal 16 n. 12; of prep. 16 n. 13; of pron. 17; after infixed pron. 18 a; after rel. part. *a* 18 (b); after interrog. 18 (c); of predicate after copula 18 (d); after *yt*, *yd* 18 (e); 91 n. 2; after *ry-*, 18 (f); after interrog. *a* 18 (g); after conj. 18 (h); after negat. 18 (i) and n.; in dual, 25; analogical lenat. 39 n. 1; after *ny*, relat 21 n. 2.
llall, pl. *lleill*, 70.
llas, 134 (a).
lle, nominal conj. 215.
y lleill, 71.
llyma, *llyna*, 244.

-m-, infixed pron. 48.
m, final, > *n* in Celtic 20 n.
mad, not foll. by *yd* 93 (i).
mae, use of 154 (a); copula 155 (a)(λ)
mal, *val*, conj. 216.
med, 'says,' form and use 150.
megys, conj. 217.
meu, etc. poss. pron. 55.
mi, etc. simple pron. 45.
minheu, etc. conj. pron. 45.
mivi, etc. emph. pron. 45.
moch, not foll. by *yd* 93 (k).
moes, imperat. 148.
moods, 104; indic. 105–110; subj. 110–114; imperat. 115; see indicative, subjunct., imperat., infinitive.
mor, lenat. after 16 (l), *mor - - a* expr. equality with adjs. 39 n. 2.
multiplicatives, 44.
mutation of cons., table of 13; vocalic mut. see lenation; nasal mut. in Mid. W. MSS. 19; after *vyn* 20 (a); after *yn* 20 (b); origin of, after numerals 20 (c); spirant mut. 21; after numerals 21 (a); after 3 sg. f. poss. adj. 21 (b); after prep. 21 (c); after *a(c)* *no(c)* 21 (d); after *ny*, *na* 21 (e) after *kwt* 21 n. 1.
myn, conj. 218.
mynet, paradigm of 140.
mynn, nominal prep. 180.
mywn, nominal prep. 181.

'n, poss. adj. 57.
n, neut. stems in 27 (d).
-n- infix. pron. 48.
na(c), mutat. after 21 (e); with infixed pron. 50 (g); with imperat. 115; with infixed pron., use of 237; disjunctive particle 238; in answers 241; *nac ef*, in answers 241 n.
na, *nat*, negat. part., use of 236; in condit. sent. 236 n. 1; with infixed pron. 237.
nachaf, interj. 244.
nado, 242 and n.
nage, 241.
namyn, *namwyn*, 219.
narrative tense, 108.
nasal mutation, see mutation.
nat, dependent neg. of copula 155 (a) (ϵ).
neb, use of 64.

negative particles, 235–238; special vb. form with negat. 130 (b).
y neill, use of 69; *y neill - - y lleill*, 71.
nem, prep. with pron. end. 53.
nes, prep., use of 182.
neu, lenat. after 16 (l); with infixed pron. 50 (e); with vb. part. *ry* 95 n.; conj. 220.
neur, 95 n.; 221.
neut, not foll. by *yd*, 93 (h); as copula 155 (a)(ι); conj. 221.
neuter, lost in Welsh 25; neuter *-n* stems 27 (d); of demons. pron. 61.
ni etc. pers. pron. 45.
nini etc. pers. pron. 45.
ninneu etc. pers. pron. 45.
no, noc, mutat. after 21 (d); after compar. adj. 38 (a); use as conj. 222.
nocet, nogyt 222.
nominative, old nominat. 25; syntax of nom. 26.
nouns, lenat. of init. cons. 16; lenat. after proper nouns 16(b)(γ); art. with prop. nouns 24; cases of 25; formation of pl. 27–28; collective nouns 29 (c); noun predic. with *yn* 35; plurals with cardinal nos. 42 (a); see also verbal nouns.
nu, conj. 223.
number, in nouns, 25; in adjs. 33; in vb. 100; express. of number in passive vb. 100; number of vb. in rel. clause 103.
numerals, lenat. after 16(e); nasal mutat. after 20(c); spirant mutat. after 21(a); cardinals 41; ordinals 41; syntax of 42; distributives with *pob* 43; multipl. with *gweith* 44.
nwy, 49 (c).
ny, mutation after 21 (e); mutat. aft. non-relative *ny* 21 n. 2; mutat. aft. relat. *ny* 21 n. 2; infixed pron. after non-rel. *ny* 49 c; special relat. form of *ny* 49 c; with infix. pron. 50 (g); in negat. of relat. 82; 86; gov. by prep. 87 (a); rel. *ny* without antec. 87 (b); usage 235.
nyr=ny ry 95 n.
nys, in later Mid. W. 50 n.
nyt, negat. of copula 155 (a)(δ); (a)(κ).
nyw, 49 c.

o, prep., lenat. aft. 16(i); aft. adjs. 34 (b); aft. superl. adjs. 38 (b); with pron. end. 53; aft. vb. noun, 122; =of 183; with art. 183.
o, conj., mutat. aft. 21 (d); with infixed pron. 50 (h); not foll. by *yd*, 93 (l); use of 224.
-o-, old pl. stems in, 27 n. 1; adj. stems in 30 n.
-o subjunct. end. 138.
object, position of 85.
oblique cases, traces of, 25.
oc, prep. 183.
och, interj. 243.
odieithyr, prep. 172.
oduch, prep. 193.
oed, impf. of *bot*, use of 107 n. 3; 154 (b).
-oed, pl. suffix 28 B (h).
oet, in *eirmoet, einyoet* 197 n.
oes, use of 154 (a)(β).
oia, interj. 243.
oian a, interj. 243.
oll, use of 67; with numerals 67.
-on pl. term. in adj. 31 (b).
ony, onyt, conj. 224; 224 n. 2.
or, conj 224; 224 n. 4.
or a 87 (a); *or ny* 87 (a); *or y*, 87 (a); *or pan* 226; 2 (b).
order of words, dependent genit. 26; adj. 34 (a); noun 34 (a); adverb 40; numerals 41; copula 159.
ordinals, see number.
orthography of Early W. 12 n.
os, conj. 224 and n. 5.

os, (*bot*) 152; copula 155 (a)(ζ)
osit, ossit, 152; use of 154 (a)(β); 154 n. 1.
ot, conj 224.
-ot, pl. suffix 28 B (g).

pa, py, with *peth* 79; used adject. 80; meaning of, 80 n. 1; without noun following 80 n. 2; followed by prep. 80 n. 3; *pa - - bynnac*, 81.
padiw, pydiw, 80 n. 4.
paham, 80 n. 3.
pahar, 80 n. 3.
pan, with infix. pron. 49 (b); foll. by *yd* 93 (l); with *yw* 154 (a) (β); *pan*= whence, 225; =when 226; *hyt pan* 226. 2 (a); *or pan* 226. 2 (b); *yr pan* 226. 2 (c).
particles, preverbal 91–97; negat. 235 sqq.; disjunct. 238; interrog. 239; responsive 241.
participle, passive 104; part. in *-edic* 116; pres. part. equiv. 126 (a); perf. part. equiv. 126 (b).
parth (*ac*), prep. 184.
passive, numb. exp. in pass. voice 100; pers. in pass. 102; 103; pass. part. 104; imperat. pass. 115; part. pass. in *-edic*, 116; old pass. end. 129; 130; pret. and perf. 134; periphr. pass. of plupf. 136 (b).
pawb, use of 66.
pei, conj. not foll. by *yd* 93 (l); uses of 227; origin of 227 n.
periphrasis, verbal noun with *gwneuthur* 123; periphrastic plupf. with *-oed*, active 136 (a); passive 136 (b).
perfect. indic. with *ry*. 96 A (a); perfect part. equiv. 126 (b); use of 105; v. preterite.
person in verb, 102–103; in passive 102; in 1 and 2 pers. of pass. 102.
personal pron. see pronoun.
pettwn, 158.
peth, as pron. 74; interrog. 79.
peun-, old accus. 25.
pieu, in rel. clause 83 (a)(β); paradigm 161; use of 161.
pluperfect, with *ry* 96 A (b); use of 105, 109; plupf. indic. replacing subj. 109 c; types of plupf. ind. 135; periphr. plupf. act. and pass. 136 (a)(b).
plural, old Celtic, 27; pl. of nouns 27; vowel change in pl. 27 (a); pl. endings *-eu, -ieu*, 27 (b); *-on, -ion*, 27 (c); old consonantal pls. 27 (d); pl. suffixes 28; pl. in adjs. 31; 33; pl. of nouns with card. numerals 42 (a); 3 pl. end. of impf. 131.
pob, in distributives 43; used as adj. 66; *pob un* 66; *pob rei* 66.
pony, interrog. 240.
ponyt, copula 155 (a) (θ).
possessive, pronouns 55, 56; adjs. table of 57; prec. by prep. or conj. 58 (a).
predicate, lenation of, after copula 18 (d); pred. before copula 159; after copula 159.
predicative adj. 32; plural of 33; after *yn* 35; pred. noun with *yn* 35.
preposition, lenat. after 16 (i); lenat. of 16 n. 13; nasal mut. after 20 (b); spirant mut. after 21 (c); with poss. adj. 58 (a); suffixed to *pa, py* 80 n. 3; forms and usage 162–197.
present indic. 105; actual pres. 106 (a); as fut. 106 (e); pres. subj. endings 110.
preterite with *ry-* 97 (a); use of 105; 108; in indir. speech 108 (b); =perfect 108 (c); endings of 132; absolute end. in 132 n.; *s-* pret. 133; *t-* pret. 133 (a); reduplic. in 133 (b); pret. pass. 134.
pronoun, lenation of 17; lenat. after interrog. 18 (c); tables of 45–90; *mi*,

etc. 45; *mivi* etc. 45; *minheu* etc. 45; weakening of, after vb. 45; construct. of indep. prons. 46; infixed pron. 48–51; after *pan* 49 (b); with *ry* 49 (c); with *ny* 49 (c); anticipat. obj. 49 n.; express dat. 51; with prepos. 52–53; simple pron. with pron.-prep. 54; conjunct. pron. with pron.-prep. 54; *meu*, etc. 55; poss. pron. syntax of 56; demonstr. pr. 61; syntax of 62; pronominal use of *dim* 73; *peth* 74; *rei* 75; *ryw*; *sawl* 77; *un* 78; interrog. 79; relat. 82, 84.

prothetic vowel, 9.

pryt (*na*), conj. 228.

pwy, 79; *pwy* with noun, 79 n.

pwy gilyd 185.

py, see *pa*; prep. 185; with poss. pron. 185; *pyr* 229.

pynhac, *pynnac* 81.

pyr, 229.

rac, with pron. end. 53; usage 186; *y rac* 186.

reduction of cons. 12; of prons. 45.

reduplication 133 (b).

rei 62 (b); *y rei*, foll. by rel. 62 (c); *pob rei* 66; as pron. 75.

relative, *ny* relat. and non-relat. 21 n. 2; express. of inflected rel. 62 (c); rel. pron. 82–84; rel. *a* with *yd* 84; expr. of genit. of rel. 88; Welsh equiv. to Eng. rel. gov. by prep. 89; substitutes for 90; verb in rel. clauses 103; subjunct. in rel. cl. 114 (h).

repeated action, 107 (c).

responsive particles, 241.

ro, prep. with pron. end. 53.

rodi, *roi*, paradigm of 146.

rwng, prep. with pron. end. 53; usage 187; *odyrwng* 187; *yrwng* 187.

rwy, rel. form of *ry* 49 (c).

ry, verbal part. lenat. after 18 (f); with infix. pron. 49 (c); 50 (d); in rel. clause 83 (a)(γ); reduced to *r*, 95 n.; *y*+*ry* 95 n.; with indic. 96 A; with perf. indic. 96 A (a); with plupf. 96 A (b); with subj. 96 B; with pres. subj. 96 B (a); with past subj. 96 B (b); with vb. noun 96 C; in early W. poetry 97; with pret. indic. 97 (a); with subj. 97 (d); with fut. 97 (d); in later poetry 97 (d); with pres. indic. 97 C 1; in subord. cl. 97 C 2; with pres. and impf. of *darvot* 97 C n.; not found after neg.; *mad;* interrog. and rel. *a* 97·1; with infix. pron. 97. 3; with subj. of wish 97. 3 (b); with vb. noun 120 (b); with conj. *o* 224 n. 5.

rydhau, paradigm of 127.

ryw, rel. form of *ry* 49 (c).

ryw, pron. usage of 76.

-s, infixed pron. anticipating object 159 n. 2.

-s- preterite 133.

-s stems in, 27 (d).

-s- subjunctive 110 n. 2.

sawl used as pron. 77.

secondary tense, impf. as, 107 (d) (α).

sef, *ssef*, 47.

semivowels 3.

sentence, sound changes within 12.

singular formed from collect. nouns 29 c.

-sit, pret. and perf. end. 132 n.

spirant mutat. 21, see mutation.

stems in *-s* 27 (d); neut *-n-* 27 (d); in *-o-* 27 n. 1; in *-u-* 27 n. 1; *-n-* 27 n. 5; adj. stems in *-i-* 30 n.; in *-u-* 30 n.

subject, position when emph. 85.

subjunctive, with *ry* 96 B; pres. subj. with *ry* 96 B (a); past subj. with *ry* 96 B.(b); subj. of wish with *ry* 97 3 (b); replaced by plupf. indic. 109 c.; ending of pres. subj. 110; formation of, 110; *h* as sign of, 110; new formation in Mid. W. 110 n. 1; subj. stem in O.W. 110 n. 1; stem of subj. and indic. 110 n. 1; influence of indic. upon 110 n. 1; confusion of subj. with indic. 110 n. 1; subj. in *h* 110 n. 1; history of subj. in *h* 110 n. 2; *s-* subj. 110 n. 2; early history of 110 n. 2; tenses of subj. 111; pres. 111; impf. 111; past 111; past subj. in later Mid. W. 111; replaced by plupf. ind. 111 and n; perf. in subj. 111; plupf. in subj. 111; subj. replaced by indicat. 111 n.; usage 112–114; in main clauses 113 A; of wish 113 A (a); of command 113 A (b); express futurity 113 (c); after vbs. of *thinking*, *swearing*, etc. 114 (a); in subord. cl. 114 B; in indirect interrog. 114 B (b); in concessive cl. 114 (c); in condit. cl. 114 (d); in cl. of comparison 114 (e); in temporal cl. 114 (f); after vbs. of *effecting*, *commanding*, *desiring* 114 (g); in final cl. 114 (g); in relat. cl. 114 (h); endings of pres. subj. 138; of pass. subj. 139; form of past subj. 139; subj. with *hyt* 214 (b); of purpose with *hyt na* 214. 2 (b); after *mal* 216. 1 (b); of purpose after *mal na* 216. 3 (b).

substantive verb, forms and usage 154.

suffixes, pl. 28; of comparat. 37 (a); of verbal noun 119.

superlative adj., lenat. after 16 n. 5; no pl. forms 33; form of 37; foll. by prep. *o* 38 (b); construction 38.

syllable, loss of final syll. 30 n.

syntax, of the art. 24; of cases 26; of genit. in prose and poetry 26; of numerals 42; of poss. pron. 56.

tan, *dan*, prep. lenat. aft. 16 (i); with pron. end. 53; with vb. noun, 126 (c); usage 188; *ymdan* 164; *adan*, *ydan*, 188.

tawr, *dawr*, paradigm of 147.

temporal clauses, 114 (f).

tenses, see present etc.

-tor, verbal ending 129.

tra, conj. with infix. pron. 50 (h); foll. by *yd* 93 (l); usage 230.

tra, *trag*, prep., mutation after 21 (c); usage 189.

tri, mutation after 21 (a).

tras, *dros*, *trus*, prep., lenation after 16 (i); with pron. end. 53; usage 190.

trwy, *drwy*, prep., lenation after 16 (i); with pron. end. 53; usage 191.

tu (*ac*), prep. 192.

-u, 3 pl. end. of pron.-prep. 52 (b).

-u- stems in 27 n. 3; 30 n.

ub interj. 243.

uch, prep., lenation after 16 (i); with pron. end. 53; usage, 193.

-ud, 3 pl. end. of pron. prep. 52 (b).

un, as pron. 78.

verb, end. 3 sg. pres. ind. act. 7 n. 1; 98; lenat. after, 16 (g) (α); lenat. of, 18; posit. in Celt. sent. 85; conjugation, 98—161; classes of, 98; deponent, 99; voice, 99; number, 100; concord with subj. 101; 103; person, 102; mood, 104; verbs of *thinking*, *swearing*, etc., 114 (a); verbs of *effecting*, *commanding*, etc., 114 (g); paradigm of reg. vb. 127; vowel infection in obj. 128 (a); denominative vb. 128 (b); verbs in *-hau* 128 (b); ending of 3 pl. 129; irreg. vb. 140—152; see indic. etc.

verbal noun, lenat. of, 16 (b)(δ); with *ry*, 96 C; 120; formation, 118; suffixes, 119; usage, 120; voice in, 121;

agent with, 122; with *gwneuthur*, 123; continuing finite vb. 124; as historic infin. 125; special use after *yn*, 126; with *gwedy*, 126 (b); with *tan*, 126 (c); with *can*, 126 (c).
vocative, lenation in, 16 (m)(α).
voice, in vb. noun, 121; see number, passive.
vowels, vowel system, 1; orthog. variat. 1 n; quantity, 2; long, 2 (a); half-long 2 (b); accented, 2 A; unaccented 2 B; short, 2 B; changes, 5; infecting, 5; infecting vowel preserved, 6; lost, 7; vowel-infection in 3 sg. pr. ind. act. 7 n 1; variation of, due to accent, 8; weakening, 8; prothetic 9; epenthetic, 10; change in adj. 31 (a); infection in vb. 128 (a); irregular vowel infection, 128 n.

wely dy, interj. 244.
wish, subjunctive of, 113 A (a).
word groups, mutation of cons. in, 12.
wrth, prep., with pron. end. 53; usage 194.
wrth, conj. 231.
wy, usage of, 45 n 2; becoming *wynt*, 45 n 2.
wyf, etc., as copula, 155 (a)(μ).
wynt, usage, 45 n 2; history of, 45 n 2.
wynteu, usage, 46 n.

y, semi-vowel, 3 n (g).
y, prep. lenat. after, 16 (i); with pron. end. 53; with poss. adj. 58; after vb. noun, 122; usage, 195.
y 'her,' mutat. aft. 21 b.
yd, *yt*, *yr*, *y*, verb. part., lenation after 18 (e); with infix. pron. 49 b; 50 (b); 93 n 2; with rel. *a* 84; superseding *a* 85 note; after *or* 87 (a); *yr* 91; *yr* for *yd* 91 n 2; *yt* 91 n 2; *y* not lenating 91 n 2; origin of non-lenat. *y* 91 n 2; *yt* lenat. 91 n 2; usage 92; 93; after *gwedy* 93 n 3; before *ry* 93 n 4; *yd*, use of in RB; in WB; and in later Mid. W, 94; infixing pron. 94.
-yd pl. ending 28 B (i)
ydoed, etc., 154 n 3; usage, 154 (b).
ydyw, use of, 154, and n 3.
yll, see *ell*.
yma, adv. 63.
yn, prep. with vb. noun, 16 n 8; lenat. 16 n. 8; *yn* predic. 16 n 8; nasal mut. after, 20 (b); with predic. noun and adj. 35; with adj. 40; with pron. end. 53; with vb. noun, 126; usage, 196.
yn, conj., usage, 232.
ynt, copula, 155 (a)(γ).
ynteu, usage, 46 n.
yny, conj. with infix. pron. 49 (b); 50 (h); not foll. by *yd*, 93 (l); usage, 233.
-yon, pl. ending 31 (c).
yr, see article.
yr, prep. with pron. end. 53; usage, 187; *yr pan*, 226 c; *yr na*, 234.
yr for *y*+*yr*, 87 note.
yr for y+*ry*, 91 n 3; 95 n.
ys, *ydys* 152
ys, copula, 155 (a)(α); *ys oed* 159 n 2.
ysyd, *syd*, in relat. cl. 83 (a)(α); usage, 154 (a)(β); 155 (a)(κ).
yssit, *yssydynt*, usage, 154 (a) n 1.
yttoed, usage, 154 (b).
yttiw, usage, 154 (a(α); copula, 154 n 4.
yw, copula, 155 (a)(β); *pan yw*, 155 (a)(β)

CORRIGENDA

P. 7, l. 15, *for* mynwgl *read* mwnwgl
P. 20, l. 34, *for* Aften *read* After
P. 37, l. 20, *for* thee *read* me
P. 110, l. 21, *for* on *read on*
P. 123, l. 31, *for* as *read as*
P. 140, l. 28, *for* 19,707 *read* 19,709
P. 141, l. 32, *for* 12 dianot *read* 13 dianot
ib., *for* 13 y rydunt *read* 14 y rydunt
P. 145, l. 27, *for* 19,707 *read* 19,709
ib., l. 29, *for* dywyasavc *read* dywyssavc
P. 151, l. 25, *for* can wr *read* canwr
P. 152, l. 19, *for* ordiwed *read* or diwed
P. 153, l. 27, *for* troet noethon *read* troetnoethon
P. 154, l. 5, *for* yny *read* yn y
P. 155, l. 2, *for* gyt gyghor *read* gytgyghor
P. 162, l. 11, *add comma after* Gotlont
ib., *for* Gȯynw *read* Gȯynw[as]
ib,, *for* Gerein *read* Gerein[t]
P. 166, l. 28, *for* kadȯr *read* Kadȯr
P. 167, l. 19, *add full stop after* hynn
P. 169, l. 16, *for* vrytanyeit *read* Vrytanyeit
P. 182, l. 21, *dele the full stop after* Les
P. 184. l. 20, *for* ge ynyon *read* gelynyon
ib., l. 33, *read* a[c] Vryen
P. 192, l. 18, *for* vililioed (*sic* MS.) *read* vilioed
P. 195, l. 1, *for* allan. Dẏuot *read* allan dẏuot
P. 198, l. 11, *for* ehaȯc. *read* ehaȯc,
P. 199, l. 31, *for* Uarruaȯc (*sic* MS.) *read* Uaruaȯc
P. 201, l. 20, *for* kyfuarch (*sic* MS.) *read* kyfarth
ib., l. 24, *for* Yspaden *read* Yspad[ad]en
P. 202, l. 2, *for* yn *read* ny

P. 210[b], l. 4, *for* idau *read* idaw
ib., l. 20, *for* rhingyll *read* ringyll
ib., l. 33, *for* nessat *read* nessaf
ib., *for* kyglaƀs *read* kyghaƀs
P. 211[b], l. 15, *for* dyvedut *read* dywedut
P. 212[b], l. 5, *for* savun *read* savwn
P. 212[b], l. 11, *for* ydau *read* idaw
P. 213[b], l. 21, *for* dylyaf *read* dylyaf fi
ib., l. 24, *for* ageidw *read* a geidw
P. 216[a], l. 22, *for* Neu[5] *read* Neu[6]
P. 216[b], l. 23, *for* Kynnybo *read* Kynny bo
P. 219[b], l. 19, *for* amdiffynnur vreint *read* amdiffynnwr breint
P. 220[b], l. 12, *for* testyon eneill *read* tystyon y neill
ib., l. 20, *for* ygneit *read* yneit
P. 223, l. 5 and 6, *for* diethyr *read* dieithyr
ib., l, 22, 25 and 33, *for* Morgannuc *read* Morgannwc
ib., l. 29, *for* a digonher *read* digonher
P. 227, l. 21, *dele the comma after* trƀs
P. 229, l. 1, *read* dayargychwyn
P. 231, l. 26, *for* ieuan *read* Ieuan
P. 234, l. 16, *for* teern meibon *read* teernmeibon
P. 237, note 1, *for* M.A. *read* MA. p. 268a.
P. 237[b], l. 17, *for* Daƀ *read* Duƀ
P. 239, l. 20, *for* a metev *read* am etev
P. 241, l. 7, *for* or seuir *read* orseuir
ib., l. 31, *for* di luyd *read* diluyd

UNIVERSITE DE POITIERS

Publications

OF THE

University of Manchester.